



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

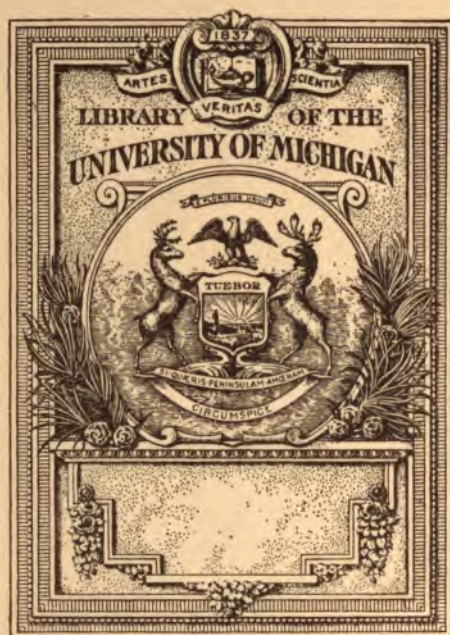
### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

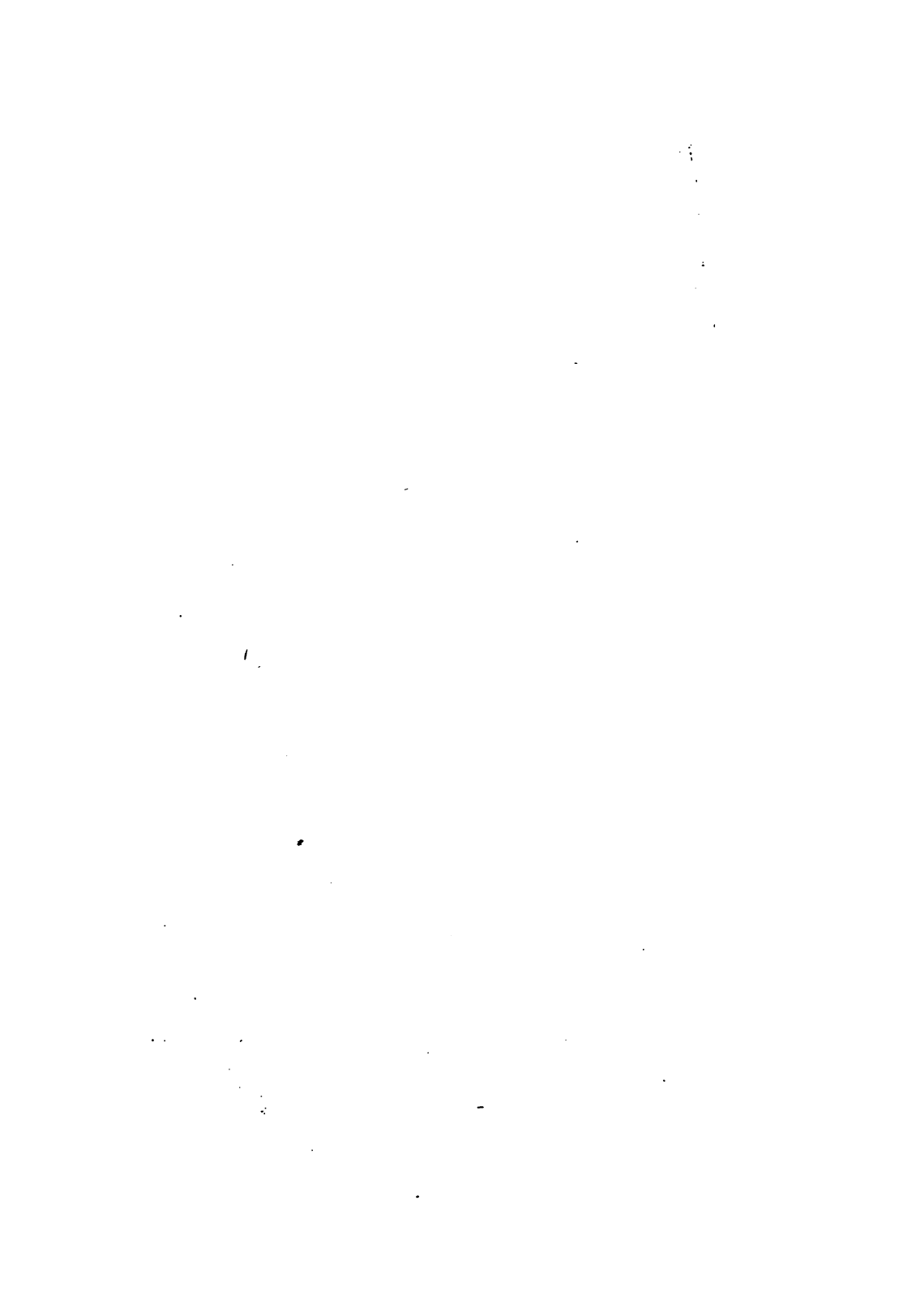
**A** 451077

DUPL













1. The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses of the members of the committee.

6568  
THE  
PARLIAMENTAR  
OR  
CONSTITUTIONAL  
History of England  
BEING A  
FAITHFUL ACCOUNT

Of all the  
Most remarkable TRANSACTIONS  
In PARLIAMENT,  
From the earliest TIMES,  
TO THE  
Restoration of King CHARLES II.

COLLECTED

From the RECORDS, the JOURNALS of both HOUSES, or  
nal MANUSCRIPTS, scarce SPEECHES, and TRACTS;  
compared with the several Cotemporary Writers, and c  
nected, throughout, with the History of the Times.

By SEVERAL HANDS.

—*Juvat integros accedere Fontes.*

VOL. XII.

From the Call of the House of Commons, November 1, 1642, till  
Convention at Oxford, in January 1643.

L O N D O N,

Printed, and sold by WILLIAM SANDBY, against St. Dunst  
Church, Fleet-street, MDCCLIII.

1000

1000



T H E  
Parliamentary History  
O F  
E N G L A N D.



**O**N the first of *November* the Com-  
mons ordered, That all their Mem-  
bers, living within sixty Miles of  
*London*, and not employed in the  
Service of that House, should attend  
within three Days; all at a farther  
Distance, within eight Days; and that such as did  
not appear within the Times limited, should be sent  
for by Messengers, who were to bring them up.

This *Order* was occasioned by the Thinness of  
the House, for some Months past, which appears  
by the following Divisions extracted from their  
*Journals*. The most material Points, which gave  
Occasion to these, have been taken Notice of in their  
proper Order of Time: The Numbers, only, will  
be therefore sufficient for this Review.

<i>June</i> 27. 42 against 27.	<i>Aug.</i> 15. 42 against 33.	The State of
— 30. 49 against 35.	— 17. 43 against 16.	House at
<i>July</i> 9. 125 against 45.	— 27. 69 against 26.	Time.
— 19. 69 against 51.	<i>Septr.</i> 2. 40 against 29.	
— 23. 89 against 43.	— 29. 53 against 36.	
— 26. 50 against 33.	In <i>October</i> not one Divi-	
— 28. 82 against 32.	sion enter'd.	



## 2 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 13. Car. 1.  
1642.

November.

It may very justly be inquired, What could occasion such an Absence, at a Time when so great a Number of *Resolutions* pass'd, deeply affecting the Constitution of this Kingdom?—A brief Recollection of some Transactions in our last Year will supply an Answer.

It may be remembered that there was a *Call* of the House on the 16th of *June* last; and, on that Occasion, a *Resolution* pass'd, by a Majority of Voices against 91, That none of the Absent should be admitted to take their Seats, till they made their Excuse, to a Committee appointed for that Purpose, and that Excuse reported and allow'd of by the House. Most of the Members then sent (whose Names are enter'd in the *Commons Journals* of that Day) were with the King at the time; and as they could have little Reason to expect that their Excuse for their Absence would be accepted in the House, it is very probable few of them ever made it.—Add to this, That

After the King had issued his *Commission* of Array to many more Members left the House, and were sent to their several Counties to put the same into Execution: And others were sent, at the same Time, to the Parliament to execute their *Ordinance* for the *Militia*; most of the Deputy-Lieutenants were Members of the Lower House.

When the Commons, on the eleventh of *August* last, voted, That they would support the Earl of *Essex* with their Lives and Fortunes; and also resolved, That every Member then absent should declare himself at his next coming into the House, which undoubtedly kept away many who had not the Courage enough to do so; whilst some of a more resolute Disposition lost their Lives on both Sides of the Question, at the late Battle of *Edge-Hill*. Lastly,

During the Months of *August* and *September* last, near fifty Members had been expelled the House; and, though Writs were issued for supplying their Places, it is hardly to be imagin'd that many new Elections could be made at a

# Of ENGLAND. 3

when the *Orders* of the House of Commons were as little regarded by the Sheriffs and returning Officers of some Counties, as the King's *Proclamations* by others; and when a considerable Part of the Kingdom was covered by two opposite Armies.

The Names of the Members so expelled, with the Reasons of their Expulsion, and the Places they served for, may not be improper; as they tend to illustrate many Passages in the succeeding Volumes of this Work.†

An. 18. Car.  
1642.  
November.

## MEMBERS expelled in the Month of August 1642.

- |   |                  |
|---|------------------|
| 4. *Robert Hide, Serjeant at Law,         | } New-Sarum.     |
| 5. *Sir Ralph Hopton, Knight of the Bath, | } Wells.         |
| — *Thomas Smith, Esq;                     | Bridgewater.     |
| 8. *Sir John Pawlett, Kt.                 | } Somersetshire. |
| — *Sir John Stawell, Knight of the Bath,  |                  |
| 9. Sir Nicholas Slanning, Kt.             | Penryn.          |
| 10. John Griffith, Esq;                   | Beaumaris.       |
| 11. *Edward Hyde, Esq;                    | Saltash.         |
| — *Robert Holborne, Esq;                  | Michell.         |
| — *Sir William Penynman, Bart.            | } Richmond.      |
| — *Edward Kirton, Esq;                    | Milborn-Port.    |
| 12. *John Coventry, Esq;                  | Evesham.         |
| — *Sir Edw. Rodney, Kt.                   | Wells.           |
| 16. *Nicholas Weston, Esq;                | Stafford.        |
| — *Col George Goring,                     | Portsmouth.      |
| 20. *Sir Jo. Packington, Bart.            | Aylesbury.       |
| — *Sir H. Herbert, Kt.                    | Bewdlay.         |
| — *Samuel Sandys, Esq;                    | Droitwich.       |

The three last for executing the *Commission* of Array.

- |                           |          |      |
|---------------------------|----------|------|
| 22. *Gervase Holles, Esq; | Grimsby. | Aug. |
| A 2                       |          |      |

† For those Places, only, distinguished thus \* the *Journals* take Notice of Writs being issued for new Elections; and where we have not mentioned the Reasons for the Expulsion of the respective Members, none are assigned by those Authorities.

#### 4 The Parliamentary History

An. 13. Car. 1. Aug. 26. Sir William Widdrington, Knt. } Northumber

1642.

November.

— Sir Wm Carnaby, Knt. } Morpeth.  
The last two for refusing to attend the S  
of the House.

29. Orlando Bridgeman, Esq; } Wigan.  
For assisting Lord Strange at Chester.

— Roger Kirkby, Esq; } Lancashire.

30. Sir Richard Cave, Knt. } Litchfield,

MEMBERS expelled in September, 164

2. \*Chr. Lukener, Esq; } Chichester.

6. Sir William Saville, Knt. } Old Sarum.  
and Bart.

— Henry Bellasis, Esq; } Yorkshire.

— John Bellasis, Esq; } Thirske.

— Sir Henry Slingsby, Bart. } Knaresbroug

— Sir Thomas Danby, Knt. } Richmond.

— Sir George Wentworth, of } Pontefract.  
Woolley, Knt.

— Sir Thomas Ingram, Knt. } Thirske.

— William Mallory, Esq; } Ripon.

— Richard Aldburgh, Esq; } Aldburgh.

The last nine for neglecting the Service  
House, and setting their Hands to a  
contrived in Yorkshire, and sent u  
liament.\*

— Sir John Strangeways, Knt. } Weymouth  
For neglecting the Service of Parlian

— Sir Richard Lee, Bart. } Salop.

— Sir Robert Howard, Knt. } Bishops-  
of the Bath.

7. Sir Chris. Hatton, Knt. } Higham

— Sir Robert Hatton, Knt. } Castle-R

These four for executing the Commiss  
ray after it was declared illegal, an  
appearing on Summons.

\* See this *Petition* in our Eleventh Volume, 7



# OF ENGLAND.

5

Sept. 7. *Jeffrey Palmer*, Esq; *Stamford*.  
For not appearing on Summons.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

November.

— *Henry Coke*, Esq; *Durwich*.

— *Sir Tho. Fanshawe*, Knt. *Lancaster*.

These two for neglecting the Service of the  
House, and not appearing on Summons.

12. *Richard Rogers*, Esq; *Dorsetshire*.  
For sending Forces into *Sherborne Castle*.

— *Richard Herbert*, Esq; *Montgomery*.  
For putting the *Commission of Array* in Exe-  
cution in the County of *Salop*.

16 \**Tho. Chicheley*, Esq; *Cambridgeshire*.

19. *Sir Bevil Grenville*, Knt. *Cornwall*.

22. Lord Viscount *Falkland*, } *Newport, Isle of*  
  *Wight*.

23. *Sir Frederick Cornwallis*, } *Eye*.  
      Knt. of the *Bath*.

29. *Sir Ralph Sydenham*, Knt. *Bosfiney*.

We meet with no Expulsions of Members in *October*; but, on the 24th of that Month one Gentleman was in very great Danger of losing his Seat, if he had not instantly complied with the Terms required by the House for his Continuance in it: For we find in the *Journals* of this Day, That the *Vote* for assisting the Earl of *Essex*, &c. being read to *Sir John Evelyn*, Member for *Blechingley*, and his Answer demanded, he desired Time to consider of that *Vote*; upon which he was ordered to withdraw. Then the House fell into Consideration of the Quality of his Offence; and finding, That if any Member might have Liberty, when a Question was proposed, to refuse giving any Answer, it would destroy the Course and Proceedings of Parliament: It was thereupon resolved, 'That the said *Sir John Evelyn* shall be suspended from the House, disarmed by the Deputy-Lieutenants of *Surrey*, and committed Prisoner to the *Tower* during the Pleasure of that House.' — But *Sir John Evelyn* desiring to be



## 6 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

heard before Judgment given; and, his Request being complied with, he declared himself in the affirmative to the *Vote* concerning the Earl of *Arundell* and offered to lend 100*l.* upon the *Propositions*. The House accepted his Answer and his Offer, and immediately ordered, That the former *Votes* and sentence should be revoked.

Thus much may suffice to give a View of the State of the House of Commons during five Months: We shall, now, proceed with Business of Parliament.

*November 2.* Both Houses had been busy making Orders for opposing Sir *Ralph Hopton's* movement, in the West of *England*, and the of *Wales*, mentioned in Secretary *Nicholas's* Letter, which had been communicated to the City of *London* at the *Guildhall*, by the Earl of *Peperharne* on the 27th of the last Month.

Proceedings towards a Peace.

These two new raised Armies appeared formidable to the Parliament, that, in all Probability stirred up the late Motion for settling a Peace brought on the further Consideration of Day. The Result of which was, That to prevent the further Effusion of Blood, and to prevent Distractions of the Kingdom, a Conference should be held, in which the following Letter should be communicated to the Committee of Safety had received from their Lord-General, in answer to one written by him on this Occasion.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

The Earl of Essex's Letter on that Occasion.

I Have received a Letter from you that mentions a humble Petition to be directed to his Majesty to save the Effusion of more Blood. In the first I ought to acknowledge the Favour of your desire, and to bear from me before you send it. In the second to declare that an happy Accommodation for the advancement of Religion the Flourishing of the Kingdom, with its antient Rights, the Saving the

of more Blood, and the Uniting his Majesty to his Parliament, none shall pray for more, nor receive with more Joy, than myself.

An. 18. C  
1642.

November

If I had not, by the Commands of the Parliament, been here to govern this Army, I should have given my Attendance upon you; and should have discharged my Conscience, to the best of my Abilities, honestly and clearly; but, being absent, and not hearing the Debates, nor from whence this hath risen, I must submit myself to their greater Judgments; and shall, with all Obedience, submit both to what they shall do, and to obey their former Commands to advance towards London, to interpose, with my utmost, between them and all Dangers.

Your Lordships

Northampton,  
Nov. 1. 1642.

Humble Servant,

ESSEX.

Notwithstanding the last mentioned Military Preparations, and the Earl of *Essex's* Declaration of his Readiness to march towards London, both Houses thought fit to proceed in their pacifick Measures; and ordered a *Petition* to the King to be drawn up for that Purpose: But, previous to this, 'lest the Affections of the People should grow cold,' as Mr *Pymme* expressed himself at the Conference, a *Declaration* was to be published to this Purport:

'Whereas the Lords and Commons have ordered, Both Houses  
'That it should be referred to the Committee for the same  
'Safety of the Kingdom, to prepare Heads for an provide for  
'humble *Address* to his Majesty, for composing the Defence.  
'the present Differences and Distractions, and settling  
'the present Peace of the Kingdom, and to present  
'it to the House: Yet, to prevent all Misconstruc-  
'tions or Neglects, whereby our just Defence may  
'be hindered, we do declare, That the Preparations  
'of Forces, and all other necessary Means for the  
'Defence of the Protestant Religion, the Privileges  
'of Parliament, and the Laws and Liberties of the  
'Subject, shall be prosecuted with all Vigour.'

The



## 8 The Parliamentary History

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

November.

The Lords agreed to this *Declaration*, and ed it to be forthwith printed and published.

Nov. 3. A Draught of this *Petition*, or *Address* to the King was read by the Lords, and after agreed to by both Houses, as follows :

Their Petition to  
the King for  
Peace.

*WE* your Majesty's most loyal Subjects, the and Commons in Parliament assembled, affected with a deep and piercing Sense of the Misery of this Kingdom, and of the Danger of his Majesty's Person, as the present Affairs now stand; and quickened therein with the sad Consideration of the great Effusion of Blood at the late Battle, and Loss of so many eminent Persons: And further considering the Addition of Loss, Misery, and Danger to your Majesty and your Kingdom, which must ensue, if your Armies should again join in another Battle; as without God's especial Blessing, and your Majesty's concurrence with your Houses of Parliament, we probably be avoided; we cannot but believe that your Majesty's suitable Impression of Tenderneſs and Compassion wrought in your Majesty's Royal Heart, being your Majesty's self an Eye-Witness of the bloody and sorrowful destruction of so many of your Subjects; and that your Majesty doth apprehend what Diminution of your own Power and Greatneſs will follow; and that all your Kingdoms will thereby be so weakened as to become subject to the Attempts of any ill-affected Person to this State.

In all which Respects we assure ourselves, that your Majesty will be inclined graciously to accept of this humble Petition, that the Misery and Desolation of this Kingdom may be speedily removed and prevented, for the effecting whereof we most humbly beseech your Majesty to appoint some convenient Place, not far from the City of London, where your Majesty will be pleased to reside, untill Committees of both Houses of Parliament may attend your Majesty, with some Propositions for the Removal of these bloody Distempers and Distractions, and settling the State of the Kingdom in such a Manner, as may conduce to the Preſervation

*tion of God's true Religion; your Majesty's Honour, An. 18. Ca  
Safety, and Prosperity; and to the Peace, Comfort, 1642.  
and Security of all your People.*

November

The Houses next considered of the Manner of delivering this *Petition* to the King; and, since the Way they sent their last was so disagreeable to him, it was thought proper, That a Committee of Lords and Commons should be sent with it. But, first, that a *Letter* be wrote to one of the Secretaries of State, or some Peer near his Majesty, to desire a Safe-Conduct for these Persons; and that a Trumpet should be sent before the Messenger, to desire a Safe-Conduct for the Delivery of their *Letter*. Accordingly the Lord Grey of *Werk*, Speaker of the House of Lords *pro Tempore*, wrote the following *Letter*, directed to the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount Falkland, Principal Secretary to his Majesty, or, in his Absence, for Mr. Secretary Nicholas, or any of the Lords the Peers attending his Majesty.

My Lord,

*I Am commanded by the Lords the Peers, and Commons assembled in Parliament, to address, by you, their humble Desires to his Majesty, that he would be pleased to grant his Safe-Conduct to a Committee of Lords and Commons to pass and repass unto his Majesty, that are directed to attend him with an humble Petition from his Parliament.*

Lord Grey's  
ter desiring  
Safe-Conduc  
their Messen

*This being all I have in Commission, I rest*

Your assured Friend and Servant,

Westminster this 3d  
of November,  
1642.

GREY of *Werk*,  
Speaker of the House of Peers  
*pro Tempore*.

November 5. Nothing intervened, worth Notice, till this Day; when the Lord Grey received an *Answer* to his *Letter* to the Secretary, which was read. as follows:

To



An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

November.

To the Right Honourable the Lord Grey of  
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Temp*

My Lord,

Which is granted  
by the King.

**H**IS Majesty hath commanded me, in An-  
your Lordship's of the third present, to  
to you, That he always hath been, and is stil  
to receive the humble Petition of either or both  
of Parliament; and shall take Order, that  
mittee of Lords and Commons may pass and r  
him, with the Petition of both Houses, as is  
so as the said Committee consists of Pers  
have not been by his Majesty either by Name  
Traitors; or otherwise in some of his Declara  
Proclamations excepted against by Name, i  
Intention declaring to proceed against them as T  
and so as the said Committee come not with m  
thirty Persons in their Company, and give N  
fore-hand of their coming: And for the said  
tee's better Security, his Majesty, upon the R  
their Names, will give a Safe-Conduct for the  
his Hand and Signet. This being all I have  
mand to deliver to your Lordship, I humbly re.

Your Lordship's

Reading, November 4,  
1642.most humble Se  
ED. NICH

To this Letter, the Lord Grey was dir  
return the following Answer; but since this  
and the consequent *Rejoinders*, were the cl  
finess of some Days, we shall put them all  
for the Reader's greater Ease in the Perusa

To the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount  
land, Principal Secretary to his Majesty  
his Absence, to any of the Lords the  
tending his Majesty.

My Lord,

Several other  
Letters in con-  
sequence thereof.

**I** Have received a Command from the Lo,  
Commons in Parliament to send you the N  
two Lords; that is to say, Algernon Earl of  
umt

umberland, Philip Earl of Pembroke and Mont-  
gomery, and of four Members of the House of Com-  
mons, Mr. Pierrepont, the Lord Wenman, Sir John  
Evelin of Wilts, and Sir John Hippisly, being the  
Committees of both Houses appointed to attend his Ma-  
jesty with an humble Petition directed from them to his  
Majesty; desiring your Lordship will be pleased to move  
his Majesty to send a Safe-Conduēt, to pass and repass,  
under his Royal Hand and Signet, for the several  
Persons aforementioned.

*This being all that I have in Commission, I rest*

Your Lordship's Friend and Servant,

Westminster, this 5th  
of November  
1642.

GREY of Werk,  
Speaker to the House of Peers  
*pro Tempore.*

To the Right Honourable the Lord Grey of Werk,  
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore.*

My Lord,

**Y**OUR Lordship's Letter. of the fifth of No-  
vember I shewed his Majesty, who hath expressly  
commanded me to return your Lordship this Answer  
in these few Words, That his Majesty hath sent  
(which I have inclosed) a Safe-Conduēt, under his  
Royal Hand and Signet, for the Earl of Northumber-  
land and the Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery,  
Mr. Pierrepont, the Lord Wenman, and Sir John  
Hippisly; but hath not admitted Sir John Evelin of  
Wilts to attend him, as being included in the Ex-  
ception made by his Majesty in the Letter sent by Mr.  
Secretary Nicholas to your Lordship of the 4th. as by  
the inclosed Proclamation, proclaimed at his Majesty's  
Court at Oxford, and sent, with a Writ sealed, into  
the County of Wilts, will appear. His Majesty hath  
likewise commanded me to signify to your Lordship,  
That in case the Houses shall think fit to send any o-  
ther Person in the Place of Sir John Evelin, that is  
not included in the Exception made in Mr. Secretary's  
Letter beforementioned, his Majesty hath commanded  
all his Officers, Soldiers and other Subjects to suffer  
him

## 12 *The Parliamentary* HISTOR

An. 18. Car. 1. *him as freely to pass and repass as if his Name  
1642. been particularly comprised in this Safe-Conduct.  
November. This being all that I have in Commission, I r*

Reading, this 6th Your Lordship's humble Servt  
of November,  
1642. FALKLAND

His Majesty's SAFE-CONDUCT.

CHARLES R.

**O**UR Will and Pleasure is, and we do  
strictly charge and command all the Officers  
Soldiers of our present Army, and all our Mi  
and Subjects whatsoever, to suffer our Right Trust  
Right Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors Alg  
Earl of Northumberland, and Philip Earl of  
brooke and Montgomery, and our Right Trust  
Right Well-beloved Cousin Thomas Lord Vi  
Wenman, and our Trusty and Well-beloved W  
Pierrepont, Esq; and Sir John Hippisly, K  
(together with their Attendants, not exceedin  
Number of Thirty) to pass and repass to and fr  
they being now sent to attend us with a Petition  
both our Houses of Parliament. This our Safe-C  
under our Royal Hand and Signet, we charg  
command them, and every of them, punctually to  
and obey, as they will answer the contrary at  
uttermost Perils.

Given at our Court at Reading this sixth  
venber, 1642.

The King having  
objected against  
Sir John Evelin's  
being one of the  
Committee,

Then was read the Proclamation, mentio  
Lord Falkland's Letter, as a Reason why the  
excepted against Sir John Evelin\* as one  
Commissioners; after which a great Debate

\* Sir John Evelin, Sir Edward Hungerford, Sir Henry L,  
and Walter Long, Esq; all of them Members of the House of  
mons, were, by Name, excepted in the King's Proclama  
Pardon to the County of Wilts, dated at Oxford, Novem  
1642. *Illustrand's Collections*, p.

in the House of Lords, and the Question being put, An. 18. C  
Whether the Lord Falkland's last Answer should be 1643  
sent to the Commons with the Sense of this House  
upon it, or without it? it passed for the latter, and  
was sent down accordingly. Novemb

*November 7.* The Earl of *Essex* being this Day  
in the House of Lords, they received a *Message* from  
the Commons, importing, That now the Lord-  
General was returned, they ought to remember his  
great Care of the Army and Hazard of his Person,  
which he shewed in this Expedition: And, to that  
Purpose, they desired the Lords to join with them  
in appointing a Committee of both Houses, to draw  
up an Acknowledgement of Thanks for his Care,  
and for his Obedience to their Commands.

A Committee of both Houses was, accordingly,  
appointed to draw up an Address of Thanks to the  
Lord-General. The Commons further desired that  
his Excellency might be commanded to give his Or-  
ders to draw out the Army, as speedily and as conve-  
niently as he could, for the Defence of the Kingdom,  
and to prevent the Outrages of the King's Troop-  
ers, &c. that House being informed that Prince  
*Rupert* was now about *Windsor*.

To this the Lord-General said, That the Army  
had had a long March; but, as soon as they were  
fit, he would quarter them in such Places as should  
be most convenient for the Preservation of those  
Parts.

The same Day the Commons sent up a *Vote* of  
their House, on the King's Objection to Sir *John*  
*Evelin*, to this Purpose:

*Resolved*, 'That this House holds it to be a De- Both Ho  
nial in his Majesty, and a Refusal to grant a *Treaty* clare this  
with the Parliament, in excepting unto one of the Refusal o  
Messengers that were to present a *Petition* unto him on his Pa  
from both Houses, and denying to grant him a Safe-  
Conduct.'

The Question being put, by the Lords, Whether  
this Safe-Conduct should be accepted upon these  
Terms? It passed in the Negative.

After



## 14 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

AN. 13. CAR. 1.  
1642.

November.

And send a Committee to acquaint the City of London therewith.

After this a Committee of both Houses were appointed to go into the City of *London*, to acquaint the Common-Hall with all the Ways the Parliament had used to procure a *Treaty* for a Peace, without being able to effect it; and to quicken them to a Resolution of defending and maintaining their Liberties and Religion, with their Lives and Fortunes. Likewise, the Committee of Safety were ordered to prepare a *Declaration*, upon this Denial of the King's to admit such Members as were appointed, by both Houses, to present their *Petition*; one of the Heads of which was to be, the King's expressing a Readiness to receive a *Petition* from the Rebels in *Ireland*.

*November 8.* Two of the Committees from the Parliament to the City, on the above Occasion, were the Lord *Brooke* and Sir *Henry Vane*, junior; whose Speeches, at the *Guildhall*, being yet preserved, we here subjoin them in their own Words as follows. \*

And first Lord *Brooke*.

*My Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and the rest of the Gentlemen here assembled,*

Lord Brooke's  
Speech to the  
Citizens.

I Am to deliver a Message to you from the Lords and Commons, now assembled in Parliament; but before I do that, I shall crave Leave to excuse something that hath happened: There should have been divers Lords, and some Gentlemen of the House of Commons here, far fitter to have done this Work that is now put upon me, if they could possibly have attended the Service, who were appointed by the House; as the Lord General of the Horse, the Earl of *Bedford*, and some other Lords; but you will all conceive that they, being all Men employed in the Army, could not attend this your Service, tho' they are about your Service and the Good of the Kingdom, which is giving Order for your Safety, and theirs; and therefore, I hope,

(\*) From the Collections of the late *Thomas Selater Bacon*, Esq of *Cambridge*, to which we are obliged for many curious Pamphlets of these Times.



hope, you will take it in good Part, that there is no other Appearance here. An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

‘Gentlemen, what I have to say to you, in short is this I: suppose at this Time of Action, you will not expect long Prefacings; if you do, I am the unfittest Man in the World to do it: I shall therefore shortly deliver my Message: I doubt not but you have heard some Whisperings of an *Accommodation*; and no Man that is an Honest Man, a Religious Man, a Free Man, that loves Religion and the Kingdom, but would have an *Accommodation*; for nothing is more miserable, and nothing is more distracting than War: But that an *Accommodation* should come upon Terms ignoble and disadvantageous, that never was in the Thought of either House, and I hope never will be; and, I am to tell you, never shall be.

November.

‘I am at this Time to intreat you, in the Name of both Houses of Parliament, to go on courageously, and fight, and prepare yourselves for that that is at Hand: We hear the Enemies approach nearer every Day, who aim at nothing else but to swallow up our Religion, Lives, Liberties, and Estates; and therefore it becomes you to labour to defend them all.

‘I have more to say, but it is better said here in the *Votes* of the Houses of Lords and Commons; I desire they should be read unto you, and therein you will fully understand what their Sense is.

Monday, 7th of November, 1642.

*The Question being put, Whether a Safe-Conduct shall be accepted upon these Terms? It past with the Negative.*

‘This was, first, in the House of Commons. The Meaning of this *Vote* is, There was a Safe-Conduct sent by his Majesty to six Persons, two of the House of Lords, viz. the Earl of *Pembroke* and the Earl of *Northumberland*, and four of the House of Commons; among these there was one Sir *John Evelin*, of *Wiltshire*: The King would not let him

## 16 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

1. have a Safe-Conduct, because he was one that was named, by him, a Traitor the Day before; and that was done, as is thought, on Purpose to take him off from being one; therefore the House of Commons did look upon that as a Denial, in that he could not have a Safe-Conduct. This *Vote* of theirs was presented to the House of the Lords, and they concurr'd with it, viz.

Resolved upon the Question,

*This House holdeth this to be a Denial of his Majesty, and a Refusal to grant a Treaty to the Parliament, in excepting against one of the Messengers that was to present a Petition to his Majesty from both Houses to that Purpose, and denying to grant him a Safe-Conduct.*

Resolved, &c.

*That Committees of both Houses shall be appointed to go to the City of London, to acquaint the Common-Hall with all the Ways the Parliament hath used to procure a Treaty for a Peace, and could not effect it; and to quicken them to a Resolution of defending and maintaining their Liberties and their Religion with their Lives and Fortunes; and that they have appointed a Committee to prepare a Declaration, upon this Denial of his Majesty to admit such Members as were appointed by both Houses to present a Petition to his Majesty for a Treaty; and of his Majesty's expressing his Willingness to receive a Petition from the Rebels in Ireland.*

' Here is one Thing more, Gentlemen, that is worth your taking Notice of; this is so well said, I shall not need to say it over again; only here in the latter End you see, there is a Committee appointed to come hither to give you an Account of the Reasons moving them on to this Action; and to shew you all the Ways they have used, if it were possible, to have procured a *Treaty* for a Peace.

' There is another Thing in the End is very remarkable, which you may very well take Notice of: His Majesty will not, but upon Terms altogether unfitting, accept of any *Treaty* from us; yet,

at



at the same Time, is willing to receive a *Petition* from the Rebels in *Ireland*. An. 18. Car. 2.  
1642.

‘ We are no Rebels; but dutiful in all we do: They are Rebels and Traitors in the Judgment of all Men; and yet he will receive no *Petition* from us; but he will receive a *Petition* from them.’

November.

Sir Henry Vane, spoke to this Effect :

*My Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and the rest of the Gentlemen here assembled.*

‘ IT is not unknown to you, with what Difficulties, with what Dangers, both Houses of Parliament have a long Time conflicted, for to bring the Liberties, and the Religion, and the Welfare, of this Kingdom into such a Posture as might give all the Inhabitants thereof full Satisfaction. It is not unknown likewise, how busy the Enemies of this great Work have been, to cast Scandals, to cast false Aspersions, upon the Proceedings, upon the Carriage of Parliament; they therefore thought fit (that they might undeceive all Persons of the greatest Malice, and of the greatest Opposition to their Endeavours) not long since to frame a *Petition*; a *Petition* full of Humility, a *Petition* full of Modesty, whereby they did desire his Majesty that they might apply themselves to make such *Propositions* to him, as might effect this great Work. Sir Hen. Vane’s,

‘ This *Petition*, that it might be delivered, they thought fit for to name (as this Noble Lord hath told you) six Persons; two of the Lords House, and four of the House of Commons; Men that they thought altogether without the least Scruple, without the least Exception, knowing that nothing in the Carriage of these Persons could render them liable to Exception, but their Duty and Obedience to the Commands of both Houses. When the Names of these Persons were sent to his Majesty, for to have a Safe-Conduct, immediately, I think the very Day before, there came out a *Proclamation* against one of them, excepting him out of the Grace

3. Car. I. and Favour of his Majesty, as it is termed, and laying him in the Condition of a Rebel and of a Traitor against him, for his Obedience to, and Observance of, the Commands of Parliament.

1642.

November,

‘ This being brought to both Houses, they looked on it as a Business of such great Importance, that if they should suffer any one Member, or any one Person, that, through his Dutifulness and Observance of their Commands, should lie under a Cloud with his Majesty, so as not be admitted to his Presence, but be looked at in such a Condition, as this *Proclamation* put him in: They looked on it, I say, as the greatest Indignity, and the greatest Calumny that could befall a Parliament; and the greatest Discouragement that should lie upon all Men to stand to a Parliament, if they should not be defended and protected: Hereupon they resolved to *declare*, That the Unwillingness lay not in them to make Peace; but it lay in that ill Counsel, and that desperate Counsel, that hath hemm’d in his Majesty; and will not suffer such Points, will not suffer such *Propositions* as these, to take Effect with him; but will labour to destroy all your Estates and Properties, and all that is near and dear to you in this Kingdom.

‘ The House of Commons, therefore, have thought it fit to acquaint you with these Proceedings; to let you know how careful they are, by all good Ways, and by all good Means, to present their Loyalty and Duty to his Majesty, to take Care of themselves, and all that belongs to you: But, when they see all will not take Effect, they doubt not but you will join cordially, and join resolutely, with your Purfes, and with your Endeavours, and with all that lies in your Power, to acquit yourselves like Men; to defend yourselves; to defend them that have labour’d in your Work, your Cause, and who are willing to spend the Lives and Blood in your Service to the utmost Max. Therefore they desire this of you, that since they have taken this Care, you will hearken to no reports that shall tend to the Disparagement of



Proceedings; but will unanimously concur to defend yourselves against that Violence and Oppression, that is now almost at your Doors. — And this is that we have to recommend to you.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
November.

Then the Lord *Brooke* spoke again,

*Gentlemen,*

**I** Have but one Word more to trouble you with. This Honourable Gentleman, Sir *Henry Vane*, hath exprest so fully all that was in the Message, that, truly, I should wrong him and myself too, if I should say any more; therefore I shall now speak to you of another Thing. It is not fit any Thing that concerns you should be concealed from you.

Lord Brooke's  
second Speech.

‘ I came this Day to this Place, to this House, about another Business, which I have already communicated to my Lord Mayor and the Aldermen; and the Committee. I think it will not be unfit you should know it. I have the Consent of some, that understand this Business very well, to what I now shall do. Gentlemen, the Message was this, it was a Message from his Excellency; it is to let you know how near the Danger is at Hand, that so you may gird up the Loins of your Resolution, and act like Men of Courage. Gentlemen, Citizens of *London*, (better than whom no Man did in that Army we had lately in the Field) the Enemy's Foot, as we understand, are very near *Stains*, their Horse are about *Kingston*. We cannot say that all are there; but that there are both Horse and Foot, and it is certain our Foot are going to them: So that the Question is now, What is to be done? This is a certain Truth among all Soldiers, That you must keep Evil as far off you as you can; you must not let it come near your Doors: You must not think to fight in the Sighs, and Tears, and Eyes, and Distractions of your Wives and Children; but to go out and meet it valiantly as you have done.

God hath shewed himself a God of Love and Mercy, and truly we must give him all the Honour of that Day; certainly it is the greatest Victory that



An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

November.

ever was gotten; near 2000 (I love to speak with the least) on their Side slain, and, I am confident, not 100 on our Side, unless you will take in Women and Children, Carmen and Dogs; for they slew the very Dogs and all. If you take in Women, Children, Carmen, and Dogs, then they slew about 200. But that 100 should be slain on one Side, and 2000 on the other Side, is a very miraculous Thing.

‘ God that dealt so wonderfully heretofore, it were to distrust him, if we did not think he would do so again. Truly he hath a People among us exceedingly beloved.

‘ What is it we fight for? It is for our Religion, and for our God, and for our Liberty, and all. And what is it they fight for? For their Lust, for their Will, and for their Tyranny; to make us Slaves, and to overthrow all.

‘ Gentlemen, methinks I see your Courage by your Faces. I spy you ready to do any Thing; and the General’s Resolution is, to go out To-morrow, and do as a Man of Courage and Resolution; and never Man did like him; for he was not only General, but Common Soldier; for he led up his own Regiment, he led up his own Troop in his own Person; and when the Left Troops of Horse deceived him, he brought up the Right Troops. He himself will go out again, and do again as much as he hath done: All this is for your Sakes, for he can be a Free Man, he can be a Gentleman, he can be a great Man, he can go where he will; therefore it is only for your Sakes he is resolved to go out To-morrow. His Forces are weary, his Forces are spent, some came but last Night into Town, some marched above twenty Miles, which is a great March, as some that know what it is can tell; but, as weary as they are, he is resolved to go out; and if you will affect the Cause, and join with him Hand and Heart and Sword, he will take it as a Favour; but if you will not, he doubts not but *God*’s Sword will do the Work alone.

‘ I

‘ I speak not this that I doubt you, but that you would resolve, that when you hear the Drums beat, (for it is resolved that the Drums shall beat To morrow; our Drums shall beat to lead out our Men, and the Committee’s Drums shall beat to lead out their Men) say not, I beseech you, I am not of the Train’d Band, nor this, nor that, nor t’other; but doubt not to go out to the Work, and fight courageously, and this shall be the Day of your Deliverance.’

An. 13. Car. I  
1642.  
November.

Nov. 9. Notwithstanding the foregoing Speeches to the Citizens of London seem to breathe nothing but War, yet the House of Commons thought fit to soften the Harshness of their *Vote* of the 7th; for, this Day, Mr. *Pymme* brought up a different *Resolution*, to which he desired their Lordships Concurrence, viz.

*Resolved*, ‘ That the *Petition* shall be sent to his Majesty; and the Reasons which induced the Commons to make this *Vote*, he said, were these;

The Commons  
resolve, again,  
to send their Pe-  
tition to the  
King;

*First*, ‘ The great Advantage which should be gained by a settled Peace; for, thereby, they should better attend to the War in *Ireland*; and it would unite the King and Kingdom more closely, and prevent the Loss of our Religion and the Liberties of the Subject; for Peace, upon other Terms than these, they resolved never to accept: That

*Secondly*, ‘ The House of Commons did, also, consider the Danger the King’s Person was in at the last Battle; and the great Mischiefs that War had already brought upon the Common-Wealth, which would be increased if it should be continued; so much Blood being already spilt and many of great Quality slain; and that Sir *John Evelin* should be left to his Liberty to go along with the rest if he think fit.’ \*

To this pacific *Vote* the Lords readily agreed; but, as tho’ the Commons designed to shew the King the *Olive Branch* in one Hand and the *Sword* in the other, Which the Lords agree to.

B 3

other,

\* Lord *Clarendon* remarks, That, by this Expedient, the Commons satisfied themselves, that the leaving Sir *John Evelin* behind them, without bringing another in his Room, was no Submission to the King’s Exception.



## 22 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

AN. 18. CAR. I. other, the subsequent Request came along with it;  
1642.

November.

But, at the same Time, order all Soldiers to join their Regiments, go out that Afternoon for all Soldiers, on Pain of Death, to repair to their Colours: And that the Army might not be at a Loss for Recruits, the Commons sent up the following *Ordinance*.

And pass an Ordinance for encouraging Apprentices to list.

‘ **W** Hereas, in Times of common Danger and Necessity, the Interest of private Persons ought to give Way to the Public: It is *ordained* and *declared*, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that such Apprentices as have been, or shall be, listd to serve as Soldiers, for the Defence of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom, his Majesty’s Royal Person, the Parliament, and the City of *London*; their Sureties, and such as stand engaged for them, shall be secured against their Masters, their Executors, and Administrators, from all Loss and Inconveniences, by Forfeiture of Bonds, Covenants, Infranchisements, or otherwise; And that after this public Service is ended, the Masters of such Apprentices shall be commanded and required to receive them again into their Service, without imposing upon them any Punishment, Loss, or Prejudice for their Absence, in the Defence of the Common-Wealth.

‘ And the Lords and Commons do further *declare*, That, if it shall appear that the Masters of such Apprentices have received any considerable Loss by the Absence of their Apprentices, they will take care that reasonable Satisfaction shall be made unto them, out of the Public Stock of the Kingdom, according to Justice and Indifferency.’

The Commons, also, desired the Lords to join with them in sending a Committee of both Houses again to the City, to acquaint them with the Reasons that moved the Parliament to send this *Petition* to his Majesty; and to let them know the *Resolution*

tion of the Parliament is, That they will not agree An. 18. Car. I.  
to any Peace, but what shall be fully for the Preser- 1642.  
vation of Religion, the Liberty of the Subject, and  
the settling the Quiet of the Kingdom: That if  
this cannot effectually be done, both Houses are re-  
solved to spend their Lives and Fortunes in the  
Maintenance thereof.

November.

To this the Lords agreed, and ordered, That  
the Lord Mayor should be desired to call a Com-  
mon-Hall, at Six that Evening, if he could, or  
else at Nine o'Clock next Morning. A Com-  
mittee of four Lords, with a proportionable Num-  
ber of Commoners, were appointed to go to the  
City on this Occasion. At the same Time the  
Speaker of the House of Lords was ordered to write  
the following Letter:

To the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount Falk-  
land, Principal Secretary to his Majesty, or, in  
his Absence, to any of the Lords the Peers attend-  
ing his Majesty.

My Lord,

*I Am commanded, by the Peers assembled in Parlia- A Letter sent to  
ment, to desire your Lordship to advertise his Ma- inform the King  
jesty, that the late Petition resolved on by both Houses of of the said Peti-  
Parliament, will be presented unto him; which they tion.  
believe proper for your Lordship's Knowledge, that so  
his Majesty may be acquainted with it; and thus I  
rest*

Your Lordship's

November the 9th,  
1642.

affectionate Servant,

GREY.

November 10. Committees of both Houses being And a Commit-  
gone out, on their several Embassies, one to the tee go to ac-  
King, and the other to the City, the House of quaint the City  
Lords only met and adjourned to the next Day. of London there-  
In the Committee for the latter, were the Earl of with.  
Holland and Mr. Pymme, whose Speeches at the  
Guild-



An. 13. Car. 1. *Guildhall* on the Occasion, not being printed in *Rushworth's Collections*, we think deserve a Place in these Enquiries. \*

1642.

November.

The Earl of *Holland's* Speech.

*My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen and Inhabitants of the City,*

The Earl of  
*Holland's* Speech  
on that Occasion.

WE are commanded by both Houses of Parliament to come hither, and to deliver to you, that are their great Assistants, an Account of a *Resolution* they have taken to send a *Petition* to his Majesty, grounded upon these Reasons:

‘ The first is, That there is a Duty towards God to seek Peace, indeed to seek it with all Men; therefore properly and naturally with the King: This they are directed to do. If Peace flies from us, to pursue it, to follow it: This is their holy Duty.

‘ They have likewise taken into their Thoughts, very seriously, that which may concern the Safety of the King’s Person, being engaged in this last Battle, through his own Resolution and Adventures, to put his Person in some Hazard; they have a Tenderness of That, and, amongst other Considerations, it is That which prevails with them, to desire that He may not be in Danger, if it be possible, by a further Pursuance of this Action; which, in all Probability, must come to a second Blow, and that speedily, if there be not some other Way taken for an Accommodation.

‘ There is another Reason that they are likewise persuaded the more willingly thus to petition and to desire Peace; that is, for the Saving and Recovering the Kingdom of *Ireland* out of the Distress that you have long seen it in. They know the Impossibility for this Kingdom to relieve that, if we continue in these Distractions and Confusions within ourselves; and, therefore, believe nothing can contribute or conduce towards the Recovering of that Kingdom, and the Delivering of those Persons from Danger that you sent thither, but our Quietness and

\* *London*, Printed for *Peter Cole*, near the *Royal Exchange*.



and our Peace here. If that Kingdom should fall into other Hands, such Hands as it may likely and probably do, what Inconvenience, what Danger, must fall upon this Kingdom, from the Power and the Neighbourhood of that, you all must imagine.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
November.

‘ They do likewise consider what Advantages, in the Distractions amongst ourselves, Foreign States may take, when our own Hands are weakened, and a Desolation through the whole Kingdom: Those that do malign our Religion, their Consciences direct them to destroy it, as well as their Ambitions to make a Conquest of the Nation; how open we shall be likewise to them for any Prejudice, or any Danger that may fall upon us.

‘ Besides, they have a Consideration of the whole Kingdom, that have so long continued in Peace, in the Blessings of Peace, so long in the Beds of Peace, and in the Arms of Peace, (for these hundred Years there have been no Civil Divisions nor Distractions within this Kingdom) and those Abundances that Peace hath procured, and those Happinesses, which are all likely to be devoured by the Sword of War; as, in every Part of the Kingdom, already you see how it begins to destroy, with what Height, with what Power, with what Insolency.

‘ These are Considerations, that have made them believe, that as it is a Duty to God, it is that which they owe likewise to the King; it is that which they owe to the Kingdom, in which they have been born and bred; it is likewise a Discharge of their own Consciences, that every Body may see that it is not their Faults, if Peace be not procured.

‘ But though they are thus resolved, and upon these Reasons, to offer a *Petition*, and to seek Peace by all the Ways that is possible, yet they have commanded me to let you know, that as they desire Peace, they will prepare for War; they have given Directions that this Day my Lord-General shall carry his Army out of the City; there is a Rendezvous appointed; they shall there draw themselves together in such a Condition, as, we are very confident

## 26 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1. 1642. fident and very hopeful, we shall be able to defend it.

November.

‘ We are likewise resolved, and so I am commanded to deliver to you, That as we have long kept together with Resolutions to defend our Privileges, our Religion, our Liberties, and Laws; so we will continue in the same Resolution, and the same Purpose to do so; nothing shall deter us from it. If we can find Peace from his Majesty upon these Conditions, that Religion, and Laws, and our Liberties, and all, may be happily secured to the Kingdom and to you all, we shall be glad of it; and it will be a Blessing to us, and to you all: If it cannot be done, we are resolved, and so I am commanded to let you know, nothing shall discourage us, neither Danger, nor Power, nor any Thing; but if we cannot maintain our Religion, our Laws, and our Liberties, we will perish and die for it.’

Mr. Pymme’s Speech.

*My Lord Mayor and Gentlemen,*

And Mr Pymme’s ‘ T Here is little to be added to that which was said by this Noble Lord, who hath represented to you (to you of this famous City of *London*, who will make it much more famous by these noble Affections, which you have shewed still to the Public Good, and by yielding so much Aid, and so much Encouragement as you have done, to the Parliament in maintaining it) the Sense of both Houses, the Reasons and Motives upon which they did desire Peace: Motives indeed, that have wrought with us from the Beginning of this War to this Time; for we should never have stepped one Step towards War if we might have had, or hoped for, such a Peace as might have secured Religion and Liberty, and the Public Good of the Kingdom; but truly ill Counsel did exclude us from such Hope.

‘ We now conceive that the King, having seen the Courage of his Subjects, having seen the Danger  
of



of his own Person, and so much Blood shed about him, he will be more tractable to good Conditions of Peace, than he would have been before; and that is the Reason why we do think fit to try him, once more, after this Battle that hath been lately fought, before it come to another Battle.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

‘ It is true, that this may seem a Resolution contrary to that which was opened to you within these few Days; but you will conceive, that all great Councils are subject to alter their Resolutions, according as Matters alter, and as the Apprehensions of Matters alter; for if Things appear more clear and hopeful to them at one Time than at another, it is no Dishonour for them to vary according to their Appearance, Judgments, and best Reasons; so long as they do it with Affections to the best Purpose; which you may rest assured the Parliament hath done: And though we desire Peace very much, yet a Peace to betray Religion, or to betray our Liberties, we shall always esteem worse than War; therefore we shall put it to a very quick Issue, if the King receive the *Petition*, to make such *Propositions* as you may see:

‘ *First*, Whether you shall be secured in your Religion; in your Religion with a Hope of Reformation; such a Reformation as may maintain the Power of Religion, and the Purity of Religion, as well as the Name of Religion; for we shall not be contented with the Name, nor without a Reformation that shall maintain the Power of it.

‘ *Next*, We shall pursue the Maintenance of our Liberties; Liberties that may not only be in Laws and Statutes; but Liberties that may be in Practice and in Execution; and to take such Course, that you may have the Effects of them in Truth: For to have printed Liberties, and not to have Liberties in Truth and Reality, is but to mock the Kingdom; and I hope we shall take Care for that in the second Place.

‘ *Thirdly*, We shall take Care to maintain the Dignity and the Honour of Parliament; for that

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

November.

is what will be a lasting Security to you in your Liberty and Religion.

‘ We shall take Care, in the *fourth* Place, to answer the Affections of the City of *London*, That we will not consent to any Thing that shall be prejudicial to them: We will preserve them in the highest Degree of Honour, that ever this City of *London* was in; and truly it is now in the highest Degree of Honour that ever it was; for you have carried yourselves in such a Regard to the Public, that never any of your Predecessors did so before; and therefore we shall, in a Peace, be as careful of you as of ourselves; and you may be assured of this, that if we have not this Peace, our Lives, our Pains, our Estates, they shall all join with you, in maintaining that with the Sword, which we shall not get in an humble Way by *Petition*; and this we shall bring to a quick Issue.

‘ Therefore I shall only move you, as I am commanded to do from the Parliament, that you will not think there is any Fainting on our Parts; that we are more cold, or less affectionate to any of these good Ends than heretofore we have been; but that we would compass them with more secure Advantage: For if you can get these by Peace, you will have great Advantages by it; you will hinder foreign Invasions from beyond the Seas; you will quickly be able to master the Rebels in *Ireland*; you will quickly be able to suppress the *Papists* that begin to rise in *England*; then you shall have a perpetual Security, that they shall never be able to hurt you more: Therefore, if we can have such a Peace, without further Hazard and Blood-shedding, we shall praise God, and esteem it as a great Blessing; but if not, pray lay not down the same Spirits, for we have the same Hearts, and Multitudes of Spirits, and the Kingdom inclinable to us. Where the King has been, many, to save their Estates and Lives, have shewed themselves but Men; for it was not to be thought that single Counties should maintain themselves against an Army; but they have



have Hearts as they had before; and no doubt but they will join with us, with more Alacrity, when they see we have desired Peace by all the Ways we could, and cannot have it.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642  
November.

'We shall, by this Means, satisfy our own Consciences; we shall satisfy many Members of Parliament, that desired it might be put on this Way; we shall satisfy many of the Kingdom too, that have held themselves indifferent; but when they see there is no Hope of Peace, in such a Way, without Blood, certainly they will stand to us for Religion and Liberty; which must be destroyed if we cannot secure them without War: Therefore, I shall commend to you, that you would not let fall any Part of your Contributions, for it is That which must maintain the Army; nor entertain ill Apprehensions of the Parliament; but go on so as you have done, and I hope it will be such an End as God may have all the Glory, and you all the Comfort.'

November 11. A Letter was read in the House of Lords, directed to their Speaker *pro Tempore*.

My Lord,

**WE** were got near Maidenhead when Sir Peter Killegrew met us, and told us that his Majesty was on Horse-back, on his Way towards Colebrook; and that his Pleasure was, we should return thither and attend him there. When, soon after his Arrival, his Majesty sent for us, and we presented the Petition as we were commanded. His Majesty returned an Answer which we here inclose, in the same Words, or as near as we can recollect them. This is all the Account that can be given by

Account of the  
Petition's being  
presented to the  
King.

Your Lordship's Servants,

Uxbridge, Nov. 10,  
1642.

A. NORTHUMBERLAND,  
PEMBROKE and MONTGOMERY.

The

An. 13. Car. I.  
1642.

November.

His Majesty's  
first Answer.

The King's *Answer*, referred to in the foregoing *Letter*, was then read.

*I* Know you do not expect that I should give you an Answer now to this, which is of so great Importance; but something I will say, at this present, to the Preamble, mentioning the saving of the Effusion of Blood. I have often professed, and called God and Man to Witness, that if other Men (whom a short Time will discover) had been as careful as myself, this War had not happened. What I have done was for my own Safety, and to maintain that Government with Honour, which my Father left me. I will not hinder your Return to London; but will, in Part, deliver my Answer to you To-morrow, and send it more fully, by some Messengers of my own.

Amongst other Business done this Day, in the House of Lords, we find a Form of Thanks drawn up to be presented to their Lord-General; which, for its extraordinary Style, and high Expressions of Gratitude, deserves our Notice.

Both Houses re-  
turn Thanks to  
the Earl of Essex  
for his Conduct,

*T*HE Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament having, upon mature Deliberation, and assured Confidence in the Wisdom, Courage, and Fidelity of Robert Earl of Essex, chosen and appointed him Captain-General of the Forces raised by the Authority of Parliament, for the Defence of the true Protestant Religion, the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, now in great and apparent Danger; do find, That the said Earl hath managed this Service, of so high Importance, with so much Care, Valour, and Dexterity; as well as by the extreme Hazard of his Life, in a bloody Battle, near Keynton, in Warwickshire, as, by all the Actions of a most excellent and expert Commander, in the whole Course of this Employment, as doth deserve their best Acknowledgement. We do, therefore, declare and publish, to the lasting Honour of the said Earl, the great and acceptable Service which he hath, herein, done to the Common-Wealth; and shall be ready  
' and



‘and willing, upon all Occasions, to express the  
 ‘due Sense which we have of his Merit, by assisting  
 ‘and protecting him, and all others employed under  
 ‘his Command, in this Service, with our Lives  
 ‘and Fortunes, to the uttermost of our Power.  
 ‘This to remain, upon Record, in both Houses of  
 ‘Parliament, as a Mark of Honour to his Person,  
 ‘Name, and Family, and for a Monument of his  
 ‘singular Virtue, to Posterity.’ \*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
 1642.  
 November.

But the Commons were of Opinion, that the  
 Earl of *Essex* deserved more than an Address of  
 Thanks; for they resolved, That 5000 *l.* be forth-  
 with presented to his Excellency from that House.

And the Com-  
 mons vote him  
 5000 *l.*

The last Thing we shall take Notice of, in the  
 Business of this long Day, is an Order of Parlia-  
 ment for a strict Search to be made, in the Cities  
 of *London* and *Westminster*, and their Suburbs, *South-  
 wark*, &c. for all Officers and common Soldiers, be-  
 longing to the Earl of *Essex*'s Army; and to bring  
 them to the Palace-Yard, *Westminster*, that they  
 might be sent forthwith from thence to the Army.  
 And all Alehouse-Keepers, or other Houholders,  
 were strictly prohibited from harbouring any such,  
 on very severe Penalties. This to be published, by  
 beat of Drum, throughout the Places above-men-  
 tioned. And, for a greater Inducement for all the  
 Soldiery to repair to their Colours, at the Time ap-  
 pointed, the Commons ordered every Foot-Soldier  
 Half a Crown, and the Horse Five Shillings a-piece,  
 over and above their Pay.

Orders for assem-  
 bling all the Sol-  
 diers of the Par-  
 liament's Army.

*November 12.* The Earls of *Northumberland* and  
*Pembroke* reported to the Lords, That they had wait-  
 ed on the King, Yesterday, who, to save Time, had  
 returned a full Answer, by them, to their *Petition*.

*His Majesty's ANSWER to the aforesaid PETITION.* The King's fur-  
 ‘**W**E take God to Witness how deeply we  
 ‘are affected with the Miseries of this King-  
 ‘dom, which, heretofore, we have strove, as much  
 ‘as

ther Answer to  
 the Parliament's  
 Petition for  
 Peace.

\* It is accordingly entered in both Journals.

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

as in us lay, to prevent; it being sufficiently known to all the World, That as we were not the first that took up Arms, so we have shewed our Readiness of composing all Things in a fair Way, by our several Offers of Treaty; and shall be glad, now at length, to find any such Inclination in others: The same Tenderness to avoid the Destruction of our Subjects, whom we know to be our greatest Strength, which would always make our greatest Victories bitter to us, shall make us willingly hearken to such Propositions whereby these bloody Distempers may be stopped, and the great Distractions of this Kingdom settled, to God's Glory, our Honour, and the Welfare and Flourishing of our People; and, to that End, shall reside at our own Castle at *Windsor*, if the Forces there shall be removed, till Committees may have Time to attend us with the same; which, to prevent the Inconveniences that will intervene, we wish may be hastened, and shall be ready there; or, if that be refused us, at any Place where we shall be, to receive such Propositions as aforesaid, from both Houses of Parliament. Do you your Duty, we will not be wanting in ours: God of his Mercy give a Blessing.

After the reading of this *Answer*, it was resolved to communicate the Contents of it to the Commons. Then the Lord-General stood up and desired he might receive Directions from the House how he should order his Forces during the Time of this Treaty: For, if he should advance his Quarters towards the King, it might be thought an Act of Hostility; and, if he should omit any Thing, then he might be looked upon as remiss. Thereupon the House resolved to write a Letter to the King's Secretary, to know his Majesty's Pleasure concerning a Cessation of Arms, during the Time of this Treaty; and gave the Lord-General Directions to forbear doing any Act of Hostility while further Orders. The Commons having given their Concurrence, a Letter was sent to the Secretary in these Words:

My



My Lord,

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

November.

*I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons, in Parliament, to signify to your Lordship, that, with much Joy, they received his Majesty's Gracious Answer unto their Petition; expressing his pious Inclinations unto Peace. They do resolve, with all Diligence, to send their humble Propositions unto his Majesty, and, likewise, their Answer concerning Windsor Castle; in the mean Time, they desire to know his Majesty's Pleasure, how the Armies shall govern themselves, and whether he does not resolve on a Cessation of all Acts of Hostility, upon the Overture of a Cessation of Peace. This is all I have, at present, unto your Lordship, adding Duty unto it, and an Assurance of being*

Lord Grey's Letter concerning a Cessation of Hostilities.

Your Lordship's

most affectionate Friend

and humble Servant,

GREY.

The House of Commons, however, did not wait for any Answer from the King; for this Day, they agreed to send a Message to the Lord-General, to desire him to proceed according to his best Advantages, notwithstanding the foregoing Letter sent to the King by Sir Peter Killigrew, or any Proceedings thereon; in regard the other Side had begun to act Hostilities since that Letter was agreed upon. The General answered, That he did not intend to be amused by Treaties; but, since they have begun the Acts of Hostility, to pursue and see what they would do.

Nov. 13. The Parliament had now the City of London so much at their Devotion, that, this Day, the Commons being informed, That several Citizens were at the Door, who desired to offer something to their Consideration, they were called in: And one Mr. Shute, a Merchant, in the Name of the rest, addressed the House in a Speech, which appears to have been a very long one, by the fol-

A Petition and Proposals from the City of London to the Commons.

An. 18. Car. 1. following Heads of it taken and entered in the *Commons Journals* :

1642.

November,

‘ That they did acknowledge, with all Thankfulness, the continued and unwearied Care and Pains of this House, for the Preservation of the true Protestant Religion, the Liberty of the People, and the Privileges of Parliament.

‘ They have presented a *Petition* of ten Particulars ; to which they expect an Answer in convenient Time.

‘ They speak in the Language of many Thousands ; That they fear they are bought and sold.

These Things they present :

1. ‘ That in a Case of so much Danger ; and so great Concernment, that there should be but one Army to rely upon.

2. ‘ That, in all this Time, the King’s Strength lying in Horse, that the City should not appear in a considerable Body of Horse.—Though it has been offered, and not effectually yet put in a Way, they do now again offer it.

3. ‘ That *Windsor* Castle should not be provided for, as it ought.

4. ‘ That Colonel *Holles’s* Regiment, Men of that Courage, and so considerable, should be exposed to a Place of so imminent Danger, lying next to the Enemy’s Forces, and almost naked.

5. ‘ The Point of Accommodation is another Reason of their Grief.

They are come to this *Resolution* ;

‘ That they will man out every Man his Man, and make their own Captains and Officers, and live and die with the House of Commons, and in Defence thereof : And if there be any in the Lords House, that do any way retard or hinder this public Defence, they wish they would declare themselves ; and that they were with the King.

6. ‘ Another Matter of their Grief was, That the *Sabbath* Day should be so long profaned by public Authority ; and the Book that enjoins it, not yet burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman.

They



They observe, that this Day they have so profaned, An. 18. Car. 1. 1642.  
has been the Day of their Ruin. \*

7. 'The Bloodshed of the Martyrs, in Queen Mary's Days, done by public Act of Parliament, and no Expiation as yet made for it.

November.

8. 'The Officers in the Army (though they must always mention my Lord-General with Honour, as one in whom they absolutely confide) not so careful and diligent as they ought, nor all of them so trusty.

9. 'The Numbers of the Prisoners very great, and of dangerous Condition; and the Masters and Keepers of those Prisons not to be confided in. †

10. 'The good Ministers in Time past silenced, and put out by the Bishops.

'You have our Persons, Purfes, and Estates, all at your Command: You may do with us at your Pleasure.

'We come in the Name of the Godly and Active Part of the City.'

The Citizens being withdrawn, the Commons came to the following *Resolutions*:

1. 'That the Book concerning Injoining and Tolerating of Sports upon the *Sabbath* Day, be forthwith burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman, in the usual Places.

2. 'That this House doth accept of this Offer of the Citizens, of furnishing Horse and Foot; and doth account it to be a Service much importing the Safety of the Common-Wealth; and doth return them public and hearty Thanks.'

The Citizens being called in again, the Speaker, by the Command of the House, told them, 'They found, that what was said was expressed with a zealous and earnest Care of the Common-Wealth; for which they return them public and hearty Thanks.

C 2

'For

\* He means, we suppose, the Battle of *Edge-Hill*, fought on *Sunday*

† About this Time the Commons resolved, That the Bishop of *Winchester's* House, in *Southwark*, should be appointed as a Prison for Delinquents; probably for the Reason here assigned.



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘ For the Particular of Horse and Foot, they accept; and have appointed a particular Committee to treat about it.

‘ The Book of Sports they have voted to be burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman.’

Mr. *Shute* having desired to speak again, said, ‘ That the Coming of the Lord-General’s Army into the City of *London*, and staying here so long as they did, is another Thing troubles them; which they forgot to express before.

‘ Another Thing is, That some present and more severe Course might be taken with Malig-nants; and, amongst them, with the malignant Ministers.’

And then the Citizens withdrew.

*November 14.* A Letter from the King, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read; which was only a Command to him to communicate the inclosed Paper to the whole House; the Purport of which was this:

The King’s Mes-  
sage concerning  
his Marching to  
*Brentford*;

‘ **W** Hereas the last Night, being the 11th of *November*, after the Departure of the Committee of both our Houses, with our gracious *Answer* to their *Petition*, we received certain Information (having till then heard nothing of it, either from the Houses Committee, or otherwise) that the Earl of *Essex* had drawn his Forces out of *London* towards us, which hath necessitated our sudden Resolution to march with our Forces to *Brentford*; we have thought fit hereby to signify to both our Houses of Parliament, that we are no less desirous of the Peace of the Kingdom, than we expressed in our aforesaid *Answer*, the Propositions for which we shall willingly receive, wherever we are: and desire, if it may be, to receive them at *Brentford* this Night, or early To-morrow Morning, that all possible Speed may be made in so good a Work, and all Inconveniences, otherwise likely to intervene, may be avoided.’

The

The House was likewise informed, That Sir *Peter Killigrew*, who was to carry the Letter sent last from the Parliament to the King, went as far as *Brentford*, where he found the King's Army engaged with some Regiments of the Lord-General's; and that then endeavouring to go by *Uxbridge*, was there also stopp'd by some Dragoons belonging to the King's Army; and upon that he returned back with the Letter, which he desired to know what to do with.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
November.

Where both Armies engage.

The Lord-General saying, at the same Time, That he had placed three Regiments at *Brentford*, before the Committee of Lords and Commons came from the King, it was resolved to have a Conference with the Commons on all these Matters; and to appoint a Committee to draw up a *Declaration*, which, with the Letters *pro* and *con*, were to be forthwith printed and published, in order to vindicate the Actions and Desires of both Houses, concerning Peace and a Cessation of Arms. At this Conference, however, it was recommended to the Lord-General, by both Houses, to take all Advantage against the Enemy wherever he found them.

The Parliament desire the Earl of Essex to make use of all Advantages.

*November 15.* The Commons resolved to accept of an Offer of the Citizens of *London*, whereby they engaged to raise 1000 Light Horse and 3000 Dragoons, for the Service of the Parliament, to be commanded by the Lord-General alone, and to be accountable to none but himself by the Advice of both Houses. They also recommended Serjeant-Major-General *Skippon*, who formerly had commanded the Guard appointed to attend both Houses, to command those Horse and Dragoons in Chief under the Lord-General; and Col. *Hurrey* under Mr. *Skippon*. \* Mr. *Whitlocke* gives us the following Speech of the latter to his Soldiers; who, he

The Citizens of London raise Light Horse and Dragoons.

C 3 says,

\* Both Lord *Clarendon* and Mr. *Whitlocke* agree in ascribing this extraordinary Offer of the Citizens, to the indefatigable Zeal and Activity of the Lord Mayor *Pennington*, who succeeded to that Office by the Removal of Sir *Richard Gurney*, and was again elected for the Year 1643.



### 38 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I. says, were more taken with it than with a formal Oration :

1642.

November.

Mr. Skippon's  
Speech to those  
Troops,

**C**OME my Boys, my brave Boys, let us pray heartily and fight heartily, I will run the same Fortunes and Hazards with you. Remember the Cause is for God, and for the Defence of yourselves, your Wives, and Children. Come my honest brave Boys, pray heartily and fight heartily, and God will bless us.

November 16. The Committee of Safety having drawn up an *Answer* to the King's last *Message*, it was this Day read and agreed to by both Houses, and was in *hæc Verba* :

The Parliament's Answer  
to the King's last  
Message,

**T**O your Majesty's *Message* of the twelfth of this Month of *November*, we the Lords and Commons in Parliament do make this humble *Answer*, That this *Message* was not delivered to us till *Monday* the fourteenth. We thought it a strange Introduction to Peace, that your Majesty should send your Army to beat us out of our Quarters at *Brentford*, and then appoint that Place to receive our *Propositions*; which yet it plainly appears your Majesty intended not to receive, till you had first tried whether you could break thro' the Army, raised for the Defence of this Kingdom and Parliament; and take the City, being unprovided and secure in Expectation of a fair Treaty made to secure the City: If herein your Majesty had prevailed, after you had destroyed the Army and master'd the City, it is easy to imagine what a miserable Peace we should have had; and whether those Courses be suitable to the Expressions your Majesty is pleased to make, in your *Answer* to our *Petition*, of your Earnestness to avoid any further Effusion of Blood, let God and the World judge.

As for our Proceedings, they have, in all Things, been answerable to our Professions: We gave Directions to the Earl of *Essex* to draw the Army under his Command, out of the City and Suburbs, before we sent any *Message* to your Majesty,



‘ jesty, so that part of it was quarter’d in *Brentford* An. 18. Car. I.  
 ‘ before the Committee returned with your *Answer*; 1642.  
 ‘ and immediately upon the Receipt thereof, that }  
 ‘ very Morning, Order was taken that the Soldiers } November.  
 ‘ should exercise no Acts of Hostility against any of  
 ‘ your Majesty’s People: We sent a Letter by Sir  
 ‘ *Peter Killigrew* to know your Majesty’s Pleasure,  
 ‘ whether you intended the like Forbearance of Ho-  
 ‘ stility; but the Fury of your Soldiers, thirsting  
 ‘ after Blood and Spoil, prevented the Delivery of  
 ‘ the Letter; for coming, upon *Saturday*, in his  
 ‘ Way towards your Majesty, as far as *Brentford*,  
 ‘ he found them in fight there, and could pass no  
 ‘ farther. God who sees our Innocency, and that  
 ‘ we have no Aims but at his Glory and the Public  
 ‘ Good, will, we hope, free your Majesty from  
 ‘ these destructive Counsels of some, who labour to  
 ‘ maintain their own Power by Blood and Rapine;  
 ‘ and bless our Endeavours, who seek nothing but  
 ‘ to procure and establish the Honour, Peace, and  
 ‘ Safety of your Majesty and Kingdoms, upon the  
 ‘ sure Foundation of Religion and Justice.’

The Lord *Grey*, as Speaker, was ordered to send this *Answer* to the King, inclosed in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, by Sir *Peter Killigrew*.

*November* 18. Tho’ both Houses were so much employed in the Military Service, that little or nothing else can be found in the *Journals* of either of them; yet, this Day, an Accident happened which diverted them a little from that Pursuit, and turned their Thoughts towards Law Affairs and Courts of Justice. The Lords were informed, That a Messenger had been apprehended by the Lord-General, who finding about him a Proclamation and Writs His Majesty having proposed to adjourn Michaelmas Term, for the Adjournment of the present Term, the said Papers were sent to the House of Commons; and, upon opening, they found the Proclamation for Adjournment was to take Place as this Day. This the Commons conceived to be very destructive and prejudicial to the whole Kingdom, if it should be so; there being three Days in the Law, one for *Essoigns*, an-

An. 18. Car. 1. another for Returns, and a third for Appearance.  
1642.

November.

And if the Term should be adjourned, according to this Proclamation and Writ, it would be obstructive to the whole Proceedings of the Law, and many Evils would ensue. For,

1. All former Proceedings, at the last Assizes, would be lost, so that no Judgment could be given therein.

2. No original Writs, or mesne Procefs can issue out, on any Occasion, tho' it be to deliver any out of Prison.

3. If the Term should be adjourned, there being an Army in the Field, and the King's Colours flying, it would be accounted *Tempus Belli*, when all Laws sleep, are silent and dissolved; and then there would be no Property, nor any Violence counted an Injury.

4. No Fines nor Recoveries could be taken, whereby Men may pass common Assurances for settling their Estates; besides many other Evils would ensue, to the Obstruction of the whole Law.

Therefore the House of Commons desire, that their Lordships would give Direction to the Judges to keep this Term, and not to make Adjournments of it, either by virtue of these Writs, or any other Writs whatsoever they shall receive.

The Writs were not opened, but the Proclamation was read, as follows:

And issued a Proclamation for that Purpose,

‘ **W** Hereas his Majesty did adjourn Part of this Term of *St Michael* from the first Return, called *A Die S. Michaelis in tres Septimanas*, untill the Return, *Octab. S. Martini*; his Majesty, considering the present Distractions of this Kingdom, doth declare, That the Residue of the said Term, beginning at the said Return of *Octab. S. Martini*, be wholly adjourned as to all Appearances, Causes, Matters, and Things, which should have been made or done in any of his Majesty's Courts at *Westminster*, untill *Octab. Hilarii* next following; and that Writs of Adjournment shall be made by one Judge of each Bench,



‘ Bench, giving them Power to adjourn the Resi-  
 ‘ due of the said Term of St. *Michael's*; and the  
 ‘ said Adjournment shall be made on the first Day  
 ‘ of the said *Octab. S. Michaelis*, commonly called  
 ‘ the Day of *Elloigns*.

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.  
 November.

*Given at Oatlands, the 15th of November, in the  
 18th Year of his now Majesty's Reign.*

The Lords taking these Matters into serious Con-  
 sideration, as a Thing of great Importance to the  
 Good of the whole Kingdom, agreed with the  
 House of Commons in the Matter of this *Message*,  
 and made the following *Order*:

*Ordered*, by the Lords and Commons in Parlia-  
 ment assembled, ‘ That the Judges of the King's  
 Bench, Court of Common Pleas, and Barons of the  
 Exchequer, are hereby enjoined that they do not,  
 neither by virtue of these Writs of Adjournment  
 now sent, nor any other Writs whatsoever which  
 shall be sent, adjourn this Term of St. *Michael*; but  
 that they shall sit and proceed to dispatch the public  
 Justice of the Kingdom, according as is usual in  
 their several Courts.’

The Parlia-  
 ment forbid the  
 Judges to ad-  
 journ the said  
 Term.

This *Order* was read in the House; and the Judges  
 present commanded to take Notice and obey it.

There had been some Intimations, for several Days  
 last past, entered in the *Journals*, for calling in the  
*Scots* to the Assistance of Parliament; and this Day  
 a *Declaration* was sent up from the Commons,  
 whereby one Mr. *Pickering* was authorized and re-  
 quired to deliver the same to the Council of State  
 in that Kingdom, and otherwise to publish it as he  
 should see Occasion; and that Instructions be sent  
 to him to solicit the Effects of it. It was also or-  
 dered, That the said *Declaration* should be delivered  
 to the *Scots* Commissioners residing here. To all  
 which the Lords agreed, and is as follows:

They resolve to  
 call in the Assist-  
 ance of the Scots.

‘ **W**E the Lords and Commons assembled in Their Declarati-  
 ‘ the Parliament of *England*, considering on to that King-  
 ‘ with what Wisdom and public Affection our Bre-  
 ‘ thren



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘ Brethren of the Kingdom of *Scotland* did concur with  
 ‘ the Endeavours of this Parliament, and the De-  
 ‘ sires of the whole Kingdom, in procuring and e-  
 ‘ stablishing a firm Peace and Amity between the  
 ‘ two Nations; and how lovingly they have since  
 ‘ invited us to a nearer and higher Degree of Union,  
 ‘ in Matters concerning Religion and Church Go-  
 ‘ vernment, which we have most willingly and af-  
 ‘ fectionately embraced and intend to pursue, can-  
 ‘ not doubt but they will, with as much Forward-  
 ‘ ness and Affection, concur with us in settling Peace  
 ‘ in this Kingdom, and preserving it in their own;  
 ‘ that so we may mutually reap the Benefit of that  
 ‘ Amity and Alliance, so happily made and strong-  
 ‘ ly confirmed betwixt the two Nations. Where-  
 ‘ fore, as we did about a Year since, in the first Ap-  
 ‘ pearance of Trouble then beginning amongst them,  
 ‘ actually declare, That, in our Sense and Appre-  
 ‘ hension of the National Alliance betwixt us, we  
 ‘ were thereby bound to apply the Authority of  
 ‘ Parliament and Power of this Kingdom to the  
 ‘ Preservation and Maintenance of their Peace:  
 ‘ And seeing now that the Troubles of this King-  
 ‘ dom are grown to a greater Height, and the subtle  
 ‘ Practices of the common Enemy of the Religion  
 ‘ and Liberty of both Nations do appear with more  
 ‘ Evidence, Strength, and Danger than they did at  
 ‘ that Time: We hold it necessary to declare, That,  
 ‘ in our Judgment, the same Obligation lies upon  
 ‘ our Brethren by the aforementioned Act, with  
 ‘ the Power and Force of that Kingdom to assist  
 ‘ us, in repressing those amongst us who are now in  
 ‘ Arms and make War, not only without Consent  
 ‘ of Parliament, but even against the Parliament,  
 ‘ and for the Destruction thereof.

‘ Wherefore we have thought good to make  
 ‘ known to our Brethren, that his Majesty hath gi-  
 ‘ ven Commission to divers eminent and known  
 ‘ *Papists*, to raise Forces and compose an Army in  
 ‘ the *North*, and other Parts of this Kingdom;  
 ‘ which is to join with divers foreign Forces intend-  
 ‘ ed

ed to be transported from beyond the Seas, for the Destruction of this Parliament, and of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom. And that the Prelatical Part of the Clergy, and their Adherents, have likewise invited his Majesty to raise another Army; which, in his Person, he doth conduct against the Parliament and the City of London, plundering and robbing sundry well-affected Towns within their Power: And that, in Prosecution of their Malice, they are so presumptuous and predominant of his Majesty's Resolutions, that they forbear not those Outrages in Places to which his Majesty hath given his Royal Word and Protection. A great Cause and Incentive of which Malice proceeds from the Design they have to hinder the Reformation of Ecclesiastical Government in this Kingdom, so much longed for by all true Lovers of the Protestant Religion.

And hereupon we further desire our Brethren of the Nation of Scotland, to raise such Forces as they shall judge sufficient for the securing the Peace of their own Borders, against the ill-affected Persons there; as likewise to assist us in suppressing the Army of Papists and Foreigners, which, as we expect, will shortly be on Foot here; and, if they be not timely prevented, may prove as mischievous and destructive to that Kingdom as to ourselves.

And though we seek nothing from his Majesty, that may diminish his just Authority or Honour; and have, by many humble Petitions, endeavoured to put an End to this unnatural War and Combustion in the Kingdom; and to procure his Majesty's Protection and Security for our Religion, Liberty, and Persons, according to that great Trust which his Majesty is bound to by the Laws of the Land; and shall still continue to renew our Petitions in that Kind: Yet, to our great Grief, we see the Papistical and Malignant Counsel so prevalent with his Majesty, and his Person so engaged to their Power, that we have little Hope of better

Success



An. 18. Car. 1. another for Returns, and a third for Appearances.  
1642.

November.

And if the Term should be adjourned, according to this Proclamation and Writ, it would be obstructive to the whole Proceedings of the Law, and many Evils would ensue. For,

1. All former Proceedings, at the last Assizes, would be lost, so that no Judgment could be given therein.

2. No original Writs, or mesne Proceſs can issue out, on any Occasion, tho' it be to deliver any out of Prison.

3. If the Term should be adjourned, there being an Army in the Field, and the King's Colours flying, it would be accounted *Tempus Belli*, when all Laws sleep, are silent and dissolved; and then there would be no Property, nor any Violence counted an Injury.

4. No Fines nor Recoveries could be taken, whereby Men may pass common Assurances for settling their Estates; besides many other Evils would ensue, to the Obstruction of the whole Law.

Therefore the House of Commons desire, that their Lordships would give Direction to the Judges to keep this Term, and not to make Adjournments of it, either by virtue of these Writs, or any other Writs whatsoever they shall receive.

The Writs were not opened, but the Proclamation was read, as follows :

And issued a Proclamation for that Purpose,

‘ **W** Hereas his Majesty did adjourn Part of this  
Term of *St Michael* from the first Return, called *A Die S. Michaelis in tres Septimanas*,  
‘ untill the Return, *Octab. S. Martini*; his Majesty,  
‘ considering the present Distractions of this Kingdom, doth declare, That the Residue of the said  
‘ Term, beginning at the said Return of *Octab. S. Martini*, be wholly adjourned as to all Appearances, Causes, Matters, and Things, which  
‘ should have been made or done in any of his  
‘ Majesty's Courts at *Westminster*, untill *Octab. Hilarii* next following; and that Writs of Adjournment shall be made by one Judge of each  
‘ Bench,



‘ Bench, giving them Power to adjourn the Resi-  
 ‘ due of the said Term of St. *Michael's*; and the  
 ‘ said Adjournment shall be made on the first Day  
 ‘ of the said *Octab. S. Michaelis*, commonly called  
 ‘ the Day of *Essoigns*.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
 1642.  
 November.

*Given at Oatlands, the 15th of November, in the  
 18th Year of his now Majesty's Reign.*

The Lords taking these Matters into serious Con-  
 sideration, as a Thing of great Importance to the  
 Good of the whole Kingdom, agreed with the  
 House of Commons in the Matter of this *Message*,  
 and made the following *Order*:

*Ordered*, by the Lords and Commons in Parlia-  
 ment assembled, ‘ That the Judges of the King's  
 Bench, Court of Common Pleas, and Barons of the  
 Exchequer, are hereby enjoined that they do not,  
 neither by virtue of these Writs of Adjournment  
 now sent, nor any other Writs whatsoever which  
 shall be sent, adjourn this Term of St. *Michael*; but  
 that they shall sit and proceed to dispatch the public  
 Justice of the Kingdom, according as is usual in  
 their several Courts.’

The Parlia-  
 ment forbid the  
 Judges to ad-  
 journ the said  
 Term.

This *Order* was read in the House; and the Judges  
 present commanded to take Notice and obey it.

There had been some Intimations, for several Days  
 last past, entered in the *Journals*, for calling in the  
*Scots* to the Assistance of Parliament; and this Day  
 a *Declaration* was sent up from the Commons,  
 whereby one Mr. *Pickering* was authorized and re-  
 quired to deliver the same to the Council of State  
 in that Kingdom, and otherwise to publish it as he  
 should see Occasion; and that Instructions be sent  
 to him to solicit the Effects of it. It was also or-  
 dered, That the said *Declaration* should be delivered  
 to the *Scots* Commissioners residing here. To all  
 which the Lords agreed, and is as follows:

They resolve to  
 call in the Assis-  
 tance of the Scots.

‘ **W**E the Lords and Commons assembled in Their Declarati-  
 ‘ the Parliament of *England*, considering on to that King-  
 ‘ with what Wisdom and public Affection our Bre-  
 ‘ thren

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

' thren of the Kingdom of *Scotland* did concur with  
 ' the Endeavours of this Parliament, and the De-  
 ' fires of the whole Kingdom, in procuring and e-  
 ' stablishing a firm Peace and Amity between the  
 ' two Nations; and how lovingly they have since  
 ' invited us to a nearer and higher Degree of Union,  
 ' in Matters concerning Religion and Church Go-  
 ' vernment, which we have most willingly and af-  
 ' fectionately embraced and intend to pursue, can-  
 ' not doubt but they will, with as much Forward-  
 ' ness and Affection, concur with us in settling Peace  
 ' in this Kingdom, and preserving it in their own;  
 ' that so we may mutually reap the Benefit of that  
 ' Amity and Alliance, so happily made and strong-  
 ' ly confirmed betwixt the two Nations. Where-  
 ' fore, as we did about a Year since, in the first Ap-  
 ' pearance of Trouble then beginning amongst them,  
 ' actually declare, That, in our Sense and Appre-  
 ' hension of the National Alliance betwixt us, we  
 ' were thereby bound to apply the Authority of  
 ' Parliament and Power of this Kingdom to the  
 ' Preservation and Maintenance of their Peace:  
 ' And seeing now that the Troubles of this King-  
 ' dom are grown to a greater Height, and the subtle  
 ' Practices of the common Enemy of the Religion  
 ' and Liberty of both Nations do appear with more  
 ' Evidence, Strength, and Danger than they did at  
 ' that Time: We hold it necessary to declare, That,  
 ' in our Judgment, the same Obligation lies upon  
 ' our Brethren by the aforementioned Act, with  
 ' the Power and Force of that Kingdom to assist  
 ' us, in repressing those amongst us who are now in  
 ' Arms and make War, not only without Consent  
 ' of Parliament, but even against the Parliament,  
 ' and for the Destruction thereof.

' Wherefore we have thought good to make  
 ' known to our Brethren, that his Majesty hath gi-  
 ' ven Commission to divers eminent and known  
 ' *Papists*, to raise Forces and compose an Army in  
 ' the *North*, and other Parts of this Kingdom;  
 ' which is to join with divers foreign Forces intend-

ed



ed to be transported from beyond the Seas, for the Destruction of this Parliament, and of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom. And that the Prelatical Part of the Clergy, and their Adherents, have likewise invited his Majesty to raise another Army; which, in his Person, he doth conduct against the Parliament and the City of *London*, plundering and robbing sundry well-affected Towns within their Power: And that, in Prosecution of their Malice, they are so presumptuous and predominant of his Majesty's Resolutions, that they forbear not those Outrages in Places to which his Majesty hath given his Royal Word and Protection. A great Cause and Incentive of which Malice proceeds from the Design they have to hinder the Reformation of Ecclesiastical Government in this Kingdom, so much longed for by all true Lovers of the Protestant Religion.

And hereupon we further desire our Brethren of the Nation of *Scotland*, to raise such Forces as they shall judge sufficient for the securing the Peace of their own Borders, against the ill-affected Persons there; as likewise to assist us in suppressing the Army of *Papists* and Foreigners, which, as we expect, will shortly be on Foot here; and, if they be not timely prevented, may prove as mischievous and destructive to that Kingdom as to ourselves.

And though we seek nothing from his Majesty, that may diminish his just Authority or Honour; and have, by many humble *Petitions*, endeavoured to put an End to this unnatural War and Combustion in the Kingdom; and to procure his Majesty's Protection and Security for our Religion, Liberty, and Persons, according to that great Trust which his Majesty is bound to by the Laws of the Land; and shall still continue to renew our *Petitions* in that Kind: Yet, to our great Grief, we see the Papistical and Malignant Counsel so prevalent with his Majesty, and his Person so engaged to their Power, that we have little Hope of better

Success



# 44 The Parliamentary History

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
November.

Success of our *Petitions* than we formerly had;  
and are thereby necessitated to stand upon our just  
Defence, and to seek this speedy and powerful  
Assistance of our Brethren of *Scotland*, according  
to that Act agreed upon in the Parliament of both  
Kingdoms, the common Duty of Christianity,  
and the particular Interests of their own King-  
dom: To which we hope God will give such a  
Blessing, that it may produce the Preservation of  
Religion; the Honour, Safety, and Peace of his  
Majesty, and all his Subjects; and a more strict  
Conjunction of the Counsels, Designs, and En-  
deavours of both Nations, for the Comfort and  
Relief of the Reformed Churches beyond the  
Seas.

JOHN BROWN, *Cler. Parl.*

Nov. 7.  
1642.

HEN. ELSYNGE, *Cler. Par. D. Com.*

In Answer to the foregoing Declaration of Parlia-  
ment, the King sent the following Message to the  
Lords of his Privy Council of *Scotland*, some time  
after: But we bring it in here for the Sake of Con-  
nection.

Right Trusty and Right Well-beloved Cousins and  
Counsellors, and Right Trusty and Well-beloved  
Counsellors, we greet you well,

The King's An-  
swer, addressed  
to the Privy-  
Council of Scot-  
land.

WE have lately seen a Paper, presented to us  
by the Earl of *Lindsay*, as a Declaration  
of the Lords and Commons assembled in the Par-  
liament of *England*, of the seventh of November,  
to our Subjects of our Kingdom of *Scotland*;  
which, after many high Taxes of us and our Go-  
vernment, very earnestly invites, and in a Man-  
ner challenges, Assistance from that our Native  
Kingdom, of Men and Arms for making a War  
against us; making a Claim to that Assistance, by  
virtue of the late Act of *Pacification*, to the which  
(out of our Desire to make a perpetual Union be-  
tween our two Kingdoms, for the Happiness of  
both, and by it the more firmly to establish our  
own

own Greatness and just Power) we chearfully consented. An. 12. Car. 1. 1642.

November.

As we are, at our Soul, afflicted that it hath been in the Power of any factious, ambitious, and malicious Persons, so far to possess the Hearts of many of our Subjects of *England*, as to raise this miserable Distemper and Distraction in this Kingdom, against all our real Actions and Endeavours to the contrary; so we are glad that this Rage and Fury hath so far transported them, that they apply themselves, in so gross a Manner, to our Subjects of *Scotland*; whose Experience of our Religion, Justice, and Love of our People, will not suffer them to believe those horrid Scandals laid upon us; and their Affection, Loyalty, and Jealousy of our Honour, will disdain to be made Instruments to oppress their Native Sovereign, by assisting an odious Rebellion.

We have, from Time to Time, acquainted our Subjects of that Kingdom with the Accidents and Circumstances which have disquieted this; how (after all the Acts of Justice, Grace, and Favour performed on our Part, which were, or could be, desired to make a People completely happy) we were driven, by the Force and Violence of rude and tumultuous Assemblies, from our City of *London*, and our two Houses of Parliament: How Attempts have been made to impose Laws upon our Subjects without our Consent, contrary to the Foundation and Constitution of this Kingdom: How our Forts, Goods, and Navy were seized and taken from us by Force, and employed against us: Our Revenue and ordinary Subsistence wrested from us: How we have been pursued with scandalous and reproachful Language; bold, false, and seditious Pasquils and Libels publickly allowed against us; and been told, *That we might, without Want of Modesty and Duty, be deposed.*

Now, after all this, before any Force was raised by us, an Army was raised, and a General appointed to lead that Army against us; with a Commission to kill, slay, and destroy all such who should



An. 13. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

' should be faithful to us. That when we had been,  
 ' by these Means, compelled, with the Assistance  
 ' of our good Subjects, to raise an Army for our  
 ' necessary Defence; we sent divers gracious *Mes-*  
 ' *sages*, earnestly desiring that the Calamities and  
 ' Miseries of a Civil War might be prevented by a  
 ' Treaty, and so we might know the Ground of  
 ' this Misunderstanding. How we were absolutely  
 ' refused to be treated with; and how at last the  
 ' Army (raised, as was pretended, for the Defence  
 ' of our Person) was brought into the Field against  
 ' us, gave us Battle; and (though it pleased God to  
 ' give us the Victory) destroyed many of our good  
 ' Subjects, with as imminent Danger to our own  
 ' Person and our Children, as the Skill and Malice of  
 ' desperate Rebels could contrive. Of all which,  
 ' and the other Indignities which have been offered  
 ' us, we doubt not the Duty and Affection of our  
 ' *Scots* Subjects will have so just a Resentment, that  
 ' they will express to the World the Sense they  
 ' have of our Sufferings. And our good Subjects  
 ' of *Scotland* are not, we hope, so great Strangers  
 ' to the Affairs of this Kingdom, to believe that  
 ' this Misfortune and Distraction is begot and brought  
 ' upon us by our two Houses of Parliament; tho',  
 ' in Truth, no unwarrantable Action against the  
 ' Law can be justified even by that Authority.  
 ' They well know how the Members of both  
 ' Houses have been driven thence, in so much that  
 ' of above five hundred Members of the House of  
 ' Commons, there are not now there above eighty,  
 ' and of above one hundred of the House of Peers  
 ' not above fifteen or sixteen. All which are so  
 ' awed by the Multitude of *Anabaptists*, *Brownists*,  
 ' and other Persons, desperate and decayed in their  
 ' Fortunes, in and about the City of *London*, that,  
 ' in Truth, their Consultations have not the Free-  
 ' dom and Privilege which belongs to Parliaments.  
 ' Concerning any Commissions granted by us to  
 ' *Papists* to raise Forces, we must refer our good  
 ' Subjects to a *Declaration*, lately set forth by us  
 ' upon the Occasion of that Scandal, which we  
 ' send



‘ send together with this; and for our own true and  
 ‘ zealous Affection to the Protestant Religion, (the  
 ‘ Advancement whereof our Soul desires) we can  
 ‘ give no other Instance, than our constant Practice,  
 ‘ on which Malice itself can lay no Blemish, and  
 ‘ those many *Protestations* we have made in the  
 ‘ Sight of Almighty God; to whom we know we  
 ‘ shall be dearly accountable, if we fail in the  
 ‘ Observation.

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.  
 November.

‘ For that scandalous Imputation of our Inten-  
 ‘ tion of bringing in foreign Forces; as the same  
 ‘ is raised without the least Colour or Shadow of  
 ‘ Reason, and solemnly disavowed by us in many of  
 ‘ our *Declarations*; so there cannot be a clearer Ar-  
 ‘ gument to our Subjects of *Scotland*, that we have  
 ‘ no such Thought, than that we have hitherto  
 ‘ forborne to require the Assistance of that our Na-  
 ‘ tive Kingdom; from whose Obedience, Duty,  
 ‘ and Affection we should confidently expect it, if  
 ‘ we thought our own Strength here too weak to  
 ‘ preserve us; and of whose Courage and Loyalty  
 ‘ we shall look to make use, before we shall think  
 ‘ of any foreign Aid to succour us. And we know  
 ‘ no reasonable or understanding Man can suppose  
 ‘ our good Subjects of *Scotland* are obliged, or ena-  
 ‘ bled by the late Act of Parliament in both King-  
 ‘ doms, to obey the Invitation which is made to  
 ‘ them by this pretended *Declaration*; when it is  
 ‘ so evidently provided for by that Act, *That as the*  
 ‘ *Kingdom of England shall not make War against*  
 ‘ *the Kingdom of Scotland, without Consent of the*  
 ‘ *Parliament of England; so the Kingdom of Scot-*  
 ‘ *land shall not make War against the Kingdom of*  
 ‘ *England, without the Consent of the Parliament of*  
 ‘ *Scotland;*’ and when they have always declared  
 ‘ themselves so careful of our Honour, Safety,  
 ‘ and just Rights, which now undergo so great Vio-  
 ‘ lation.

‘ This we have thought fit to say upon Occasi-  
 ‘ on of this late *Declaration*, and do commend it  
 ‘ to you the Lords of our Privy-Council of our  
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be communicated and

‘ pub-

An. 38. Car. 1.  
1642.

November.

‘ published to all our loving Subjects there : And if  
 ‘ the grave Counsel and Advice, which you derived  
 ‘ hither by your Act of the 22d of *April* last\*, had  
 ‘ been followed here, in a tender Care of our Royal  
 ‘ Person, and of our Princely Greatness and Au-  
 ‘ thority, then would not this Face of Confusion  
 ‘ have appeared, which now threatens this King-  
 ‘ dom : And therefore we require you to use your  
 ‘ utmost Endeavours to inform our Subjects of that  
 ‘ our Kingdom of the Truth of our Condition ;  
 ‘ and that you suffer not the Scandals and Imputa-  
 ‘ tions, laid on us by the Malice and Treason of  
 ‘ some Men, to make any Impression in the Minds  
 ‘ of our People, to the lessening or corrupting their  
 ‘ Affection and Loyalty to us ; but that you assure  
 ‘ them the Hardships we now undergo, and the  
 ‘ Arms we have been compelled to take up, are for  
 ‘ the Defence of our Person, and the Safety of our  
 ‘ Life ; for the Maintenance of the true Protestant  
 ‘ Religion ; for the Preservation of the Laws, Li-  
 ‘ berties, and Constitutions of this Kingdom ; and  
 ‘ for the just Privileges of Parliament ; and we  
 ‘ look no longer for the Blessing of Heaven, than  
 ‘ we endeavour the Defence and Advancement of  
 ‘ all these : And we doubt not a dutiful Concur-  
 ‘ rence in our Subjects of *Scotland*, in the Care of  
 ‘ our Honours and just Rights, will draw down a  
 ‘ Blessing upon that Nation too.’

*Nov. 9.* A Letter was read, directed to the Lord  
*Grey of Werk*, as Speaker, from the Lord *Falkland*,  
 with his Majesty’s *Reply*, inclosed, to the *Answer* of  
 both Houses to his Majesty’s *Message* of the 12th  
*Inst.* which was also read as follows :

‘ **T**HAT his *Message* of the 12th, though not  
 ‘ received by them till the 14th, was sent to  
 ‘ them, first, upon the same Day on which it was  
 ‘ dated ; and, meeting with Stops by the Way, was  
 ‘ again sent upon the 13th, and taken upon that  
 ‘ Day,

The King’s Re-  
 ply to the Parlia-  
 ment’s last An-  
 swer.

\* In our Tenth Volume, p. 504.



‘ Day, at Ten in the Morning, by the Earl of *Essex*; and, though not to him directed, was by him opened; so the Slowness of the Delivery is not so strange, as the Stop of that Letter said to be sent by Sir *Peter Killigrew*, which his Majesty hath not yet received; but concludes, from the Matter expressed to have been contained in that Letter, (to wit, to know his Pleasure, whether he intended the Forbearance of Hostility) and by the Command of such Forbearance, said to be sent to the Lord of *Essex*’s Army, that no such Forbearance was already concluded; and, consequently, neither had his Majesty Cause to suppose that he should take any of their Forces unprovided and secure, in an Expectation of a fair Treaty; neither could any hostile Act of his Majesty’s Forces have been a Course unsuitable to his Expressions; much less could an Endeavour to prepossess that Place, (for so he hop’d he might have done, which might have stopp’d the further March of these Forces towards him; which, for ought appeared to him, might as well have been intended to *Colebrook* as *Brentford*; and, by that, the further Effusion of Blood) deserve that Style.

‘ His Majesty further conceives, That the printing, so out of Time, such a *Declaration* as their *Reply* to his *Answer* to theirs of the 26th of *May*,\* but the Day before they *voted* the Delivery of their *Petition*; and the March of the Earl of *Essex*’s Forces to *Brentford*, so near to his Majesty, when the Committee at the same Time attended him with a *Petition* for a Treaty, (the Earl of *Essex* being before possess’d of all the other Avenues to his Army, by his Forces at *Windser*, *Acton*, and *Kingston*) was a more strange Introduction to Peace, than for his Majesty not to suffer himself to be coop’d up on all Sides, because a Treaty had been mentioned; which was so really

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

November.

VOL. XII.

D

‘ and

\* This *Reply*, which, on account of the Length of it, we omit, was not ordered to be printed till the 2d of *November*, tho’ passed by both Houses in *July*. It may be found both in *Rushworth* and *Husband*.



# 44 The Parliamentary History

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

November.

Success of our *Petitions* than we formerly had; and are thereby necessitated to stand upon our just Defence, and to seek this speedy and powerful Assistance of our Brethren of *Scotland*, according to that Act agreed upon in the Parliament of both Kingdoms, the common Duty of Christianity, and the particular Interests of their own Kingdom: To which we hope God will give such a Blessing, that it may produce the Preservation of Religion; the Honour, Safety, and Peace of his Majesty, and all his Subjects; and a more strict Conjunction of the Counsels, Designs, and Endeavours of both Nations, for the Comfort and Relief of the Reformed Churches beyond the Seas.

JOHN BROWN, *Cler. Parl.*

Nov. 7.  
1642.

HEN. ELSYNGE, *Cler. Par. D. Com.*

In Answer to the foregoing Declaration of Parliament, the King sent the following *Message* to the Lords of his Privy Council of *Scotland*, some time after: But we bring it in here for the Sake of Connection.

*Right Trusty and Right Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors, and Right Trusty and Well-beloved Counsellors, we greet you well,*

The King's Answer, addressed to the Privy-Council of Scotland.

WE have lately seen a Paper, presented to us by the Earl of *Lindsay*, as a Declaration of the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*, of the seventh of November, to our Subjects of our Kingdom of *Scotland*; which, after many high Taxes of us and our Government, very earnestly invites, and in a Manner challenges, Assistance from that our Native Kingdom, of Men and Arms for making a War against us; making a Claim to that Assistance, by virtue of the late Act of *Pacification*, to the which (out of our Desire to make a perpetual Union between our two Kingdoms, for the Happiness of both, and by it the more firmly to establish our own

own Greatness and just Power) we chearfully consented. An. 13. Car. 1. 1642.

November.

As we are, at our Soul, afflicted that it hath been in the Power of any factious, ambitious, and malicious Persons, so far to possess the Hearts of many of our Subjects of *England*, as to raise this miserable Distemper and Distraction in this Kingdom, against all our real Actions and Endeavours to the contrary; so we are glad that this Rage and Fury hath so far transported them, that they apply themselves, in so gross a Manner, to our Subjects of *Scotland*; whose Experience of our Religion, Justice, and Love of our People, will not suffer them to believe those horrid Scandals laid upon us; and their Affection, Loyalty, and Jealousy of our Honour, will disdain to be made Instruments to oppress their Native Sovereign, by assisting an odious Rebellion.

We have, from Time to Time, acquainted our Subjects of that Kingdom with the Accidents and Circumstances which have disquieted this; how (after all the Acts of Justice, Grace, and Favour performed on our Part, which were, or could be, desired to make a People completely happy) we were driven, by the Force and Violence of rude and tumultuous Assemblies, from our City of *London*, and our two Houses of Parliament: How Attempts have been made to impose Laws upon our Subjects without our Consent, contrary to the Foundation and Constitution of this Kingdom: How our Forts, Goods, and Navy were seized and taken from us by Force, and employed against us: Our Revenue and ordinary Subsistence wrested from us: How we have been pursued with scandalous and reproachful Language; bold, false, and seditious Pasquils and Libels publickly allowed against us; and been told, *That we might, without Want of Modesty and Duty, be deposed.*

Now, after all this, before any Force was raised by us, an Army was raised, and a General appointed to lead that Army against us; with a Commission to kill, slay, and destroy all such who should



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

' should be faithful to us. That when we had been,  
 ' by these Means, compelled, with the Assistance  
 ' of our good Subjects, to raise an Army for our  
 ' necessary Defence; we sent divers gracious *Mes-*  
 ' *sages*, earnestly desiring that the Calamities and  
 ' Miseries of a Civil War might be prevented by a  
 ' Treaty, and so we might know the Ground of  
 ' this Misunderstanding. How we were absolutely  
 ' refused to be treated with; and how at last the  
 ' Army (raised, as was pretended, for the Defence  
 ' of our Person) was brought into the Field against  
 ' us, gave us Battle; and (though it pleased God to  
 ' give us the Victory) destroyed many of our good  
 ' Subjects, with as imminent Danger to our own  
 ' Person and our Children, as the Skill and Malice of  
 ' desperate Rebels could contrive. Of all which,  
 ' and the other Indignities which have been offered  
 ' us, we doubt not the Duty and Affection of our  
 ' *Scots* Subjects will have so just a Resentment, that  
 ' they will express to the World the Sense they  
 ' have of our Sufferings. And our good Subjects  
 ' of *Scotland* are not, we hope, so great Strangers  
 ' to the Affairs of this Kingdom, to believe that  
 ' this Misfortune and Distraction is begot and brought  
 ' upon us by our two Houses of Parliament; tho',  
 ' in Truth, no unwarrantable Action against the  
 ' Law can be justified even by that Authority.  
 ' They well know how the Members of both  
 ' Houses have been driven thence, in so much that  
 ' of above five hundred Members of the House of  
 ' Commons, there are not now there above eighty,  
 ' and of above one hundred of the House of Peers  
 ' not above fifteen or sixteen. All which are so  
 ' awed by the Multitude of *Anabaptists*, *Brownists*,  
 ' and other Persons, desperate and decayed in their  
 ' Fortunes, in and about the City of *London*, that,  
 ' in Truth, their Consultations have not the Free-  
 ' dom and Privilege which belongs to Parliaments.  
 ' Concerning any Commissions granted by us to  
 ' *Papists* to raise Forces, we must refer our good  
 ' Subjects to a *Declaration*, lately set forth by us  
 ' upon the Occasion of that Scandal, which we  
 ' send



‘ send together with this; and for our own true and  
 ‘ zealous Affection to the Protestant Religion, (the  
 ‘ Advancement whereof our Soul desires) we can  
 ‘ give no other Instance, than our constant Practice,  
 ‘ on which Malice itself can lay no Blemish, and  
 ‘ those many *Protestations* we have made in the  
 ‘ Sight of Almighty God; to whom we know we  
 ‘ shall be dearly accountable, if we fail in the  
 ‘ Observation.

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.  
 November.

‘ For that scandalous Imputation of our Inten-  
 ‘ tion of bringing in foreign Forces; as the same  
 ‘ is raised without the least Colour or Shadow of  
 ‘ Reason, and solemnly disavowed by us in many of  
 ‘ our *Declarations*; so there cannot be a clearer Ar-  
 ‘ gument to our Subjects of *Scotland*, that we have  
 ‘ no such Thought, than that we have hitherto  
 ‘ forborne to require the Assistance of that our Na-  
 ‘ tive Kingdom; from whose Obedience, Duty,  
 ‘ and Affection we should confidently expect it, if  
 ‘ we thought our own Strength here too weak to  
 ‘ preserve us; and of whose Courage and Loyalty  
 ‘ we shall look to make use, before we shall think  
 ‘ of any foreign Aid to succour us. And we know  
 ‘ no reasonable or understanding Man can suppose  
 ‘ our good Subjects of *Scotland* are obliged, or ena-  
 ‘ bled by the late Act of Parliament in both King-  
 ‘ doms, to obey the Invitation which is made to  
 ‘ them by this pretended *Declaration*; when it is  
 ‘ so evidently provided for by that Act, *That as the*  
 ‘ *Kingdom of England shall not make War against*  
 ‘ *the Kingdom of Scotland, without Consent of the*  
 ‘ *Parliament of England; so the Kingdom of Scot-*  
 ‘ *land shall not make War against the Kingdom of*  
 ‘ *England, without the Consent of the Parliament of*  
 ‘ *Scotland;*’ and when they have always declared  
 ‘ themselves so careful of our Honour, Safety,  
 ‘ and just Rights, which now undergo so great Vio-  
 ‘ lation.

‘ This we have thought fit to say upon Occasi-  
 ‘ on of this late *Declaration*, and do commend it  
 ‘ to you the Lords of our Privy-Council of our  
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be communicated and  
 ‘ pub-

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

' should be faithful to us. That when we had been,  
 ' by these Means, compelled, with the Assistance  
 ' of our good Subjects, to raise an Army for our  
 ' necessary Defence; we sent divers gracious *Mes-*  
 ' *sages*, earnestly desiring that the Calamities and  
 ' Miseries of a Civil War might be prevented by a  
 ' Treaty, and so we might know the Ground of  
 ' this Misunderstanding. How we were absolutely  
 ' refused to be treated with; and how at last the  
 ' Army (raised, as was pretended, for the Defence  
 ' of our Person) was brought into the Field against  
 ' us, gave us Battle; and (though it pleased God to  
 ' give us the Victory) destroyed many of our good  
 ' Subjects, with as imminent Danger to our own  
 ' Person and our Children, as the Skill and Malice of  
 ' desperate Rebels could contrive. Of all which,  
 ' and the other Indignities which have been offered  
 ' us, we doubt not the Duty and Affection of our  
 ' *Scots* Subjects will have so just a Resentment, that  
 ' they will express to the World the Sense they  
 ' have of our Sufferings. And our good Subjects  
 ' of *Scotland* are not, we hope, so great Strangers  
 ' to the Affairs of this Kingdom, to believe that  
 ' this Misfortune and Distraction is begot and brought  
 ' upon us by our two Houses of Parliament; tho',  
 ' in Truth, no unwarrantable Action against the  
 ' Law can be justified even by that Authority.  
 ' They well know how the Members of both  
 ' Houses have been driven thence, in so much that  
 ' of above five hundred Members of the House of  
 ' Commons, there are not now there above eighty,  
 ' and of above one hundred of the House of Peers  
 ' not above fifteen or sixteen. All which are so  
 ' awed by the Multitude of *Anabaptists*, *Brownists*,  
 ' and other Persons, desperate and decayed in their  
 ' Fortunes, in and about the City of *London*, that,  
 ' in Truth, their Consultations have not the Free-  
 ' dom and Privilege which belongs to Parliaments.  
 ' Concerning any Commissions granted by us to  
 ' *Papists* to raise Forces, we must refer our good  
 ' Subjects to a *Declaration*, lately set forth by us  
 ' upon the Occasion of that Scandal, which we  
 ' send



‘ send together with this; and for our own true and  
 ‘ zealous Affection to the Protestant Religion, (the  
 ‘ Advancement whereof our Soul desires) we can  
 ‘ give no other Instance, than our constant Practice,  
 ‘ on which Malice itself can lay no Blemish, and  
 ‘ those many *Protestations* we have made in the  
 ‘ Sight of Almighty God; to whom we know we  
 ‘ shall be dearly accountable, if we fail in the  
 ‘ Observation.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

November.

‘ For that scandalous Imputation of our Inten-  
 ‘ tion of bringing in foreign Forces; as the same  
 ‘ is raised without the least Colour or Shadow of  
 ‘ Reason, and solemnly disavowed by us in many of  
 ‘ our *Declarations*; so there cannot be a clearer Ar-  
 ‘ gument to our Subjects of *Scotland*, that we have  
 ‘ no such Thought, than that we have hitherto  
 ‘ forborne to require the Assistance of that our Na-  
 ‘ tive Kingdom; from whose Obedience, Duty,  
 ‘ and Affection we should confidently expect it, if  
 ‘ we thought our own Strength here too weak to  
 ‘ preserve us; and of whose Courage and Loyalty  
 ‘ we shall look to make use, before we shall think  
 ‘ of any foreign Aid to succour us. And we know  
 ‘ no reasonable or understanding Man can suppose  
 ‘ our good Subjects of *Scotland* are obliged, or ena-  
 ‘ bled by the late Act of Parliament in both King-  
 ‘ doms, to obey the Invitation which is made to  
 ‘ them by this pretended *Declaration*; when it is  
 ‘ so evidently provided for by that Act, *That as the*  
 ‘ *Kingdom of England shall not make War against*  
 ‘ *the Kingdom of Scotland, without Consent of the*  
 ‘ *Parliament of England; so the Kingdom of Scot-*  
 ‘ *land shall not make War against the Kingdom of*  
 ‘ *England, without the Consent of the Parliament of*  
 ‘ *Scotland;*’ and when they have always declared  
 ‘ themselves so careful of our Honour, Safety,  
 ‘ and just Rights, which now undergo so great Vio-  
 ‘ lation.

‘ This we have thought fit to say upon Occasi-  
 ‘ on of this late *Declaration*, and do commend it  
 ‘ to you the Lords of our Privy-Council of our  
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be communicated and  
 ‘ pub-



An. 28. Car. I.  
1642.

November.

published to all our loving Subjects there : And if the grave Counsel and Advice, which you derived hither by your Act of the 22d of *April* last\*, had been followed here, in a tender Care of our Royal Person, and of our Princely Greatness and Authority, then would not this Face of Confusion have appeared, which now threatens this Kingdom : And therefore we require you to use your utmost Endeavours to inform our Subjects of that our Kingdom of the Truth of our Condition ; and that you suffer not the Scandals and Imputations, laid on us by the Malice and Treason of some Men, to make any Impression in the Minds of our People, to the lessening or corrupting their Affection and Loyalty to us ; but that you assure them the Hardships we now undergo, and the Arms we have been compelled to take up, are for the Defence of our Person, and the Safety of our Life ; for the Maintenance of the true Protestant Religion ; for the Preservation of the Laws, Liberties, and Constitutions of this Kingdom ; and for the just Privileges of Parliament ; and we look no longer for the Blessing of Heaven, than we endeavour the Defence and Advancement of all these : And we doubt not a dutiful Concurrence in our Subjects of *Scotland*, in the Care of our Honours and just Rights, will draw down a Blessing upon that Nation too.

*Nov. 9.* A Letter was read, directed to the Lord *Grey of Werk*, as Speaker, from the Lord *Falkland*, with his Majesty's *Reply*, inclosed, to the *Answer* of both Houses to his Majesty's *Message* of the 12th Inst. which was also read as follows :

The King's Reply to the Parliament's last Answer.

THAT his *Message* of the 12th, though not received by them till the 14th, was sent to them, first, upon the same Day on which it was dated ; and, meeting with Stops by the Way, was again sent upon the 13th, and taken upon that Day,

\* In our Tenth Volume, p. 504.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

November.

‘ Day, at Ten in the Morning, by the Earl of *Essex*; and, though not to him directed, was by him opened; so the Slowness of the Delivery is not so strange, as the Stop of that Letter said to be sent by Sir *Peter Killigrew*, which his Majesty hath not yet received; but concludes, from the Matter expressed to have been contained in that Letter, (to wit, to know his Pleasure, whether he intended the Forbearance of Hostility) and by the Command of such Forbearance, said to be sent to the Lord of *Essex*’s Army, that no such Forbearance was already concluded; and, consequently, neither had his Majesty Cause to suppose that he should take any of their Forces unprovided and secure, in an Expectation of a fair Treaty; neither could any hostile Act of his Majesty’s Forces have been a Course unsuitable to his Expressions; much less could an Endeavour to prepossess that Place, (for so he hop’d he might have done, which might have stopp’d the further March of these Forces towards him; which, for ought appeared to him, might as well have been intended to *Colebrook* as *Brentford*; and, by that, the further Effusion of Blood) deserve that Style.

‘ His Majesty further conceives, That the printing, so out of Time, such a *Declaration* as their *Reply* to his *Answer* to theirs of the 26th of *May*,\* but the Day before they *voted* the Delivery of their *Petition*; and the March of the Earl of *Essex*’s Forces to *Brentford*, so near to his Majesty, when the Committee at the same Time attended him with a *Petition* for a Treaty, (the Earl of *Essex* being before possess’d of all the other Avenues to his Army, by his Forces at *Windsor*, *Acton*, and *Kingston*) was a more strange Introduction to Peace, than for his Majesty not to suffer himself to be coop’d up on all Sides, because a Treaty had been mentioned; which was so really

VOL. XII.

D

‘ and

\* This *Reply*, which, on account of the Length of it, we omit, was not ordered to be printed till the 2d of *November*, tho’ passed by both Houses in *July*. It may be found both in *Rushworth* and *Husband*.



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘ and so much desired by his Majesty, that this Proceeding seems to him, purposely, by some intended to divert, which it could not do, that his Inclination.

‘ That his Majesty had no Intention to master the City by so advancing, besides his Profession, which how meanly soever they seem to value it, he conceives a sufficient Argument, especially being only opposed by Suspicions and Surmises, may appear by his not pursuing his Victory at *Brentford*; but giving Order to his Army to march away to *Kingston* as soon as he heard that Place was quitted, before any Notice or further Appearance of Forces from *London*; nor could he find a better Way to satisfy them before-hand, that he had no such Intention, but that his Desire of Peace and of Propositions that might conduce to it still continued, than by that *Message* of the twelfth; for which Care of his he was requited by such a Reception of his *Message* and Messenger, as was contrary at once both to Duty, Civility, and the very Customs and the Law of War and Nations; and such as theirs, though after this Provocation, have not found from him. †

‘ His Majesty wonders that his Soldiers should be charged with thirsting after Blood, who took above 500 Prisoners in the very Heat of the Fight, his Majesty having since dismissed all the common Soldiers, and entertained such as were willing to serve him, and required only from the rest an Oath not to serve against him. \* And his Majesty supposes such most apt and likely to maintain their Power by Blood and Rapine, who have got it only by Oppression and Injustice; that his is vested in him by the Law, and by that only (if the destructive

† Mr. *White*, the King's Messenger, was very roughly used by the Earl of *Essex*, and the Parliament committed him to the *Gatehouse*, not without the Motion of some Men. That he might be executed as a Spy. *Clarendon*, 8vo. Vol. III. p. 76.

\* Two of the Parliament's most eminent Chaplains, Dr. *Downing*, and Mr. *Marshall*, publickly avowed, That those Men were not obliged by that Oath. *Ibid*, p. 81.



‘fructiv<sup>e</sup> Counsels of others would not hinder such  
 ‘a Peace, in which that might once again be the  
 ‘universal Rule, and in which Religion and Justice  
 ‘can only flourish) he desires to maintain it. And  
 ‘if Peace were equally desired by them, as it is by  
 ‘his Majesty, he conceives it would have been pro-  
 ‘per to have sent him such a Paper, as should have  
 ‘contained just Propositions of Peace, and not an  
 ‘unjust Accusation of his Counsels, Proceedings, and  
 ‘Person. And his Majesty intends to march to such a  
 ‘Distance from his City of *London*, as may take away  
 ‘all Pretence of Apprehension from his Army, that  
 ‘might hinder them, in all Security, from yet prepa-  
 ‘ring them to present to him; and will there be rea-  
 ‘dy either to receive them, or end the Pressures and  
 ‘Miseries which his Subjects, to his great Grief,  
 ‘suffer through this War, by a present Battle.’

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.

November.

When this was read, the Earl of *Northumberland* informed the House, That he had received a Packet of Letters, taken about Mr. *Murray*, who brought this *Reply* from the King; and desired to be directed what to do with them. Hereupon the Lords opened and perused the Papers, and found a Copy of the *Reply*, with a *Declaration* of his Majesty, and a Warrant sent to the King's Printer to print them. Upon which a Conference was resolved on with the other House, to desire them to join in appointing a Committee, to consider what *Answer* was fit to be given to this *Reply* of the King's; it being a Business of so great Consequence, that either a great deal of Misery or a great deal of Happiness would follow upon the Resolution to be taken thereupon.

A Conference  
 thereupon.

November 21. Mr. *Shute*, at the Head of several Citizens of *London*, appeared this Day again before the Commons. What he had to offer stands thus upon their *Journals*, ‘That he came to speak to them from the most Active and the most Religious Part of the City, to acquaint the House they understood that an Accommodation was on Foot; which grieved their Hearts, considering what follow-

Farther Propo-  
 sals from the Ci-  
 tizens of *London*.

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

ed on the last. But if the Accommodation went not on, then to consider how Monies might be raised, in such sort as that the whole Charge might not lye upon the Good and Godly Party; but that the Malignant Party might be forced to bear their Share, fully, according to their Abilities.

‘ Another Thing which troubled them, he said, was an Imputation cast upon the Godly Party of the City, by the Malignant Party, as if they desired an Independent Government should be set up in the Church, which they desired might be wiped off.’

After returning Thanks to the Citizens for their Propositions and the Affection expressed in them, the King’s last *Message* was read; and the Question being put, Whether the House would, forthwith, resolve itself into a Committee to take it into Consideration? it passed in the Affirmative, only by 75 against 65; when, after some Debate on the *Message*, the Question being again put, Whether the House should be resolved into a Committee Tomorrow Morning to resume this Debate? The House divided, when the Numbers were 67 for the Question and 66 against it: Two small Majorities to carry such important Questions, upon which, as the Lords had before observed, depended the Good or the Misery of the Kingdom.

*November 22.* This *Answer* took up a great deal of Time in perfecting; for tho’ a Committee of both Houses went immediately upon it, yet, this Day, we find Mr. *Murray*, the King’s Messenger, was discharged from Attendance, and sent back; because, it is said, it was uncertain how long it might be ere the *Answer* would be ready; and the Speaker was ordered to write to the Lord *Falkland* to acquaint the King with the Reason for this Delay.

The same Day the Commons being informed, That divers Citizens were at the Door, they were called in, and Mr. *Shute*, once more, told them, in the Name of the rest, That one Thing, which exceedingly troubled them, was, the Point of Accommodation



modation of Peace, more to be feared than their Power.—If the Accommodation proceeded not, Monies then to be raised.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

They would propound three Ways:

1. Concerning Plate in the Halls of *London*.
2. Subscriptions in the several Wards under-written, not yet brought in.
3. Weekly Subscriptions to be advanced.

The Means for saving of Monies.

1. To cut off superfluous Charges by unnecessary Officers in the Army.
2. That there may be due Musters.
3. Indifferent honest Men to be chosen in every Ward, to raise and advance the Subscriptions.—

Foreign Merchants to be brought in, to give their Assistance to the Public.—Then they withdrew.

And being again call'd in, Mr. Speaker, by Command of the House, returned them Thanks, as before.

*November 23.* A Report was made to the Lords of a Conference held Yesterday; where Mr. *Pymme* said, he was appointed by the House of Commons to acquaint their Lordships with some *Votes* pass'd by that House, in *Answer* to the King's *Reply*, to which they desired the Lords Concurrence. These were divided into two Parts:

1. 'That, in the *Answer* to his Majesty's *Message*, the Houses should desire the King to return to his Parliament; to the end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties may be secured by the Advice of Parliament; that the Process and Justice of Parliament, being the supream Court of Judicature, might have its free Course, and be executed on Delinquents; and that they might not be protected and kept from Justice by Force. In particular, that the Lord *Digby* and Mr. *Henry Wilmot*, be, presently, delivered over to the Justice of Parliament. That the Commons remember what Misfortune lately befell the two Regiments, at *Brentford*, upon the last Treaty; therefore they now think fit to declare, That both Armies shall be left to take all Advantage they can, on both Sides, in the mean Time.



## 54 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

November.

2. Concerning the Challenge; the House of Commons say, They think it strange that the King of *England* should send a Challenge and Invitation to a Battle with his own Subjects, seeing, heretofore, his Majesty seemed to decline the Effusion of Blood, and professed using all Means to prevent the same: Therefore the House of Commons resolve to be in Readiness; but if his Majesty will withdraw himself from his Cavaliers and the Army, he shall be received; if not, they will not decline, if he has a Mind to give a Battle, the Time and Place being first appointed.

‘These are the Heads the House of Commons have resolved on; which, if their Lordships should concur with, they desired that Committees of both Houses might be appointed to put them into a Form fit to be sent to his Majesty.’

A Petition drawn  
up by the Lords,  
in Answer to the  
King's last Reply.

This Report being made, the Lords *ordered*, That the Consideration of this Matter should be put to a Committee of their whole House then present; and immediately the House was adjourned, during Pleasure, the Lords going into the Prince's Lodgings to debate it. And, in the Afternoon of this Day, the Earl of *Holland*, one of the Committee appointed, in the Morning, to consider of the foregoing *Votes*, delivered in a Draught of a *Petition*, to be presented to the King, in which they thought fit to leave out the whole, relating to the Challenge, and only to send the following :

May it please your Majesty,

*IT* is humbly desired by both Houses of Parliament, That your Majesty would be pleased to return to your Parliament with your Royal, not your Martial, Attendants; to the end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties, may be settled and secured by their Advice; finding, by a late and sad Accident, that your Majesty is environed by some such Counsels, as do rather persuade a desperate Division, than a Joining and a good Agreement with your Parliament and People; and we shall be ready to give your Majesty Assurances of such

*such Security, as may be for your Honour and the* An. 18. Car. I.  
*Safety of your Royal Person.* 1642.

*Or else we shall, in convenient Time, consider of*  
*fit Propositions to be sent to your Majesty, such as*  
*may be for the Preservation of God's true Religion,*  
*your Majesty's Honour, Safety, and Prosperity, and*  
*to the Peace and Happiness of this and your other*  
*Kingdoms.* November.

The Lords, on the Question, agreed to this *Petition*, and ordered it to be sent down to be communicated to the Commons at another Conference.

Next Day a Report of this second Conference which, after  
was made in the House of Lords, That the Com some Alterations  
mons said, They studied nothing more than the by the Commons,  
good Correspondency between the two Houses, is sent to the  
and they desired a Continuance of it; though they King.  
differed somewhat in Opinion, about the Conference last Night, on the last *Petition* intended to be sent to his Majesty. That they agreed to the first; but had *resolved*, That the latter Part, beginning with the Words, *Or else, &c.* should be left out. To this the Lords consented; and also to another *Vote* of that House, to send to the Lord-General, the Earl of *Essex*, to desire him to go on, notwithstanding, with all Advantages, in prosecuting the War. Accordingly, the former Part of the *Petition* was sent in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, to be by him presented to the King.

The same Day we meet with, in the *Commons Journals*, a *Vote* and *Division* of that House, which shews the great Jealousy they had of any Intelligence being carried to the King: For the Question being propounded, Whether Mr. *Jessy*, the King's Servant, should have Mr. Speaker's Warrant to go to the King, to carry him Stockings, and other Necessaries; it passed in the Affirmative by 26 against 18, but this on Condition of Mr. *Wheeler's* undertaking, that Mr. *Jessy* should carry nothing else. The Tellers upon this Occasion were Sir  
Ed.



## 56 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 18. Car. I. *Edward Ascougb*, and *Mr. Trenchard*, for the Yeas ;  
 1642. *Mr. Marten* and *Mr. Long*, for the Noes.

November.

A Committee appointed to desire a farther Supply from the Citizens of London.

*November 25.* An Order had been made, the Day before, for sending to the Lord Mayor to call a Common Hall, and this Day a Committee of five Lords, with a proportionable Number of Commoners were appointed to go thither. At this Meeting the Earl of *Manchester*,† one of the Committee, and *Mr. Pymme* another, were the Mouths of the rest ; whose Speeches best explain the Errand they were sent upon. \* And first the Earl:

*My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,*

The Earl of *Manchester's* Speech to them, proposing an Assessment for that Purpose.

I Am commanded to come hither upon an Errand, that I know, in the general, is never pleasing ; which is, to express Wants and Necessities ; but I know very well to whom I speak, it is to the Worthy, the Generous, and the Loyal Citizens of *London* ; who have exceeded all Story, in their Care for the Life and Preservation both of the Parliament and the whole Kingdom ; therefore it would imply a Distrust of your present Care to make a Supply, if I should use any Arguments to you : I shall only say this, That if there be not an Enlargement of yourselves in some Measure at the present, I shall be very unwilling to express the Condition that I fear our Army will be reduced to : This is all that I shall say, that if there be a present Supply, I do not doubt but the Army will move with that Effect, as it will prevent all those barbarous and savage Plunderings of the Forces that are now under the Command of those Officers of the King.

I confess the Burthen hath lain very heavy upon the City of *London* only ; but you shall have the Grace and the Honour of the Preservation both of

† This Lord has been formerly spoken of under the Title of *Lord Kimbolton* ; but, about this Time, succeeded to the Earldom of *Manchester* by the Death of his Father.

\* *London*, printed for *Peter Cole*, near the *Royal Exchange*, 1642.



of Religion and the Laws and Liberties of this An. 18. Car. I.  
Kingdom. 1642.

November.

‘ This Gentleman, that is by me, will let you know that it is already in Proposition, (and I do not doubt but it will speedily have the Concurrence of the Lords with it) to take that Care, that the future Burthen shall not lie upon those here in the City of *London*, that have been careful to make Supplies, even to the exhausting of themselves; but that it shall go generally to all those that have shrowded themselves under a Kind of Neutrality here in *London*; and that it shall go generally throughout all the Counties of *England*; that so the common Calamities shall be prevented, or supported by the common Burden laid upon the whole Kingdom.’

Then Mr. *Pymme* spoke to this Effect:

*My Lord Mayor and Gentlemen,*

‘ **W**E come not to tell your Lordship and these worthy Citizens only our Wants And Mr Pymme's in Support thereof. and Dangers, but we come to speak the Thanks of the Parliament to you, for that which you have already done; that you have shewed so much Affection to the Public, and that it hath produced so good Effects throughout the whole Kingdom, as that now you have an Army raised, most out of this City, able to defend (with God's Blessing) the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom, if it may be upheld: And we come not only to give you Thanks for that which you have done, but to stir you up to join with us in giving Thanks to God that hath given such a Blessing to our Endeavours, that when, by Letters sent into all Parts almost, they did presume before-hand to triumph in the Ruin and Plundering of this City, God prevented it, and hath kept you safe; kept your Houses, your Walls, your Suburbs safe from that that was intended against you; and truly as we have fought for this Blessing, by Fasting and by Prayer, so it is fit

An. 13. Car. 1.  
1642.

November.

I. fit that we should testify our Thanksgiving for it, and this is a necessary Part of our Errand which we are sent about: And that we may be serviceable to God's Providence still, as he hath stirred up your Hearts to do so much already, so that he would stir you up still to continue to do that which is fit to be done for the future; and that you will do it in such a Way as may be most pleasing to yourselves.

' We come not hither that, by any Consent here in public, you should bind yourselves in particular; but we come to let you know the Dangers of the Kingdom, the Sense the Parliament hath of it, and of the City especially, that you may not lose that which hath been already done; but that you may go on still chearfully to do the full Work. And we come to tell you, that the Parliament doth intend the Burden shall not lie upon you that are well affected and come in voluntarily; but that they have thought upon a Way, and have begun it already, and I hope, within two or three Days at the most, it shall be published to you, that all that are indisposed shall be forced to do that, which, out of Readiness and Chearfulness to the Public Good, they will not do of themselves: Neither limit we it to the City and Suburbs; but we are in a Course to draw in all the Counties of the Kingdom, that as the Burden is universal, so the Aid may be universal; for this is the Thoughts of the Parliament.

' If it please God to bless your Forces that are already raised and continued, we hope you shall not only see Peace again in the Kingdom, and Security for your Religion, but see that the Burden shall lie upon those who have been the Engines and Actors of the Mischiefs and Troubles that are come upon us, that they shall recompence the Charges you have been at already.

This is the Intention of the Parliament, only for the present do somewhat; every Man, as God shall enable him, do somewhat that may meet the present



present Necessities; and prevent the Dangers that require a present Subſiſtance, and present Supply of the Army; without which what is it will follow, but the Danger of the City, the Ruin of the Countries about, the Stopping up of the River which is almost taken from you, and the Loss of the Sea Coasts? You cannot have better Hearts than you have; God hath enabled many of you with Purſes, I hope it will be so readily disposed that we shall have a full Joy in the Recompence of it, and the Retribution; which we shall all pray God to bring to pass.

An. 13. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

The Result of this was, That the Citizens desired a Committee of both Houses might be sent to them, with a Power to call some Citizens and others to their Assistance, and then they hoped this Request of Parliament would prove successful.

The Want of Money to carry on the War being now so very urgent, an *Ordinance* was sent up this Day from the Commons, For *Assessing* Non-Contributors upon the *Propositions* for lending Money and raising of Horse and Arms: This being the first Instance of any *Assessment* laid upon the Subject without the Royal Assent, is too remarkable to be pass'd over.

‘ **W** Hereas the King, seduced by wicked Counsel, hath raised an Army, and levied War against the Parliament, and great Numbers of Forces are daily raised under the Command of Papists, and other ill-affected Persons, by Commission from his Majesty: And whereas divers Delinquents are protected from public Justice by his Majesty’s Army; and sundry Outrages and Rapines are daily committed by the Soldiers of the said Army, who have no respect to the Laws of God or the Land, but burn and plunder the Houses, and seize and destroy the Persons of divers of his Majesty’s good Subjects: And whereas, for the Maintenance of the said Army, divers Assessments are made upon several Counties, and his

An Ordinance  
passed accordingly,  
for Assessing  
Non-Contribu-  
tors to the Par-  
liament’s Army.

Ma-



## 60 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘ Majesty’s Subjects are compelled by the Soldiers  
‘ to pay the same; which said Army, if it should  
‘ continue, would soon ruin and waste the whole  
‘ Kingdom, and overthrow Religion, Law, and  
‘ Liberty: For suppressing of which said Army  
‘ and ill-affected Persons, there is no probable Way,  
‘ under God, but by the Army raised by Authority  
‘ of Parliament; which said Army so raised cannot  
‘ be maintained without great Sums of Money; yet  
‘ for raising such Sums, by reason of his Majesty’s  
‘ withdrawing himself from the Advice of the Par-  
‘ liament, there can be no Act of Parliament pas-  
‘ sed with his Majesty’s Assent, albeit there is great  
‘ Justice that the said Money should be raised; the  
‘ Lords and Commons in Parliament having taken  
‘ the same into their serious Considerations, and  
‘ knowing that the said Army, so raised by them,  
‘ hath been hitherto, for the most, maintained by  
‘ the voluntary Contributions of divers well-affected  
‘ Persons, who have freely contributed according  
‘ to their Abilities:

‘ But considering there are divers others within  
‘ the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Sub-  
‘ urbs of the same, and also within the Borough of  
‘ *Southwark*, that have not contributed at all towards  
‘ the Maintenance of the said Army; or if they  
‘ have, yet not answerable to their Estates, who,  
‘ notwithstanding, receive Benefit and Protection  
‘ by the said Army, as well as others; and there-  
‘ fore it is most just that they should, as well as o-  
‘ thers, be charged to contribute to the Mainte-  
‘ nance thereof:

‘ Be it therefore *ordained* by the Lords and Com-  
‘ mons in Parliament assembled, and by Authority  
‘ thereof, That *Isaac Pennington*, Lord Mayor of  
‘ the City of *London*, Sir *John Woolaston*, Knight and  
‘ Alderman, Alderman *Towes*, Alderman *War-  
ner*, Alderman *Andrews*, Alderman *Chambers*,  
‘ Alderman *Fowke*, Sir *Thomas Soame*, Knight and  
‘ Alderman; *Samuel Vassal*, *John Ven*, *Morris  
Thompson*, and *Richard Warring*, Citizens, or any  
‘ four

four of them, shall hereby have Power and Authority to nominate and appoint, in every Ward within the City of *London*, six such Persons as they, or any four of them, shall think fit; which said six so nominated, or any four of them, shall hereby have Power to enquire of any that shall remain, or be within the said several Wards, that have not contributed upon the *Propositions* of both Houses of Parliament, concerning the raising of Money, Plate, Horse, Horsemen, and Arms, for Defence of the King and both Houses of Parliament, and also of such as are able Men, that have contributed, yet not according to their Estates and Abilities.

An. 18 Car. 1.  
1642.  
November.

And the said six Persons so nominated, or any four of them, within their several and respective Wards and Limits, shall have Power to assess such Person and Persons, as are of Ability and have not contributed, and also such as have contributed, yet not according to their Ability, to pay such Sum or Sums of Money, according to their Estates, as the said Assessors, or any four of them, shall think fit and reasonable, so as the same exceed not the twentieth Part of their Estates, and to nominate and appoint fit Persons for the Collection thereof.

And if any Person so assessed shall refuse to pay the Money assessed upon him, it shall be lawful to and for the said Assessors and Collectors, or any of them, to levy the said Sum so assessed by Way of Distress and Sale of the Goods of the Person so assessed, and refusing.

And if any Person so distrained shall make Resistance, it shall be lawful to and for the respective Assessors and Collectors, or any of them, to call to their Assistance any of the Trained Bands of the said City of *London*, or any other his Majesty's Subjects, who are hereby required to be aiding and assisting to the said Assessors and Collectors in the Premises.

And it is hereby further ordained, That the respective Burgeses of *Westminster* and *Southwark*,

to-



## 62 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘ together with the several Committees appointed  
‘ for the Subscriptions of Money, Plate, Horse,  
‘ Horse-Men, and Arms within the said City and  
‘ Borough, shall respectively have Power hereby to  
‘ nominate Assessors for the same City and Borough,  
‘ in such Manner as the Lord Mayor, &c. hath for  
‘ the City of *London*; and the said Assessors, or  
‘ any four of them, to name Collectors as afore-  
‘ said; which said Assessors and Collectors shall  
‘ have the same Power respectively, within their re-  
‘ spective Limits, as those to be nominated within  
‘ the said City of *London* have hereby limited to  
‘ them.

‘ And for the Suburbs of *London* and *Westminster*,  
‘ the respective Knights of the Shire where the said  
‘ Suburbs are, shall have hereby the like Power to  
‘ name Assessors; and they so named, or any four  
‘ of them, and the Collectors by them to be nomi-  
‘ nated, or any of them within their respective Li-  
‘ mits, shall have the like Power respectively, as  
‘ the Assessors and Collectors for *London* have by  
‘ virtue of this *Ordinance*.

‘ And be it *ordained*, That the Sums so assessed  
‘ and levied as aforesaid, shall be paid in at *Guild-  
‘ hall, London*, to the Hands of Sir *John Woolaston*,  
‘ Knight, *John Warner*, *John Towes*, and *Thomas  
‘ Andrews*, Aldermen, or any two of them; and  
‘ the Assessors and Collectors, to be nominated by  
‘ virtue hereof, shall Weekly report to the Commit-  
‘ tee of the House of Commons for the *Propositions*  
‘ aforesaid, what Sums of Money have been assessed  
‘ and what Sums have been levied Weekly, accord-  
‘ ing to the Purport hereof; and the said Monies so  
‘ levied and paid in, shall be issued forth in such  
‘ Sort, as the other Monies raised upon the *Propo-  
‘ sitions* aforesaid, and not otherwise.’

Which being re-  
inforced by seve-  
ral others;

In consequence of this *Ordinance* the Parliament  
proceeded to raise Money by an *Assessment*: But  
meeting with some Difficulties in the Collection  
thereof, they made another *Ordinance* to explain  
the



the First; whereby it was *ordained*, That if the Collectors could not find sufficient Assets to distrain upon the Refusers, they had Power to enquire what Rents, Tithes or Debts were owing to them, and to demand the same of their respective Tenants or Debtors. This was followed by a Third *Ordinance*, for the speedy Execution of the First. Soon after came out another, empowering the Collectors to break open any Chests, Trunks, Boxes, Doors, or other Things, whereby to take a Distress for the Sums assessed. But all these not answering the urgent Necessities of the Parliament, yet another *Ordinance* was made; whereby, in such Cases where the Collectors should certify that a sufficient Distress was to be had, but they could not come at it without Opposition, two Colonels and three Captains, named in the said *Ordinance*, and such Captains, Lieutenants, Officers, and Soldiers as they should appoint, were authorized to search for the Refusers of such Assessment; and bring them before the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations, who had Power given them, by this last *Ordinance*, to imprison the Refusers in such Places of the Kingdom, and for so long Time, as they should appoint and order; and that the Families of all such Persons, so imprisoned, should no longer remain within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, the Suburbs, and the Counties adjacent.—But at the same Time that the Parliament took such effectual Care to raise this Assessment upon the Subjects at large, they made an *Ordinance*, That the severall and respective Assessors shall not assess any of the Members of either of the Houses of Parliament, or the Assistants of the House of Peers; any Thing in the preceeding *Ordinances*, or any of them, to the contrary notwithstanding: But that the Members of either House shall be assessed by that House whereof they are Members, and the Assistants of the Peers by the House of Peers.\* This last

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

\* The above-mentioned *Ordinances* may be seen at Length in *Husband's Collections* from p. 766, to p. 777.

## 64 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1. 1. last *Ordinance*, however, for impowering the Members to tax themselves, was carried in the House of Commons by a Majority of only 43 Voices against 40.

1642.  
November.

On occasion of all these *Ordinances* the King published the following *Declaration*, addressed to all his loving Subjects:

The King publishes an Answer to them.

‘ I T would not be believed (at least great Pains have been taken that it might not) that the pretended *Ordinance* of the *Militia*, (the first Attempt that ever was to make a Law by *Ordinance* without our Consent) or the keeping us out of *Hull*, and taking our Arms and Munition from us, could any Way concern the Interest, Property, or Liberty of the Subject; and it was confessed by that desperate *Declaration* itself of the 26th of May, That if they were found guilty of that Charge of destroying the Title and Interest of our Subjects to their Lands and Goods, it were indeed a very great Crime.\* But it was a strange fatal Lethargy which had seized our good People, and kept them from discerning, that the Nobility, Gentry, and Commonalty of *England*, were not only stripped of their Pre-eminences and Privileges, but of their Liberties and Estates, when our just Rights were denied us; and that no Subject could, from thenceforth, expect to do well at home, when we were driven from our Houses and our Towns.

‘ It was not possible that a Commission could be granted to the Earl of *Essex*, to raise an Army against us; and, for the Safety of our Person and Preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, to pursue, kill, and slay us, and all who wish well to us; but that, in a short Time, inferior Commanders, by the same Authority, would require our good Subjects, for the Maintenance of the Property of the Subject, to supply them with such Sums of Money as they think fit, upon the Pen-  
‘ nalty

\* This *Declaration* is in our Eleventh Volume, p. 89.



nalty of being plundered with all Extremity of War; An. 18. Car. I.  
 (as the Style of Sir Edward Baynton's Warrant runs  
 against our poor Subjects in *Wiltshire*) and by such  
 Rules of unlimited Arbitrary Power, as are incon-  
 sistent with the least Pretence or Shadow of that  
 Property it would seem to defend.

1642.  
 November.

If there could be yet any Understanding so un-  
 skilful and supine to believe, that these Disturbers  
 of the Public Peace do intend any Thing but a  
 general Confusion, they have brought them a sad  
 Argument to their own Doors to convince them :  
 After this *Ordinance* and *Declaration* it is not in any  
 sober Man's Power to believe himself worth any  
 Thing, or that there is such a Thing as Law, Li-  
 berty, or Property left in *England*, under the Juris-  
 diction of these Men; and the same Power that  
 robs them now of the twentieth Part of their E-  
 states, hath, by that, but made a Claim, and in-  
 titled itself to the other nineteen, when it shall  
 be thought fit to hasten the general Ruin.

Sure, if the Minds of all Men be not stubborn-  
 ly prepared for Servitude, they will look on this  
*Ordinance*, as the greatest Prodigy of Arbitrary  
 Power and Tyranny that any Age hath brought  
 forth in any Kingdom: Other Grievances, and the  
 greatest, have been conceived intolerable, rather  
 by the Logic and Consequence, than by the Pres-  
 sure itself; this, at once, sweeps away all that  
 the Wisdom and Justice of Parliaments have pro-  
 vided for them. Is their Property in their Estates,  
 (so carefully looked to by their Ancestors, and so  
 amply established by us against any Possibility  
 of Invasion from the Crown) which makes the  
 meanest Subject as much a Lord of his own, as  
 the greatest Peer, to be valued or considered ?  
 Here is a twentieth Part of every Man's Estate  
 (or so much much more as four Men will please  
 to call the twentieth Part) taken away at once;  
 and yet a Power left to take a twentieth still of  
 that which remains; and this to be levied by such  
 Circumstances of Severity, as no Act of Parlia-  
 ment ever consented to. Is their Liberty, which



## 66     *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘distinguishes Subjects from Slaves, and in which  
 ‘this Free-born Nation hath the Advantage of all  
 ‘Christendom, dear to them? They shall not only  
 ‘be imprisoned in such Places of this Kingdom, (a  
 ‘Latitude of Judgment no Court can challenge to  
 ‘itself in any Cases) but for so long Time as the  
 ‘Committee of the House of Commons for Exa-  
 ‘mination shall appoint and order; the House of  
 ‘Commons itself having never assumed, or, in the  
 ‘least Degree, pretended to a Power of Judicature;  
 ‘having no more Authority to administer an Oath,  
 ‘(the only Way to discover and find out the Truth  
 ‘of Facts) than to cut off the Heads of any of our  
 ‘Subjects; and this Committee, being so far from  
 ‘being a Part of the Parliament, that it is destructive  
 ‘to the whole, by usurping to itself all the Power  
 ‘of King, Lords, and Commons.

‘All who know any thing of Parliaments, know  
 ‘that a Committee of either House ought not, by  
 ‘the Law, to publish their own Results; neither are  
 ‘their Conclusions of any Force without the Confir-  
 ‘mation of the House, which hath the same Power  
 ‘of controlling them, as if the Matter had never  
 ‘been debated: But that any Committee should be  
 ‘so contracted (as this of Examination, a Style no  
 ‘Committee ever bore before this Parliament) as to  
 ‘exclude the Members of the House, who are equal-  
 ‘ly trusted by their Country, from being present  
 ‘at their Counsels, is so monstrous to the Privileges  
 ‘of Parliament, that it is no more in the Power of  
 ‘any Man to give up that Freedom, than of him-  
 ‘self to order, that, from that Time, the Place for  
 ‘which he serves shall never more send a Knight  
 ‘or Burgeſs to the Parliament; and, in Truth, is no  
 ‘less than to alter the whole Frame of Government,  
 ‘to pull up Parliaments by the Roots, and to com-  
 ‘mit the Lives, Liberties, and Estates of all the  
 ‘People of *England*, to the Arbitrary Power of a few  
 ‘unqualified Persons; who shall dispose thereof ac-  
 ‘cording to their Discretion, without Account to  
 ‘any Rule or Authority whatsoever.

‘Are

‘ Are their Friends, their Wives, and Children (the greatest Blessings of Peace, and Comforts of Life) precious to them? Would their Penury and Imprisonment be less grievous by those Cordials? They shall be divorced from them, banished, and shall no longer remain within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, the Suburbs and the Counties adjacent; and how far those adjacent Counties shall extend no Man knows.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
November.

‘ Is there any Thing now left to enjoy, but the Liberty to rebel, and destroy one another? Are the outward Blessings only of Peace, Property, and Liberty, taken and forced from our Subjects? Are their Consciences free and unassaulted by the Violence of these Fire-brands? Sure the Liberty and Freedom of Conscience cannot suffer by these Men. Alas! all these Punishments are imposed upon them, because they will not submit to Actions contrary to their natural Loyalty, to their Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and to their late voluntary *Protestation*, which obliges them to the Care of our Person and our just Rights.

‘ How many Persons of Honour, Quality, and Reputation, of the several Counties of *England*, are now imprison’d without any Objections against them, but Suspicion of their Loyalty? How many of the gravest and most substantial Citizens of *London*, by whom the Government and Discipline of that City was preserved, are disgraced, robbed, and imprisoned, without any Process of Law, or Colour of Accusation, but of Obedience to the Law and Government of the Kingdom; whilst *Anabaptists* and *Brownists*, with the Assistance of vitious and debauched Persons of desperate Fortunes, take upon them to break up and rifle Houses, as public and avowed Ministers of a new invented Authority? How many godly, pious, and painful Divines, whose Lives and Learning hath made them of reverend Estimation, are now slandered with Inclination to Popery; discountenanced and imprisoned, for discharging their Consciences, instructing the People in the Christian Duties of Religion,

## 68 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
November.

‘ligion and Obedience; whilst schismatical, illiterate, and scandalous Preachers fill the Pulpits and Churches with Blasphemy, Irreverence, and Treason, and incite their Auditory to nothing but Murder and Rebellion?

‘We pass over the vulgar Charm, by which they have captivated such who have been contented to dispence with their Consciences for the Preferuation of their Estates; and by which they persuade Men, chearfully, to part with this twentieth Part of their Estates to the good Work in hand; for whoever will give what he hath, may escape robbing: *They shall be repaid upon the Public Faith, as all other Monies lent upon the Propositions of both Houses.* It may be so; but Men must be condemned to a strange Unthriftiness who will lend upon such Security. The Public Faith indeed is as great an Earnest as the State can give, and engages the Honour, Reputation, and Honesty of the Nation, and is the Act of the Kingdom; it is the Security of the King, the Lords, and Commons, which can never need an Executor, can never die, never be bankrupt; and therefore we willingly consented to it for the Indemnity of our good Subjects of *Scotland* (who, we hope, will not think the worse of it, for being so often and so cheaply mentioned since); but that a *Vote* of one or both Houses should be an Engagement upon the Public Faith, is as impossible as that the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations should be the High Court of Parliament.

‘And what is or can be said, with the least Shadow of Reason, to justify these Extravagances? We have not lately heard of the old Fundamental Laws which used to warrant the Innovations; this needs a Refuge even below those Foundations. They will say, They cannot manage their great Undertakings without such extraordinary Ways. We think so too; but that proves only they have undertaken somewhat they ought not to undertake; not that it is lawful for them to do any Thing that is convenient for those Ends.

‘We



“ We remembered them long ago, and we can- An. 18. Car. I.  
 “ not do it too often, of that excellent Speech of 1642.  
 “ Mr. Pynne : *The Law is that which puts a Dif-*  
 “ *ference betwixt Good and Evil, betwixt Just and*  
 “ *Unjust ; if you take away the Law, all Things will*  
 “ *fall into Confusion, every Man will become a Law*  
 “ *unto himself ; which, in the depraved Condition of*  
 “ *human Nature, must needs produce many great E-*  
 “ *normities ; Lust will become a Law, and Envy will*  
 “ *become a Law ; Covetousness and Ambition will be-*  
 “ *come Laws ; and what Dictates, what Decisions,*  
 “ *such Laws will produce, may easily be discerned.* It  
 “ may indeed, by the sad Instances over the whole  
 “ Kingdom : But will Posterity believe, that, in  
 “ the same Parliament, this Doctrine was avowed  
 “ with that Acclamation, and these Instances after  
 “ produced ? That, in the same Parliament, such  
 “ Care was taken, that no Man should be commit-  
 “ ted, in what Case soever, without the Cause of his  
 “ Imprisonment expressed, and that all Men should  
 “ be immediately bailed, in all Cases bailable : And,  
 “ during the same Parliament, that Alderman *Pen-*  
 “ *nington*, or indeed any Body else but the sworn  
 “ Ministers of Justice, should imprison whom they  
 “ would, and for what they would, and for as long  
 “ a Time as they would ? That the King should  
 “ be reproached with Breach of Privilege for accusing  
 “ Sir *John Hotbom* of High Treason, when, with  
 “ Force of Arms, he kept him out of *Hull*, and  
 “ despised him to his Face ; because, in no Case, a  
 “ Member of either House might be committed or  
 “ accused, without Leave of that House of which  
 “ he is a Member : And yet that, during the same  
 “ Parliament, the same Alderman should commit  
 “ the Earl of *Middlesex*, a Peer of the Realm, and  
 “ the Lord *Buckburst*, a Member of the House of  
 “ Commons, to the *Counter* without Reprehension ?  
 “ That to be a Traitor (which is defined, and every  
 “ Man understands) should be no Crime ; and to  
 “ be called a Malignant (which Nobody knows the  
 “ Meaning of ) should be Ground enough for close  
 “ Imprisonment ? That a Law should be made,

November.

AN. 13. CAR. 1.  
1642.

November.

‘ That whosoever should presume to take *Tunnage*  
‘ and *Poundage*, without an Act of Parliament,  
‘ should incur the Penalty of a *Premunire*; and, in  
‘ the same Parliament, that the same Imposition  
‘ should be laid upon our Subjects, and taken by an  
‘ *Order* of both Houses, without and against our  
‘ Consent? Lastly, That, in the same Parliament,  
‘ a Law should be made to declare the Proceedings  
‘ and Judgment upon *Ship Money* to be illegal and  
‘ void; and, during that Parliament, that an *Or-*  
‘ *der* of both Houses shall, upon Pretence of Ne-  
‘ cessity, enable four Men to take away the twen-  
‘ tieth Part of their Estates from all their Neigh-  
‘ bours, according to their Discretion.

‘ But our good Subjects will no longer look upon  
‘ these and the like Results, as upon the Counsels and  
‘ Conclusions of both our Houses of Parliament,  
‘ though all the World knows even that Authority  
‘ can never justify Things unwarrantable by Law;  
‘ they well know how few of the Persons trusted  
‘ by them are present at their Consultations; of  
‘ above 500, not 80; and of the House of Peers,  
‘ not above a fifth Part; that they who are present  
‘ enjoy not the Privilege and Freedom of Parlia-  
‘ ment; but are besieged by an Army, and awed by  
‘ the same Tumults, which drove us and their Fel-  
‘ low-Members from thence, to consent to what  
‘ some few seditious, schismatical Persons amongst  
‘ them do propose.

‘ These are the Men who, joining with the *Ana-*  
‘ *baptists* and *Brownists* of London, first changed the  
‘ Government and Discipline of that City; and  
‘ now, by the Pride and Power of that City, would  
‘ undo the Kingdom, whilst their Lord Mayor (a  
‘ Person accused and known to be guilty of High  
‘ Treason) by a new Legislative Power of his own,  
‘ suppresses and reviles the Book of Common Prayer,  
‘ robs and imprisons whom he thinks fit, and, with  
‘ the Rabble of his Faction, gives Laws to both  
‘ Houses of Parliament; and tells them they will  
‘ have no Accommodation: Whilst the Members,  
‘ sent and intrusted by their Counties, are expelled  
‘ the

‘ the House, or committed, for refusing to take An. 18. Car. 1.  
‘ the Oath of *Association* to live and die with the 1642.  
‘ Earl of *Essex*, as very lately Sir *Sidney Montague*. \*  
November.

‘ These are the Men who have presumed to send  
‘ Ambassadors, and to enter into Treaties with fo-  
‘ reign States, in their own Behalfs; having, at this  
‘ Time, an Agent of their own with the States of  
‘ *Holland*, to negotiate for them upon private In-  
‘ structions.

‘ These are the Men who, not thinking they have  
‘ yet brought Mischief enough upon this Kingdom,  
‘ at this Time invite and solicit our Subjects of  
‘ *Scotland* to enter this Land with an Army against  
‘ us.

‘ In a Word, these are the Men, who have made  
‘ this last devouring *Ordinance* to take away all Law,  
‘ Liberty, and Property from our People; and have,  
‘ by it, really acted that upon our People, which,  
‘ with infinite Malice, and no Colour or Ground,  
‘ was laboured to be infused into them, to have  
‘ been our Intention by the *Commissions* of *Array*.

‘ We

\* We find this Entry in the *Commons Journals* of December 3, 1642.  
The Question for adhering to the Earl of *Essex* in this Cause, for  
the Maintenance and Preservation of the true Protestant Religion,  
the King’s Person, the Laws of the Land, the Peace of the King-  
dom, the Liberty and Property of the Subject, and the Rights and  
Privileges of Parliament, was this Day read to Sir *Sidney Montague*,  
[Member for *Huntingdonshire*] and his Vote demanded: And he  
gave his Negative Voice unto it.

Hereupon the Commons *resolved*, by a Majority of 48 Voices  
against 45, 1<sup>st</sup>, ‘ That he be disabled for continuing any longer a  
Member of this House, during this Parliament. 2<sup>dly</sup>, ‘ That his  
Person be forthwith secured. And, 3<sup>dly</sup>, ‘ That he be forthwith  
committed Prisoner to the *Tower*.’

Sir *Sidney Montague* was then called to the Bar, and, kneeling  
there, Mr. Speaker pronounced Sentence against him accordingly,  
For not yielding his Consent to assist the Earl of *Essex* in the Main-  
tenance of Religion, the King’s Person, the Liberty of the Subject,  
the Rights and Privileges of Parliament; and giving for his Reason,  
That the King had declared such Traitors, as should adhere unto the  
said Earl in this Cause; and pulled out a *Declaration* out of his  
Pocket, and thereby seemed to lay an Imputation upon all the Mem-  
bers, and others, that had declared to assist the said Earl in this  
Cause: The House thinking it a great Crime, that any Member  
should be guided by *Declarations* from abroad, and not by his own  
Judgment, in giving his Vote.



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘ We have done. What Power and Authority these Men have, or would have, we know not : For ourself we challenge none such ; we look upon the Pressures and Inconveniences our good Subjects bear, even by us and our Army (which the Army first raised by them enforced us to levy in our Defence, and their Refusal of all Offers and Desires of Treaty enforceth us to keep) with very much Sadness of Heart : We are so far from requiring a twentieth Part of their Estates, (though for their own visible Preservation) that, as we have already sold or pawned our own Jewels, and coined our own Plate, so we are willing to sell all our own Land and Houses for their Relief ; yet we do not doubt but our good Subjects will seriously consider our Condition, and their own Duties, and think our Readiness to protect them with the utmost Hazard of our Life, deserves their Readiness to assist us with some Part of their Fortunes ; and whilst other Men give a twentieth Part of their Estates, to enable them to forfeit the other nineteen, that they will extend themselves to us in a liberal and free Proportion for the Preservation of the rest ; and for the Maintenance of God’s true Religion, the Laws of the Land, the Liberty of the Subject, and the Safety and very Being of Parliament and of this Kingdom ; for if all these ever were, or can be, in manifest Danger, it is now in this present Rebellion against us.

‘ Lastly, We will and require all our loving Subjects of what Degree or Quality soever, as they will answer it to God, to Us, and to Posterity, by their Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy ; as they would not be looked upon now, and remembered hereafter, as Betrayers of the Laws and Liberty they were born to ; that they, in no Degree, submit to this wild pretended *Ordinance* ; and that they presume not to give any Encouragement, or Assistance, to the Army now in Rebellion against us : Which if, notwithstanding, they shall do, they must expect from us the severest Punishment the Law can inflict, and a perpetual Infamy with all good Men.’

A Letter from the *Hague*, directed to Secretary *Nicholas*, supposed to come from *Col. Goring*, having been taken from the Gentleman who brought it, and carried to the Parliament: It was this Day, *November 26*, read in both Houses, and by them ordered to be printed; and also to be read in all the Churches of *London* and the Suburbs thereof.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

*Hague*, Nov. 22, 1642.

*IT* is now long since I had the Opportunity of writing to you; but, since my first, have not heard any thing from you at all. The Occasion of our long Stay here was, first, the Expectation of our Irish Ships; next, the Raising of Money, which the Proposition of *Newcastle* drew as fast as it could advance.

An intercepted Letter from Colonel Goring.

The Failing of the Ships, had it not been supplied by the Reputation of the King's Success at Land, had given us a dangerous Blow here; but that hath so supported our Credit, that the Prince of Orange hath since played his Part, and advanced all those Sums we were to expect; of which 20,000*l.* is sent towards you, 20,000*l.* to *Newcastle*, and 20,000*l.* at least, we bring with us; besides the great Business, which we expect this Day a final End of, which will advance 60,000*l.* more, in which we are ascertained of the Prince of Orange's utmost Power; such, nevertheless, we apprehend the Importance of the Queen's being in England, that we had gone this last Week, and expected the Coming of that after, had not an unseasonable Compliment from your Side stopped us, till this Express sent to you.

The Fleet is now ready, and this Week we certainly go, if those Counsels, or Chances, that tend to dilatory Resolutions, move not more effectually than the certain Advantages of our Expedition and Dispatch from hence; all our Affairs being now done, and nothing more to be expected.

That you may know upon what Grounds we go, and what Security we expect there, and what Advantage you in the South are to derive from it, you must know we have sent over 10,000 Foot Arms besides the Garrison, near 2000 Horse Arms, and 20 Pieces

of

## 74 The Parliamentary History

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

*We bring over Waggens and all Accommodation, to march so soon as we arrive; we carry very considerable Officers from hence, and, by the Advice we receive from that Side, 8000 Men are on foot already, and six Troops of Horse; the rest will not be long in raising after we come there. General King is designed for Lieutenant-General, and hath been with the Queen, and will be suddenly there.*

*From Denmark are likewise sent Arms for 10,000 Foot and 1500 Horse, with a Train of Artillery, and every Thing proportionable, to the very Drums and Halberds. Two good Men of War come their Convoy, and in them an Ambassador to his Majesty, a Person of great Quality in Denmark: I hope it will be a general Care there to see him nobly treated; for the Entertainment and Neglect of the last was much complained of, and is so much resented by that King, that it had like to have frustrated all our Expectations in that Court, had not Cochrane very handsomely evaded it: He comes along with the Ambassador; with whom, if you encounter, he will communicate some Propositions of great Importance; which, in how much the fewer Hands they are carried, will be so much the better liked by them you are to deal with; if any Employment in this Affair may fall upon your Servant that writes to you, I know you will not be unmindful of him.*

*We have great Apprehensions here by something intimated from my Lord of Holland, of a Treaty further entered into than we have Advertisement of, or can well approve; we have confidently believed your approaching London (if you had not made too long Stay upon the Way) would have determined that Matter; and what the Difficulties are now of that, we cannot yet understand, for if Intelligence from hence came as freely to you as to us, the King's Party there are very considerable, and full of that Expectation; and a Day or two's Loss of Time, by the late Example of Hull, may be judged what contrary Consequences it may produce.*

*We hear my Lord of Essex approaches London, but believe he will be so waited on by the King's Horse, as not*



not to let him join with their Forces there; being now so lame an Army, without Horse or Cannon, as the Relations you send hither makes him to be. We believe the King's Horse likewise now so great a Body, that it will be as troublesome as unnecessary for them to subsist together; and think so many Troops might be well spared as might be sent into Kent, to countenance a Party to be set on foot there; which, according to our Intelligence here, would undoubtedly be found very affectionate and considerable; so that by sparing 500 Horse, you might possibly add to your Army 5000 Foot, to be employed upon the River on that Side the Town.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

If the unhappy Interception had not come of the last Week's Letters, we had undoubtedly been with you, on the other Side, in Norfolk and Essex, within three Weeks; and, in that Condition, having all the Kingdom behind us on every Side, it will not be hard to judge whether would have been better able to subsist, they within the Town, or the King's Army without; admit my Lord of Essex were gotten in, or that the Town had not yielded itself so soon as you had approached, you may yet certainly presume on this, that, by our being once on foot, we shall be able to collect for you all the 400,000*l.* Subsidies, universally throughout the Kingdom; which will make the King's Army subsist, and wear out theirs, besides the Money which we bring.

What we expect from Denmark and France, are all Encouragements to make us expect no Treaties to be admitted, but upon Terms of great Advantage and Honour to his Majesty; these you are best able to judge of upon the Place.

If the King have Use of them, I am confident you may expect from France, (so soon as you set Foot in Kent, and shall intimate your Desire of the same) the three Regiments of his Majesty's own Subjects there, employed under Colonel Hill, Colonel Fitz-Williams, and Colonel Bealing. Your Letters directed to Newcastle will direct our Addresses to France, for I hope we shall yet be there before you can return any in Answer to this.

We

## 76 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1. 1642. We find, both in *Rushworth's* and *Husband's Collections*, the following Account of the Manner how this *Letter* was intercepted and taken :

The Manner of its being intercepted.

‘ On *Saturday* Morning the Gentleman that brought this *Letter* from *Holland*, came up to *London* in a *Gravefend* Boat, intending to land at *Brentford*, and therefore, for the more Expedition, shot the Bridge ; which being perceived by one of the Pinnaces that lay on this Side for the Guard of the City and Parliament, and being known to be a *Gravefend* Boat, which always land on the other Side at *Billingsgate*, they called to them to know their Buiness ; but they, not regarding their Summons, still posted away ; whereupon the Men in the Ship made after them and hauled them in, examined the Gentleman, and, having some Suspicion, searched him and found this, with some other Letters about him ; whereupon they presently carried him up to the Parliament ; where, after Examination, his Letters were taken from him, and he committed to safe Custody.’

‘ *Nov. 28.* The King’s *Answer* to the Parliament’s last *Petition* to him, inclosed in a Letter to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read in that House, as follows :

The King’s Answer to the Petition of both Houses, of the 24th.

‘ WE expected such *Propositions* from you, as might speedily remove and prevent the Misery and Desolation of this Kingdom ; and that, for the Effecting thereof, (we now residing at a convenient Place, not far from our City of *London*) Committees from both our Houses of Parliament should attend us ; for you pretended, by your *Message* to us at *Colebrooke*, that those were your *Desires*: Instead thereof (and thereby let all the World judge of the Design of that *Overture*) we have only received your humble *Petition*, *That we would be pleased to return to our Parliament, with our Royal, not our Martial Attendance.*

‘ All our good Subjects that remember what we have so often told you and them upon this Subject,

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

ject, and what hath since passed, must, with Indignation, look upon this Message, as intended by the Contrivers thereof for a Scorn to us; and thereby designed by that Malignant Party (of whom we have so often complained, whose Safety and Ambition is built upon the Divisions and Ruins of this Kingdom, and who have too great an Influence upon your Actions) for a Wall of Separation betwixt us and our People.

We have told you the Reasons why we parted from *London*; how we were chased thence, and by whom: We have often complained that the greatest Part of our Peers, and of the Members of our House of Commons, could not, with Safety to their Honours and Persons, continue and vote freely among you; but, by Violence and cunning Practices, were debarred of those Privileges which their Birth-rights, and the Trust reposed in them by their Counties, gave them; the Truth whereof may sufficiently appear by the small Number of those that are with you.

We have offered to meet both our Houses in any Place free and convenient for us and them, but we could never receive the least Satisfaction in any of these Particulars, nor for those scandalous and seditious Pamphlets and Sermons which swarm amongst you. That's all one you tell us: *It is now for our Honour, and for the Safety of our Royal Person, to return to our Parliament.* But herein your formerly Denying us a Negative Voice gives us Cause to believe, that, by giving yourselves that Name without us, you intend not to acknowledge us to be Part of it.

The whole Kingdom knows that an Army was raised under Pretence of *Orders* of both Houses, an Usurpation never heard of before in any Age; which Army hath pursued us in our own Kingdom, gave us Battle at *Keynton*, and endeavoured to take away the Life of us and our Children; and yet (these Rebels being newly recruited, and possessed of our City of *London*) we are courteously invited to return to our Parliament there; that is, into



An. 12. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘into the Power of this Army. Doth this signify  
 ‘any other Thing, than that, since the traiterous En-  
 ‘deavours of those desperate Men could not snatch  
 ‘the Crown from our Head, (it being defended by  
 ‘the Providence of God, and the Affections and Loy-  
 ‘alty of our good Subjects) we should now tamely  
 ‘come up and give it them; and put ourselves, our  
 ‘Life, and the Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes of  
 ‘all our good Subjects into their merciful Hands?’

‘Well, we think not fit to give any other *Answer*  
 ‘to this Part of your *Petition*: But as we impute  
 ‘not this Affront to both our Houses of Parliament,  
 ‘nor to the Major Part of those that are now pre-  
 ‘sent there, but to that dangerous Party we and  
 ‘the whole Kingdom must cry out upon; so we  
 ‘shall, for our good Subjects Sake, and out of our  
 ‘most tender Sense of their Miseries and the general  
 ‘Calamities of this Kingdom, which must, if this  
 ‘War continue, speedily overwhelm this whole  
 ‘Nation, take no Advantage of it. But, if you  
 ‘shall really pursue what you presented to us at  
 ‘*Colebrooke*, we shall make good all we then gave  
 ‘you in *Answer* to it, whereby the Hearts of our  
 ‘distressed Subjects may be raised with the Hopes of  
 ‘Peace; without which Religion, the Laws, and  
 ‘your Liberties, can no way be settled and secured.

‘Touching the late and sad Accident you men-  
 ‘tion, if you thereby intend that of *Brentford*, we  
 ‘desire you, once, to deal ingenuously with the  
 ‘People; and to let them see our last *Message* to  
 ‘you, and our *Declaration* to them, concerning the  
 ‘same; (both which we sent to our Press at *Lon-*  
 ‘*don*, but were taken away from our Messenger,  
 ‘and not suffered to be published) and then we  
 ‘doubt not but they will be soon undeceived, and  
 ‘easily find out those Counsels, which do rather  
 ‘persuade a desperate Division, than a good Agree-  
 ‘ment betwixt us, our two Houses, and People.’

The Lords *ordered*, That this *Message* should be  
 communicated to the Commons forthwith, and it  
 was sent down to them accordingly.

Nov.

Nov. 29. The Messengers were dismissed that brought the last *Message* from the King, and a *Letter* was wrote to the Lord *Falkland*, intimating, That the Houses would send an *Answer* to it by an Express of their own.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

The same Day an *Ordinance* of Parliament was made, For the speedy setting forth certain Ships, in all Points furnished for War, to prevent the bringing over Soldiers, Money, Ordnance, and other Ammunition from beyond the Sea, to assist the King against the Parliament of *England*. By this *Ordinance* it was declared, That all Adventurers in this Enterprize should have and enjoy all Ships, Goods, Money, Plate, Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Pillage, and Spoil, which should be seized or taken, as their own proper Goods.

An Ordinance for  
fitting out Ships  
to cut off all Supplies from the  
King.

Thus much for the Proceedings in *November*.

So many and various are the *Orders, Instructions, Letters of Intelligence, &c.* from different Parts of the Kingdom, all relating to War, and enter'd in the *Journals* of both Houses, in the Beginning of *December*, that it would be tiresome to repeat them: We will not therefore trouble the Reader with any of them, but cast an Eye to see what was doing without Doors at this Time; and how the King's or Parliament's Power rose or fell in different Parts of the Kingdom.

The State of the  
Kingdom at this  
Time.

After the late Rencontre at *Brentford*, the King withdrew his Army over *Kingston-Bridge* to *Oatlands*; and from thence, by *Colebrooke* and *Reading*, to *Oxford*.

At the same Time the Earl of *Newcastle* had associated all the Counties *North* of *Yorkshire*, for the King; on which Commissions were sent down from the Parliament, to the Lord *Fairfax* and others, to associate the last-named County with all the Midland Counties up to *North-Wales*. However the Earl marched forward, with a gallant Army of *Northumbrians, &c.* towards *York*. At *Pierbridge*, a Pass over the River *Tees*, he was opposed by a Party of Lord *Fairfax's* Horse, commanded



## 78 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘ into the Power of this Army. Doth this signify  
 ‘ any other Thing, than that, since the traitorous En-  
 ‘ deavours of those desperate Men could not snatch  
 ‘ the Crown from our Head, (it being defended by  
 ‘ the Providence of God, and the Affections and Loy-  
 ‘ alty of our good Subjects) we should now tamely  
 ‘ come up and give it them; and put ourselves, our  
 ‘ Life, and the Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes of  
 ‘ all our good Subjects into their merciful Hands?

‘ Well, we think not fit to give any other *Answer*  
 ‘ to this Part of your *Petition*: But as we impute  
 ‘ not this Affront to both our Houses of Parliament,  
 ‘ nor to the Major Part of those that are now pre-  
 ‘ sent there, but to that dangerous Party we and  
 ‘ the whole Kingdom must cry out upon; so we  
 ‘ shall, for our good Subjects Sake, and out of our  
 ‘ most tender Sense of their Miseries and the general  
 ‘ Calamities of this Kingdom, which must, if this  
 ‘ War continue, speedily overwhelm this whole  
 ‘ Nation, take no Advantage of it. But, if you  
 ‘ shall really pursue what you presented to us at  
 ‘ *Colebrooke*, we shall make good all we then gave  
 ‘ you in *Answer* to it, whereby the Hearts of our  
 ‘ distressed Subjects may be raised with the Hopes of  
 ‘ Peace; without which Religion, the Laws, and  
 ‘ your Liberties, can no way be settled and secured.

‘ Touching the late and sad Accident you men-  
 ‘ tion, if you thereby intend that of *Brentford*, we  
 ‘ desire you, once, to deal ingenuously with the  
 ‘ People; and to let them see our last *Message* to  
 ‘ you, and our *Declaration* to them, concerning the  
 ‘ same; (both which we sent to our Press at *Lon-*  
 ‘ *don*, but were taken away from our Messenger,  
 ‘ and not suffered to be published) and then we  
 ‘ doubt not but they will be soon undeceived, and  
 ‘ easily find out those Counsels, which do rather  
 ‘ persuade a desperate Division, than a good Agree-  
 ‘ ment betwixt us, our two Houses, and People.’

The Lords *ordered*, That this *Message* should be  
 communicated to the Commons forthwith, and it  
 was sent down to them accordingly.

*Nov.*



Nov. 29. The Messengers were dismissed that brought the last *Message* from the King, and a *Letter* was wrote to the Lord *Falkland*, intimating, That the Houses would send an *Answer* to it by an Express of their own.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

The same Day an *Ordinance* of Parliament was made, For the speedy setting forth certain Ships, in all Points furnished for War, to prevent the bringing over Soldiers, Money, Ordnance, and other Ammunition from beyond the Sea, to assist the King against the Parliament of *England*. By this *Ordinance* it was declared, That all Adventurers in this Enterprize should have and enjoy all Ships, Goods, Money, Plate, Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Pillage, and Spoil, which should be seized or taken, as their own proper Goods.

An Ordinance for  
fitting out Ships  
to cut off all Sup-  
plies from the  
King.

Thus much for the Proceedings in *November*.

So many and various are the *Orders*, *Instructions*, *Letters of Intelligence*, &c. from different Parts of the Kingdom, all relating to War, and enter'd in the *Journals* of both Houses, in the Beginning of *December*, that it would be tiresome to repeat them: We will not therefore trouble the Reader with any of them, but cast an Eye to see what was doing without Doors at this Time; and how the King's or Parliament's Power rose or fell in different Parts of the Kingdom.

The State of the  
Kingdom at this  
Time.

After the late Rencontre at *Brentford*, the King withdrew his Army over *Kingston-Bridge* to *Oatlands*; and from thence, by *Colebrooke* and *Reading*, to *Oxford*.

At the same Time the Earl of *Newcastle* had associated all the Counties *North* of *Yorkshire*, for the King; on which Commissions were sent down from the Parliament, to the Lord *Fairfax* and others, to associate the last-named County with all the Midland Counties up to *North-Wales*. However the Earl marched forward, with a gallant Army of *Northumbrians*, &c. towards *York*. At *Pierbridge*, a Pass over the River *Tees*, he was opposed by a Party of Lord *Fairfax's* Horse, commanded

## 78 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

November.

into the Power of this Army. Doth this signify any other Thing, than that, since the traitorous Endeavours of those desperate Men could not snatch the Crown from our Head, (it being defended by the Providence of God, and the Affections and Loyalty of our good Subjects) we should now tamely come up and give it them; and put ourselves, our Life, and the Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes of all our good Subjects into their merciful Hands?

Well, we think not fit to give any other *Answer* to this Part of your *Petition*: But as we impute not this Affront to both our Houses of Parliament, nor to the Major Part of those that are now present there, but to that dangerous Party we and the whole Kingdom must cry out upon; so we shall, for our good Subjects Sake, and out of our most tender Sense of their Miseries and the general Calamities of this Kingdom, which must, if this War continue, speedily overwhelm this whole Nation, take no Advantage of it. But, if you shall really pursue what you presented to us at *Colebrooke*, we shall make good all we then gave you in *Answer* to it, whereby the Hearts of our distressed Subjects may be raised with the Hopes of Peace; without which Religion, the Laws, and your Liberties, can no way be settled and secured.

Touching the late and sad Accident you mention, if you thereby intend that of *Brentford*, we desire you, once, to deal ingenuously with the People; and to let them see our last *Message* to you, and our *Declaration* to them, concerning the same; (both which we sent to our Press at *London*, but were taken away from our Messenger, and not suffered to be published) and then we doubt not but they will be soon undeceived, and easily find out those Counsels, which do rather persuade a desperate Division, than a good Agreement betwixt us, our two Houses, and People.

The Lords ordered, That this *Message* should be communicated to the Commons forthwith, and it was sent down to them accordingly.

*Nov.*



Nov. 29. The Messengers were dismissed that brought the last *Message* from the King, and a *Letter* was wrote to the Lord *Falkland*, intimating, That the Houses would send an *Answer* to it by an Express of their own.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
November.

The same Day an *Ordinance* of Parliament was made, For the speedy setting forth certain Ships, in all Points furnished for War, to prevent the bringing over Soldiers, Money, Ordnance, and other Ammunition from beyond the Sea, to assist the King against the Parliament of *England*. By this *Ordinance* it was declared, That all Adventurers in this Enterprize should have and enjoy all Ships, Goods, Money, Plate, Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Pillage, and Spoil, which should be seized or taken, as their own proper Goods.

An Ordinance for  
fitting out Ships  
to cut off all Supplies from the  
King.

Thus much for the Proceedings in *November*.

So many and various are the *Orders, Instructions, Letters of Intelligence, &c.* from different Parts of the Kingdom, all relating to War, and enter'd in the *Journals* of both Houses, in the Beginning of *December*, that it would be tiresome to repeat them: We will not therefore trouble the Reader with any of them, but cast an Eye to see what was doing without Doors at this Time; and how the King's or Parliament's Power rose or fell in different Parts of the Kingdom.

After the late Rencounter at *Brentford*, the King withdrew his Army over *Kingston-Bridge* to *Oatlands*; and from thence, by *Colebrooke* and *Reading*, to *Oxford*.

The State of the  
Kingdom at this  
Time.

At the same Time the Earl of *Newcastle* had associated all the Counties *North* of *Yorkshire*, for the King; on which Commissions were sent down from the Parliament, to the Lord *Fairfax* and others, to associate the last-named County with all the Midland Counties up to *North-Wales*. However the Earl marched forward, with a gallant Army of *Northumbrians, &c.* towards *York*. At *Pierbridge*, a Pass over the River *Tees*, he was opposed by a Party of Lord *Fairfax's* Horse, commanded



An. 13. Car. I.

1642.

December.

manded by Capt. *Hotham*, whom the Earl dispersed, and marched streight to *York*; where he published a *Declaration*\*, setting forth the Reasons for his taking up Arms for the King.

The Parliament had also brought several Counties, in the *West* of *England*, into an Association; and some Matters are entered in the *Journals*, for the Encouragement of this Project.

In the *South* the Event was various; *Farnham* Castle, in the County of *Surry*, was taken by the High Sheriff, for the King; which Sir *William Waller* soon after retook for the Parliament. But this Loss was amply made up by the King's Forces taking the Town of *Marlborough* by Storm, under the Command of Lord *Digby*, Lord *Grandison*, Lord *Wilmot*, Lord *Wentworth*, &c. so that now the Kingdom, though in the Depth of Winter, was in a Flame, from one End to the other of it.

The miserable State of *Ireland*, also, during these Combuſtions, was really to be pitied; both Parties in *England* laid the Blame on each other for neglecting the Succours that were to be sent to that Kingdom; but the true Reasons thereof, we think, will best appear by the following Extracts from the *Lords Journals* of the 9th of this Month.

To the High and Most Honourable Court of Parliament,

The PETITION of Sir *James Montgomery* and Sir *Hardress Waller*, Knights and Colonels, and of Colonel *Arthur Hill*, and Colonel *Audley Merwin*, in Behalf of themselves and other Commanders in his Majesty's Army in *Ireland*,

Most humbly sheweth,

A Petition, from several Officers in *Ireland*, to the Parliament.

THat your Petitioners, by particular Trust devolved from considerable Parts of the Army in *Ireland*, have, these 26 Weeks, attended for some timely Succour to be dispatched to that deplorable Kingdom; and finding, to our unspeakable Grief, that the Distractions of this Kingdom afforded us very weak Hopes of any com-

\* See this at Length in *Rushworth's Collections*, Vol. V. p. 78.

competent Supplies: As we did, in a tender Representation of the bleeding Condition thereof, petition the High Court of Parliament, so, by Licence first obtained from the Committee of Safety, out of the same Sense, in all Humility we address'd ourselves to his Majesty, whose gracious Answer we received in Writing, and his Command to publish the same.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

December.

May it therefore please your Lordships, in Obedience to his Majesty's Commands, and out of a constant Inclination to observe the Directions of this most Honourable Assembly, to grant us Leave to present to your Honours the Copy of our Petition to his Majesty, his Majesty's Answer to us, and also the best and only Remedies appearing unto us for the present Preservation and future Being of that perishing Kingdom; accepting and humbly praying therein the further Resolutions and Directions of this High Court, in a Matter of so great Importance; wherein God's Glory, the interwoven Safety of his Majesty's Dominions, and so much Protestant Blood as yet unpilt, are so highly concern'd; their Wants being so pressing, the Power of the Enemy daily increasing, and their Ruin, without present Relief, inevitable, constrain your Petitioners humbly to beg a speedy Answer, further Delays being to them as dangerous as a Desertion; and if further Satisfaction of the particular Condition of every Part of the Army, and of those distressed Protestants there, be desired, your Petitioners are ready to remonstrate the same. And, as in Duty bound, shall pray, &c.

The Petitioners were called in, and presented the said Copy, which was read in *hæc Verba*:

To the KING's Most Excellent Majesty,  
The HUMBLE PETITION of Sir James Montgomery and Sir Hardress Waller, Knights and Colonels, Colonel Arthur Hill, and Colonel Audley Mervine, in Behalf of themselves and others. Commanders in his Majesty's Army in Ireland.

May it please your Sacred Majesty,

**WE** your Majesty's most humble Subjects, being intrusted from considerable Parts of your Majesty's Forces in the Kingdom of Ireland, to petition

And to the King,



An. 15. Car. 1.  
1642.

December.

*your Majesty and your Parliament for Supplies; and finding that your Majesty had committed the Care and Managing of that War to your Parliament here, we addrest ourselves unto the same; whose Sense of our Miseries, and Inclination to redress them appeared very tender unto us; but the present Dislempers of this your Majesty's Kingdom of England (to our unspeakable Grief) are grown so great, that all future Passages, by which Comfort and Life should be conveyed unto that gasping Kingdom, seem totally to be obstructed; so that, unless your gracious Majesty, out of your singular Wisdom and fatherly Care, apply some speedy Remedy, we your distressed and loyal Subjects of that Kingdom must inevitably perish.*

*Our Condition represents unto your Majesty the Estate of all your faithful Protestant Subjects in Ireland: The Influence of Princely Favour and Goodness so actively distilled upon your Kingdom of Ireland, before the Birth of this monstrous Rebellion there, and since the same so abundantly expressed in Characters of a deep Sense, and lively Repentment of the bleeding Condition thereof, give us Hope, in this our deplorable Extremity, to address ourselves unto your sacred Throne; humbly beseeching that it may please your most gracious Majesty, amongst your other weighty Cares, to reflect upon the bleeding Condition of that perishing Kingdom, that timely Relief may be afforded; otherwise your loyal Subjects there must yield their Fortunes a Prey, their Lives a Sacrifice, and their Religion a Scorn, to the merciless Rebels powerfully assisted from abroad.*

*Whilst we live, we rest in your Majesty's Protection; if our Deaths are signed in that Cause, we will die in your Obedience; living and dying ever pray for your Majesty's long and prosperous Reign over us.*

JA. MONTGOMERY,      ARTHUR HILL,  
HARD. WALLER,      AU. MERVINE.

Next was read his Majesty's *Answer*, dated at the Court of Oxford, the first of December, 1642.

*His Majesty hath expressly commanded me to give this Answer to this Petition.*

THAT



' THAT his Majesty, since the Beginning An. 13. Car. 1.  
 ' of that monstrous Rebellion, hath had no 1642.  
 ' greater Sorrow than for the bleeding Condition of  
 ' that his Kingdom; and as he hath, always, labour- December.  
 ' ed that timely Relief might be afforded to the His Majesty's  
 ' same, and consented to all Propositions (how dif- Answer to it.  
 ' advantageous soever to himself) that have been  
 ' offered him for that Purpose; and not only at first  
 ' recommended their Condition to both his Houses  
 ' of Parliament, and immediately, of his own meer  
 ' Motion, sent over several Commissions, and caused  
 ' some Proportion of Arms and Ammunition (which  
 ' the Petitioners well know to have been a great  
 ' support to the *Northern* Parts of that Kingdom)  
 ' to be conveyed to them out of *Scotland*; and not  
 ' only offered to find 10,000 Volunteers to undertake  
 ' that War, but hath often since prest, by many several  
 ' *Messages*, that sufficient Succours might be hasten'd  
 ' thither; and other Matters of smaller Importance  
 ' laid by, which did divert it; and offered, and most  
 ' really intended, in his own Royal Person, to have  
 ' undergone the Danger of that War, for the De-  
 ' fence of his good Subjects, and the Chastisement  
 ' of those perfidious and barbarous Rebels; and, in  
 ' his several Expressions of his Desires of *Treaty* and  
 ' *Peace*, hath declared the present miserable Con-  
 ' dition, and certain future Loss of *Ireland*, to be  
 ' one of his principal Motives, most earnestly to  
 ' desire that the present Distractions of that King-  
 ' dom might be compos'd, and that others would  
 ' concur with him to the same End: So his Ma-  
 ' jesty is well pleas'd that his Offers, Concurrence,  
 ' Actions and Expressions are so rightly understood  
 ' by the Petitioners and those who have employ'd  
 ' them, notwithstanding the groundless and horrid  
 ' Aspersions which have been cast upon him: But  
 ' wishes that, instead of meer general Complaints  
 ' (to which his Majesty can make no Return but of  
 ' Compassion) they could have digested, and offered  
 ' to him any such Desires, by consenting to which  
 ' he might convey, at least in some Degree, Com-  
 ' fort

## 84 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

December.

‘ fort and Life to that gasping Kingdom ; preserve  
‘ his distressed and loyal Subjects of the same from  
‘ inevitable perishing, and the true Protestant Re-  
‘ ligion from being scorned and trampled on by those  
‘ merciless and idolatrous Rebels.

‘ And if the Petitioners can yet think on any  
‘ such, and propose them to his Majesty, he assures  
‘ them that, by his Readiness to consent, and his  
‘ Thanks to them for the Proposal, he will make it  
‘ appear to them, that their most pressing personal  
‘ Sufferings cannot make them more desirous of  
‘ Relief, than his Care of the true Religion, and of  
‘ his faithful Subjects, and of that Duty which  
‘ obliges him, to his Power, to protect both, renders  
‘ him desirous to afford it to them.’

### FALKLAND.

Lastly, was read the *Remedies* which they offer  
for the Preservation of that Kingdom.

THE HUMBLE CONCEPTIONS of Sir *James Mont-*  
*gomery, &c.* upon the Result of their *Petition* to  
his Majesty, and his *Answer* to the same.

The Remedies  
proposed for the  
Relief of Ireland.

UPON our humble Address to his Majesty to petition  
for the Relief of the bleeding Condition of Ire-  
land, his Majesty, after an Expression of his tender  
Resentment of our Sufferings. gave us in Answer, That  
to such general Complaints his Majesty can make no Re-  
turn but in Compassion ; and could wish we had di-  
gested such particular Desires, that he might have gi-  
ven his Royal Assent to convey some Comfort, tho’ but  
in a weak Measure, to the gasping Condition there-  
of : Wherefore, that we might not seem insensible of  
his Majesty’s gracious Answer and free Proposals,  
we have entered into a most narrow Disquisition to  
make some Overtures by humble Desires. as may con-  
duce to the restoring the Glory of that Kingdom, and  
secure the interwoven Dependency of it with his Ma-  
jesty’s other Dominions : And since the Managing of  
the War in that distressed Kingdom hath been committed



# OF ENGLAND. 85

to the Vigilancy and Power of this most Honourable Assembly, and we acknowledge your pious Inclinations in expressing the same; yet, in all Humility to your superior Wisdoms, and in a deep Sense of the imminent Ruin of that Kingdom, if not speedily prevented, we offer these our Desires; which, if they receive your Approbation, we are most happy; if, for Reasons of State, best known to yourselves, they are to be laid aside, then we beg it may be construed as our Zeal, not our Presumption.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
December.

1st, Since this Kingdom is the Fountain from whence the Streams of Safety must flow, and that the present Distractions have so troubled the same; as we earnestly implore the Throne of Grace both for yourselves and us, so we humbly offer these unto your grave Wisdoms, as the subordinate Instruments of a happy, blessed and timely Accommodation here, in which the King and People may rejoice; there being no other visible Way to convey such perfect Health unto that Kingdom, but that it may otherwise immediately be subject to a dangerous Relapse.

2dly, If this Kingdom must yet longer be diverted from that prosperous Peace, to which, to the Envy of other Nations, she hath been so fortunately wedded, we humbly desire that such competent Supplies of Money, Victuals, Cloaths, and Ammunition, may be timely transported to the Army there, without which there is not the least Hopes of longer Subsistence; that such Protestant Blood there yet unspilt, and by your own Commands there employed, may be preserved; that such Garrisons, Sea-Ports, Forts, Artillery, and other Warlike Provisions, may be secured, untill composed Times may afford such large Supplies, as may promise a Reducement of that Kingdom to their due Obedience.

3dly, If neither of these can suit with the present Constitution of these Times, we, in a bleeding Foresight of our miserable distressed Condition, humbly desire (if a fatal Necessity, for Preservation of all that is dear to us and our Posterity, enforce such hard and miserable Conditions upon us, as may prove inconvenient to that, and, in the End, to this Kingdom) that you will be pleased to allow them a favourable Construction.



## 86 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 13. Car. 1.

1642.

December.

*Thus labouring in these Straits, we address ourselves unto your approved Wisdoms for timely Directions in a Matter of so great Concernment.*

These *Petitions* and *Remonstrances*, from the Protestants of *Ireland*, the Lords referred to a Committee, as did also the Commons on their being presented to them. The latter appointed a particular Day for taking them into Consideration; but we do not find any thing further done in this Affair by either House, their own Fears and Distractions being much nearer to them at this Time.

Some Citizens of London complain of an intended Petition for an Accommodation.

Two *Petitions* to Parliament being on Foot, at the same Time, in the City of *London*, but widely different in the Contents of them, Mr. *Shute* appears again in the *Journals* of the Commons, declaring, 'That, with all Thankfulness, the Godly Party acknowledged the open Care of that House to all their Desires: That they did subject their Money and Lives, to the last Drop of Blood in their Veins, to be disposed on by Parliament:

'But they desired to clear themselves from an Imputation cast upon them by the Malignants, *That they petition against Peace*. This, he said, was far from their Intentions; but their Desires were for an honourable and secure Peace: That the Malignant Party went about to get Hands to a *Petition* to procure a *Treaty*, that the Enemy might gain Time to recollect their broken Strength; well knowing that they are so, and that they want Powder and Ammunition.'

He then presented a Copy of the adverse *Petition*, which was read; but, after returning Thanks to Mr. *Shute* and the rest of the Citizens, for this fresh Mark of their Esteem, the further Consideration of this *Petition* was deferred to another Time: And, a Day or two after, Mr. *Shute*, it seems, growing too bold in addressing the House, two of the Members were ordered to acquaint him, That the Commons resented some Expressions used by him, and admonished him how to demean himself hereafter, when he came to give Information to them.

Both

Both Houses of Parliament had been long jealous of their Neighbours the *Dutch*, for sending Supplies of Men, Money, &c. to the King. And Mr. *Strickland*, their Agent in *Holland*, had often presented Memorials to the States on this Subject; when, in truth, the King had nothing from thence, but what was bought up by the Sale of the Queen's Jewels, or her own Money, except what the Prince of *Orange*, her Son-in-Law, supplied: However the Parliament thought necessary, at this Time, to draw up a *Declaration*, and sent it to Mr. *Walter Strickland* at the *Hague*, to be by him presented to the States, to prevent any Supplies coming to the King from that Quarter. The Form of which stands thus in the *Lords Journals* of the 12th of this Month:

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
December.

WE the Lords and Commons, in the Parliament of *England* assembled, did, with much Contentment and Satisfaction, receive the Answer of the High and Mighty Lords, the Lords the States General of the United Provinces, to the *Declaration* presented to them on our Behalf, by *Walter Strickland*, Esq; finding therein many lively Expressions of their Affections to the Peace and Prosperity of this Kingdom, and a due Resentment of our Troubles, and of their Care and Resolution of hindering the Passage of any Men, Munition, or Arms, which might foment and increase the unhappy Differences and Combustions, wherewith this Nation is miserably distracted and distemper'd; which we gladly and thankfully received as a Means of our present Safety, and a Help towards the settling a desired Peace betwixt his Majesty and his most loyal Subjects, and a Foundation of more near and beneficial Conjunction betwixt this Kingdom and that State; for Preservation of the Protestant Religion, and Relief of many oppressed Princes and States, against the common Enemy, both theirs and ours: But this Hope and Contentment hath been much impaired by the frequent

The Parliament's Remonstrance to the Dutch against selling Ammunition to the King.



An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

December,

frequent Experiments we have had of the Trans-  
portation of Men, Munition, and Arms, from  
those Parts which have been employed against us;  
and many undoubted Advertisements of the con-  
tinual Preparations and Endeavours of divers Trai-  
tors and Fugitives of this Nation, now residing  
in the *United Provinces*, to procure great Quantities  
of Treasure and other Warlike Provisions to be con-  
veyed over from those Parts against the Parliament  
and Subjects of this Kingdom; and particularly  
that Colonel *Goring*, Capt. *Byron*, Sir *Francis*  
*Mackworth*, Capt. *Lloyd*, Capt. *Brett*, and Capt.  
*Wyndham*, with divers hundreds of Soldiers, being  
in the Pay of that State, are either lately ship-  
ped, or ready to embark, from some of those  
Parts belonging to the same for *Newcastle*; and  
to join with the Army of Papists and other ill-  
affected Persons raised, in the *North* Parts of this  
Kingdom, against the Parliament, and for the Sub-  
version of the Protestant Religion here; which hath  
exceedingly encouraged that Party, and confirmed  
his Majesty in adhering to those evil Counsellors,  
who have been the Authors of the public  
Troubles and Miseries of this Kingdom, and the  
rejecting the many humble Petitions that he would  
be pleased, according to the Laws of the Kingdom,  
to return to his Parliament; and, by their Coun-  
sel and Advice, to secure our Religion and the  
Laws against the wicked Plots and Designs, which  
have long been and still are in Agitation for the  
Subversion of both; in doing whereof we have of-  
fered, and are still ready, to secure his Majesty's  
Person, Honour and Estate, in any Manner which  
may be expected from true Christians and loyal  
Subjects; and which we solemnly profess, in the  
Presence of Almighty God, to be our real Inten-  
tion and hearty Desires to perform; and that  
whatsoever is pretended and published to the con-  
trary, as if we had admitted any Design, or ex-  
pressed any Endeavours, to the Hurt of his Per-  
son, or Prejudice of his Sovereignty, proceeds from  
the



\* the false and malicious Scandals of such as are An. 18. Car. I.  
 \* Enemies to the Public Peace: 1642.

\* Wherefore we entreat that wise and prudent  
 \* State to fulfil those Promises and Declarations,  
 \* which they have made to us, of restraining and  
 \* prohibiting the Transportation of Men, Arms,  
 \* Money, or any warlike Provisions against us;  
 \* and that they will enquire into the Faults and Ne-  
 \* glects of those Officers, who have suffered so many  
 \* Breaches and Violations thereof; that they will  
 \* be pleased, with all just Favour, to admit of such  
 \* Complaints and Informations as shall be made un-  
 \* to them, by Mr. *Strickland*, in that Behalf; and  
 \* that they will look upon this not only as a Matter  
 \* of Civil Respect to this House, but as that which  
 \* concerns the Honour of God, the Defence of Re-  
 \* ligion, and their own Safety and Liberty; who,  
 \* if we be ruined, will not only be depriv'd of an  
 \* affectionate and useful Alliance, but environ'd  
 \* with such Enemies as, by the same Rules and  
 \* Principles by which they have been active to seek  
 \* our Ruin, will be carried on to all Kind of Prac-  
 \* tices and Endeavours to ruin them.'

December.

The History of this Intestine War will be best known by the Letters of Intelligence, which were sent to the Parliament, from different Parts of the Kingdom; and though they may perhaps, sometimes, exaggerate their own Victories, and other Advantages gained over the King's Forces; yet, at the same Time, as they lay open their own Wants and Necessities, the Insertion of them, in their proper Order of Time, will not only illustrate several Passages in the Course of this Work, but open many Scenes of Importance, hitherto concealed from the Public. We shall begin with a Letter from *Devonshire*, which was, on the 13th of this Month, presented to the House of Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference; and is entered in the *Journals* of the former only. It was addressed to the Lords, and others, of the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom, at *Westminster*,

Right:

An. 13. Car. I.  
1642.

December.

A Letter from  
Devonshire, gi-  
ving an Account  
of the State of  
Affairs in the  
West of England.

Right Honourable,

According to our Duty and Trust reposed in us, we have used our best Endeavours for the Preservation of this County; and although little Assistance hath been afforded us by the People here, to what we expected, yet God, that never fails those that go on in his Way, and rest upon his Power and Goodness, hath so blessed us now in this Time of Straits, that he hath done great Things for us by small Means: To him therefore be the Glory and the Praise.

Upon Tuesday the 29th of November, Captain Thompson and Captain Pymme, by Command of Colonel Ruthen, went to Plimpton, to keep that Town, with their Troops and about 70 Dragoons, and 200 Foot, if they saw it might have been kept without great Hazard; but, the next Day, hearing the Enemies were marching from Tavistock with (as was related to us) 3000 Horse and Foot, and eight Pieces of Ordnance; and finding the Town of Plimpton not to be kept without as great a Force as should come against it, by reason the Town lies so scattering, and several Villages so near it; and so, lest the Enemy should come between them and Plymouth, they drew forth towards the Enemy; but, Night coming on, they could not come to give them Charge, without Hazard and Damage one of another in the Dark; they then went to Plymouth.

The Day after, being Thursday, Colonel Ruthen, with four Troops of Horse and the aforesaid Dragoons, went to Plimpton to view the Town, and to see the Motion of the Enemy; and, finding the Town as was related to him, he then drew towards Plymouth, and stood upon the Lary for the Space of three Hours; forcing the Enemy, who attempted one Charge to have drawn us to their Ambuscades, to fly presently; and durst not (with all their Force, which we judge was at least 2500 Horse and Foot then left, for many ran away the Night before) give us a Charge upon fair Ground; but that Night they went to Plimpton, where they continued till Wednesday the 7th of this present Month.

Colonel



Colonel Ruthen, with the aforesaid four Troops of Horse and about 100 Dragoons, about Three of the Clock in the Morning, marched from Plymouth over Rubart Downs, being a Bye-way to Modbury; where were gathered together, by the Sheriff's Commands, 3 or 4000 Men, some with Arms, and some without; and we came so privately that they did not discover us untill we were within a Mile of the Town; which did so amaze them, that after Sir Ralph Hopton drew up all the Men he could presently get, he, with Sir Nicholas Slanning, ran away and escaped; and after a small Skirmish with those that stood to it, with the Loss of one Man and two hurt, and three or four Horses, we took Prisoners, the Sheriff Sir Edmund Fortescue, and his Brother; Sir Edward Seymour, Knight of the Shire for Devonshire, and his Son; Mr. Basset, Capt. Pomeroy, Capt. Wood, Capt. Penrose, Lieut. Barnes of Exon, and many others.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
December.

From thence we marched that Day, a long March of sixteen Hours on Horseback, with our Prisoners, to Dartmouth, to the Gladding of the Hearts of the good People there; for, while we were upon our March towards Modbury, one Mr. Thomas Leigh was in Treaty with Sir Ralph Hopton, about the Delivery up of the Town, as we were informed; and, by his own Confession since, he had got a Warrant to free his House from Plundering; this Mr. Leigh we have also taken, and, with the rest of the Prisoners, have sent to Plymouth, this Morning, in a Frigate called the Crescent, by one Capt. Plunket.

We ran a great Hazard in this Service, as your Honours may judge, for the Enemy lay on both Sides with all their Forces; Part at Plimpton and Part at Totness: But the Lord carried us along in our Way, and delivered the Enemies of his Truth and of our Liberties, into our Hands, and made many more to fly before us: The Prisoners Colonel Ruthen hath ordered to be sent from Plymouth, with the first fair Wind, to London; and we now lie here, expecting some Force from Exon to join with us; and, if we can have but 1000 Dragoons, we hope to do the Enemy much Damage.

W<sup>a</sup>



## 92 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

December.

*We hear, this Day, that since our Coming hither the Enemy is advanced with the greatest Part of their Force to Totness; what are left at Plimpton we know not. If speedy Supply comes not of Men, Money, and Arms, we fear they will plunder most of the good Towns in this County; and what it may grow to, if God doth not mightily work for us, we know not. Your Honours know of what great Concernment the Keeping of this County is, and we doubt not but the great Need of Assistance will be sufficient to move your Honours to take into Consideration the Premises; which that your Honours would be pleased to do, is the humble Petition of*

Your obedient Servants,

Dartmouth, December 9,  
1642.

WILLIAM RUTHEN.  
ALEXANDER PYM.  
GEORGE THOMPSON.  
ANTHONY ROUSE.  
LEWIS DICK.

At the foregoing Conference the Lords were informed, That, upon Occasion of this Letter, the Commons had passed these *Votes* following, wherein they desired their Lordships Concurrence:

Mr. Holles appointed Commander of those Parts in Chief.

1. ' That Mr. *Holles* be desired to command the Forces in the *Western* Parts in Chief.
2. ' That my Lord General be desired to grant a Commission to Mr. *Holles* accordingly.
3. ' That a Committee of Lords and Commons may recommend to the City the State of the *Western* Counties, and earnestly move them, in regard of the Importance of those Counties, to assist the setting forth of a considerable Strength to be sent into those Parts; that the Letter from *Dartmouth* be communicated to the City of *London*; and that those Committees of both Houses may be a standing Committee, to take Care of the Furtherance and Sending away such Supplies as are resolved to be sent.'

The Lords agreed to all these *Votes*, and the following Peers were appointed to be Committees to join

join with a proportionable Number of the House of Commons, *viz.* the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Bolingbroke*, the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*, the Lords *Grey de Werk*, *Brooke*, and *Wharton*.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
December.

Nothing further occurs worth our Notice till

*December 16.* When a Message came from the Lord General, with a Relation that the Parliament's Forces had taken the Castle and City of *Winchester*, with the Lord *Grandison* and 24 other Commanders Prisoners, 700 Soldiers, 600 Horfe, and 600 Arms, with the Loss of a few Men only. For which Victory the Lord General intended to give public Thanks to God, the next Lord's Day, at *Windsor*, for this great Success without Loss of Blood. His Lordship desired the Lords would give Order that a public Thanksgiving might be observed, the same Day, in *London* and *Westminster*. On which the House ordered, That the Lord Mayor be desired to cause public Thanks to be given within the said City and Liberties; the Justices of Peace for *Westminster* and *Middlesex* were also ordered to do the same, and every where to express their Joy, by ringing of Bells, &c. for this Victory.

The Parliament order a Day of Thanksgiving for the taking of Winchester.

At the same Time a Letter, from Lord *Fairfax*, was read, giving a very particular Account of the State of Affairs in the Northern Counties; which we shall give at Length, as well as all other Matters of Intelligence sent up to Parliament. It was address'd to the Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

May it please your Lordship,

UPON Saturday last, I received a Declaration of Parliament, with a Commission from his Excellency the Earl of *Essex*, to command in Chief over the Forces of the North, and other adjacent Counties; which great Honour and Trust, far above any Ambition or Merit, by your Lordships conferred on me, I shall exercise with all Care and Fidelity; not doubting but that your Lordships will enable me therein, with such other Supplies as the Necessity of the Service shall require, and that represented from hence.

Lord Fairfax's Account of the State of the Northern Counties.

The



An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

December.

*The State of Affairs in these Parts, since my last Dispatch of the first of this Month, stands in this Manner: The Earl of Newcastle is come to York, and joined his Forces to the Earl of Cumberland, making in all, as I am informed, about 8000 Men, Horse and Foot, of which there is about 2000 Horse and Dragoons; a Strength far too potent to be resisted by the small Power which I have here, whereof I send a List inclosed: Our Strength was once estimated by ourselves far greater than now it appears; for upon the Earl of Newcastle's coming over the Tees, Sir Edward Loftus with all the Richmondshire Men, and Sir Henry Anderson with all the Cleveland Men and the rest of the North-Riding, which were estimated at 1000 Men, did all return to their own Houses, save about 130 Men brought hither by Sir Matthew Boynton, some other Gentlemen, and one Troop of Horse raised by Sir Henry Foulis, and about forty Horse more brought hither by Capt. Anderson. Besides this Defect, our Numbers are decreased by Sir Hugh Cholmley, to whom I have sent divers Orders to march Northward, to join with Capt. Hotham and the rest, in resisting the Earl of Newcastle's Entry, before he came into Yorkshire; and, since his Entry, to come to me and the rest of the Army at Tadcaster, but he found such Impediments as he could do neither; and now I hear he is gone to Scarbrough, and taken his Forces with him, which were about 700 Men; Col. Boynton, whose Regiment consisted of 800 Foot, is likewise marched towards Hull, although I sent him divers Orders to march up hither to assist the Forces at Tadcaster, giving me neither Reason of his not coming to me, nor of his March towards Hull. I understood that Sir John Gell had raised 800 Men in Derbyshire, and sent unto him to march hither to our Succour; but I have received an Answer from him, that he is not able yet to stir from thence: From Sir Anthony Irby, nor the Lincolnshire Men, I hear nothing, though I have sent to them express Messengers: So our whole Strength here (upon Return of the former sent into the North) consisting of twenty-one Companies*  
of



*of Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, and one Company of Dragoons, we did send, of them, two Companies of Foot to secure Selby, and one Company to secure Cawood Castle; and quartered the rest, part of them at Wetherby, under Command of Capt. Hotham, whom I have nominated to be Lieutenant-General of the Army, and the rest at Tadcaster, under my own Command.*

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
December.

*Upon Tuesday receiving Intelligence that the Earl of Newcastle, with his whole Forces, intended to fall upon our Quarter at Tadcaster, I sent to Capt. Hotham, to bring up the Forces at Wetherby; which being done, and the Earl of Newcastle's Army come in Sight, we drew our Men into the uttermost Part of our Quarter, where we had raised some Breast-Works for our Musqueteers: There the Fight began about Eleven of the Clock, and so continued, in sharp Dispute, untill about Four of the Clock in the Evening; in which Time there was at least 40,000 Musquet-Shot discharged on both Sides, and great Numbers of Canon-Shot.*

*The Enemy had once won Part of the Town and beaten our Men, and placed some of their Companies in two or three Houses, which did much endanger us; but in the End our Men, with great Courage, forced them out again, recovered and burnt the Houses, and killed many of the Enemy's Men that were there placed; and, in Conclusion, forced the whole Army to retreat, leaving very many of their Men dead, and very great Numbers wounded: The certain Numbers, nor Qualities of the Persons we could not take, but it is generally said by the Country People that there were, at least, one hundred found killed and burnt, and we took seventeen Prisoners in the Fight: On our Part we lost six Men, and Capt. William Lister, a valiant and gallant Gentleman, who was shot with a Musquet Bullet in the Head; we had about twenty more wounded, but lost not one Prisoner in the Battle; though divers of our Men, being negligent of their Duty, stayed behind us when we quitted the Quarter; and so were taken there by the Enemy, the next Day, and made Prisoners. In this Fight our Men behaved themselves*  
with

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

December.

*with very great Resolution, far beyond Expectation, in so much, as I conceive, we might have maintained the Place still, if we had been furnished with Powder and Shot; but having spent in a Manner all our whole Store of Bullet, Match, and Powder, I advised with the Commanders, and, by general Consent, it was thought fit to rise with our Forces, and to march to Cawood and Selby, to secure those Places; and there to receive Supplies of Ammunition and Men: This was accordingly done, and now I am at Selby with Part of the Army, and the rest with Capt. Hotham at Cawood.*

*Yesterday I sent my Son, Sir Thomas Fairfax, with five Companies of Foot, and two Troops of Horse to Leeds; intending he should continue there to secure that Place, and the other Clothing Towns, against the Earl of Newcastle's Forces, if it were possible; but the Enemy's Forces were laid so strong in the Way, as he could not pass, so he only beat up a Quarter of the Enemies in a small Village, took five Prisoners, and retreated to Selby.*

This Letter was ordered, by both Houses, to be printed: And it is highly probable that no more of it was then thought proper to be laid before the Public, because in *Rushworth's Collections* all the following Paragraphs are left out: But are here supplied from the *Lords Journals*.

*Thus, my Lord, I have briefly represented the Condition of the Army at present; which, I must confess, I fear will very suddenly grow worse, if not utterly broken up; and that especially for want of Money, I having not above a Week's Pay provided before-hand, and no visible Means left to raise Maintenance for them, unless I should give the Soldiers free Quarters upon the Country: A Cure, in my Conceit, as dangerous as the Disease, and peradventure not possible to be effected if the Enemy be still Masters of the Field, and cut off our Men as they go abroad to levy Sustainance; which they may do, and yet not able to beat up our Quarters.*



*I have hitherto supported this Army by the Loans and Contributions, for the most Part, of the Parishes of Leeds, Halifax, and Bradford, and some of the small Cloathing Towns adjacent; being the only well-affected People in the Country, who, I much fear, may suffer by this Popish Army of the North; meerly for their good Affection to Religion and the Public Liberty. Of the rest of the Country I was not able to draw any considerable Help, the Enemy having Garrisons in so many Places, who threaten to ruin any that should assist the Parliament and their Cause, with Money or other Helps.*

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
December.

*My Lord, in Sum, the State of the Country is thus: The Enemy is mighty, and Master of the Field, plentifully supplied from his Majesty, and the Popish and Malignant Party, with Monies and all other Necessaries. The well-affected Party, as now it is divided, not considerable; the Aid from Lincolnshire, Derbyshire, and other Counties, very uncertain; the Want of Money here, such as will force us to disband within ten Days. If the Enemy become once absolute Masters of Yorkshire, they will force Contributions and Succours from the Country, which will raise a very formidable Army, and put the whole Cause in Peril, if God do not miraculously defend it.*

*I beseech their Lordships seriously to consider of it, and send such speedy Supplies of Men and Money, as may enable me to go forward in the Service; which I shall not fail to do with a constant Fidelity.*

*Their Lordships have, heretofore, assigned 2000l. for our Succour; but the most Part of it is still at London, where it lies for want of Exchange or Convey: And therefore what shall now be sent must come either by sufficient Convey of Forces by Land, or else by Sea to Hull, and so hither to me. The Scots Officers came hither Yesterday; but now we are so straitened that we have no Men to resort to us to put under their Command, nor have we any Money to pay them.*

*The further Relation of these Affairs I leave to Capt. Hatcher, who follows these Letters purposely to give true Relation to the House of these Affairs; he hath been an Eye-Witness to most of the Passages in*



## 98 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

December.

*this Country, from the first of raising of Arms; to his further Expression I shall leave it, with this Addition only, That if the Country or Cause suffer, their Lordships will discern, by this Relation. in whom the Fault hath been, and impute it accordingly; for nothing hath been omitted, possible to be effected, by*

Your Lordship's most faithful

Dated December 10,  
1642. from Selby.

and humble Servant,

FERD. FAIRFAX.

Some *Votes* were also sent up, this Day, from the Commons, and agreed to by the Lords; amongst which was one for securing all Popish Lords, and others of Quality, within the Cities of *London*, *Westminster*, and *Southwark*; and for effectually and speedily sequestring their Estates, Offices, &c. towards the Advancement of Money for the Army.

Another, That the Earl of *Warwick* and other Commissioners of the Admiralty should take Care to send some Ships to ride upon the *Northern Coasts*, to prevent the Arrival of any Forces or Ammunition, from *Holland* or elsewhere; the Parliament having then received fresh Intelligence of such being ready to embark from those Parts.

It was *ordered*, also, That if any Colonel, Captain, or other Officers of *Scotland*, should bring into *England* any Forces of Horse or Foot, by Contract of their Agents there, to oppose the Army of *Pe-pists* and their Adherents now raised, they should be entertained.

*December 17.* There had been some Time canvassing, in both Houses, certain Articles, as Propositions for a Peace, to be presented to the King; and, this Day, the remaining Part of them was debated in the House of Lords; but the farther Consideration thereof deferred to the 19th.

Some Prisoners having been taken at *Brentford*, *Marlborough*, and elsewhere, the King now resolved to proceed against them in a legal Way, for  
High

High Treason. The famous Col. *John Lilburn* An. 18. Car. 1. 1642. before Judge *Heath*; and was indicted for actual levying War against the King, by the Name of *John Lilburn*, Yeoman. He demurred to this Indictment, on account of his being a Gentleman of an antient Family in the Bishoprick of *Durham*; the Record was therefore amended, and he pleaded, That what he did was in his own Defence, and by Command of Parliament; and that he never had nor ever would bear Arms against the King, &c. He and others were found guilty; but, to prevent the Execution of them, the Parliament threatened the *Lex Talionis*, and published a *Declaration* in this Form:

December.

Col. Lilburn, &c. having been convicted, at Oxford, for High Treason,

‘ **W** Hereas Information hath been given to the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, That *Clifton Catesby*, *John Lilburn*, and *Robert Vivers*, Captains in the Army, raised by Authority of both Houses of Parliament, for the necessary Defence of the true Protestant Religion, the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, under the Command of *Robert Earl of Essex*, Captain General thereof, were taken Prisoners by the Forces raised against the Parliament, in executing their several Duties and Services, according to the *Ordinances* of both the said Houses, and after carried Prisoners to *Oxford Goal*; and, having been most barbarously used, are now questioned and proceeded against by way of Indictment, before Sir *Robert Heath*, Knight, one of his Majesty’s Justices of the King’s Bench, and others, by Colour of some Commission or other Authority from his Majesty, for High Treason and other supposed Misdemeanors; whereas many have been taken Prisoners by the Parliament’s Forces, in the Act of War against the Parliament; which, by the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, is Rebellion and High Treason against the King and Kingdom, and the Actors therein Traitors; and yet none of them

To prevent their Execution the Parliament declare they will make Reprizals.

An. 18. Car. 1.<sup>e</sup> hath hitherto been put to Death, or otherwise  
1642. severely dealt with by the Parliament:

December.

‘ It is therefore *ordered* and *declared* by the said  
‘ Lords and Commons, That all such Indictments  
‘ and other Proceedings against the said Capt. *Cates-*  
‘ *by*, Capt. *Lilburn*, and Capt. *Vivers*, or against  
‘ Capt. *Wingate*, who have done faithful and good  
‘ Service to the Common-wealth; or against any  
‘ other Person, or Persons, who have done, or shall  
‘ do, Service in the said Army; or for the Raising  
‘ of any Money, Plate, Horse, or Arms, for the  
‘ Maintenance thereof; or otherwise in Execution  
‘ of, or Pursuance of, an *Order* or *Ordinance* of both  
‘ or either of the said Houses of Parliament, for the  
‘ Defence of the Public Safety, are unjust and illegal; and the said Sir *Robert Heath*, and all other  
‘ Commissioners, Justices, Sheriffs, Jurors, and  
‘ other Officers and Ministers of Justice, and other  
‘ Persons whatsoever, are hereby required and in-  
‘ joined to surcease any further Proceeding against  
‘ the said Persons before named, or any other, for  
‘ any the Causes aforesaid, upon the said Indict-  
‘ ments or otherwise.

‘ And the said Lords and Commons do further  
‘ *declare*, That if the said Persons before named, or  
‘ any of them, or any other, shall be put to Death,  
‘ or other Hurt or Violence offered to their or any  
‘ of their Persons; for, or by reason of any such  
‘ Service done, or to be done, by, or according to  
‘ any *Order* or *Ordinance* of both or either the said  
‘ Houses, the like Punishment shall be inflicted by  
‘ Death, or otherwise, upon such Prisoners as have  
‘ been, or shall be, taken by the Forces raised by  
‘ Authority of both Houses of Parliament; and if  
‘ the said Sir *Robert Heath*, or any other Com-  
‘ missioner, Justice, Sheriff, Juror, or other Of-  
‘ ficer, or Minister of Justice, or other Person, shall  
‘ do contrary to this *Ordinance* in any the Premises,  
‘ they and every of them for so doing shall be  
‘ proceeded against, and dealt with, as Enemies to  
‘ the King and Kingdom.’

*Dec-*



December 19. The Lords went again on the *Propositions* for Peace, and a great Debate ensued thereupon. The third Article, concerning Delinquents, was read, and put to the Question, Whether the House shall make this Proposition to the King, That All which are impeached by the House of Commons, at this Time, shall be left to take their Trial by Parliament? It passed in the Negative.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
December.

On the same Day the City of *London*, by an Order of Common Council, presented a *Petition* to the House of Lords and Commons, in which was inclosed another to his Majesty; which, after their Approbation, they desired might be conveyed to him. At the same Time was presented another *Petition* from many Citizens and Inhabitants of that City. Both these were for Peace and a speedy Agreement: Upon the former the House of Commons passed two *Votes*, to which the Lords consented, declaring their great Approbation thereof, and that it was fit this *Petition* to the King should be presented to him. The other met with a quite different Reception. From the Fate of these two *Petitions* the Reader will be enabled to form a Judgment of the Temper and Disposition of the Parliament. Neither of them are mentioned in the *Collections* of the Times; but we meet with a Copy of the latter in the *Lords Journals*.

To the Right Honourable the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of divers Citizens, Inhabitants of the City of *London* and Liberties thereof, with the Inhabitants of the Borough of *Southwark* and Places adjacent,

Sheweth,

THAT the present Sense of our Miseries, and the Apprehension of the inevitable Ruin both of the Church and Common-wealth, make us become Suitors to this Honourable Assembly, the likeliest Means, under God, for our Relief; to consider our distressed Estate, and provide a speedy Remedy for our present and fu-

A Petition from the several Citizens of London to the Parliament, for Peace;

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1643.

December.

ture Evils; earnestly to desire you to weigh the Care and Judgment of your Predecessors, who, by a known Law, settled and preserved our Protestant Religion, our Liberties and Properties, with a right Understanding between King and Subject, which produced Peace and Plenty in our Estates; and to reflect, with serious Thoughts, upon our present Dislempers, violating Religion by Papists and Sectaries, engaging our Nation in a civil and destructive War, invading our Laws and Liberties, endangering all our Lives, and utterly disabling us to relieve our distressed Brethren in Ireland.

*We beseech you likewise to consider the Effects of a Civil War, as the Destruction of Christians, and the unnatural Effusion of Blood; Fathers against Sons; Brothers by Brothers, Friends by Friends, slain; then Famine and Sicknes, the Followers of a continued War, making Way for a general Confusion and Invasion by a foreign Nation; whilst our Treasure is exhausted, our Trade lost, and the Kingdom dispeopled: These Things, weighed and enlarged by your Wisdoms, we doubt not will be as strong a Motive in you to labour, as in us to desire, a speedy Peace and happy Accommodation.*

*Wherefore we humbly crave that, not lending Ear to any the Fomenters of the present War, under what Pretence soever; or remembering ought that may increase Jealousies or continue Divisions between his Majesty and the Houses of Parliament; you will tender his Majesty, according to his Royal Intimations, such Propositions for Accommodation as he may, with Honour and Safety to the whole Kingdom accept; for the effecting whereof we shall be ready to assist you with the best and utmost of our Abilities; and, whilst you endeavour for Peace, we shall send up our Prayers to Heaven for the Blessing of Peace upon you and all that desire it.*

The Petitioners withdrew, and the House took into Consideration what Answer to give to their Petition; and, after Debate, the Gentleman-Usher was



was commanded to let those that brought this *Petition* know, That their Lordships have received a Complaint against this *Petition* from the House of Commons, and will take the same into Consideration: And a Committee was appointed to consider of, and to take Examinations about, the managing and procuring of this *Petition*.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1632.  
December.

Which is ill received by them,

The Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council of the City, upon presenting their own *Petition* to the Commons, protested against this latter, saying, They had damned it by a public Act; and did desire that when hereafter any *Petition* came to Parliament, in the Name of the City of *London*, and was not attested by the Hand of the Town-Clerk, it might be rejected, and not esteemed as a *Petition* from their City.

And protested against by the Lord Mayor, &c.

Dec. 20. Although a *Vote* had passed Yesterday concerning Delinquents, That they were not All to be included in their designed *Propositions* to the King for Peace, the House of Commons had got that *Order* over-ruled in some Measure: For tho' a Committee of Lords had been appointed to consider of the naming of such Delinquents as were to be excepted out of their Act of Grace, who this Day brought in their Opinion, That those only who had been impeached before the first of *January* last, should be proceeded against in Parliament: Yet the Lord *Digby*, particularly, though he had been impeached since that Time, was left to the Judgment of Parliament.

The Lords resolve to except some Delinquents from Trial by Parliament.

Then the Committee proceeded to name such Persons as were fit to be removed from the King; as, the Marquis of *Hertford* to lose his Office about the Prince; the Earl of *Bristol*, the Lord *Herbert* of *Ragland*, (Eldest Son of the Earl of *Worcester*) Mr. *Piercy*, Mr. *Fermyn*, and Mr. *Wilmot*, to be removed from Court. And, as the *Journal* says, after a long Debate, the following Question was put: 'Those that are of Opinion to agree with the Committee, That, at this Time, such as the Committee have named to be impeached by the House of

of



An. 18. Car. I. of Commons, should be left to the Trial of Parliament, omitting the rest of those which are impeached, say *Content*; and it passed affirmatively. On which the following Lords entered their Dissent; and, after repeating the two last Questions of Yesterday and To-day, carried against them, they proceeded to say,

A Protest enter'd thereupon.

WE, whose Names are subscribed, do conceive that the Demanding, by this House, of some to be left to Justice, and Leaving out of others, who are under the like Impeachment of High Treason, and have been, by Force of Arms, protected from being brought to a Trial, in the highest Court of Judicature, is an Example of very ill Consequence: Because we conceive that it is not proper for this House to move the House of Commons, in the Stopping of their Proceedings upon Impeachments; and that it doth not only give Encouragement to a King to attempt the like Stoppage of Justice by Force, and, from this Precedent, to stand upon the Protecting of Persons impeached; but to Subjects also, who may be induced to undertake any Thing in Hopes of Impunity, even from the Desires of this House; which hath not demanded any one of those to be left to Trial, who, since his Majesty's Going to *York*, have been impeached of High Treason, for actual levying War against the King and Kingdom.

Upon these, amongst other Reasons, we have demanded our Right of *Protestation*; and do now accordingly enter it, to clear ourselves from any Inconveniences that may follow from these *Votes*; which are, in our Opinion, very prejudicial to the Privileges of Parliament and the Liberty of the Subject.

WARWICK.	BOLINGBROKE.
PETERBOROUGH.	WILLOUGHBY of Par-
MANCHESTER.	ham.
SAY and SELE.	BROOKE.
WHARTON.	GREY de Werk,

Nex.  
1

Next was read the Whole of the *Propositions* for Peace, which were agreed on by the Lords, and ordered to be sent down to the Commons; but, as they laid a long Time in that House, being not presented to the King till above a Month after this, and were also much altered from this Copy, it cannot be amiss to give it here, and postpone the other to its proper Place. By this Means may be evidently seen, That the Lords were much more inclined to an Agreement than the Commons, by the Softness of these *Propositions*, and the Harshness of the other.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
December,

The said *Propositions* were as follows:

‘ YOUR Majesty’s most humble and faithful  
 ‘ Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Par-  
 ‘ liament assembled, having always in their Thoughts  
 ‘ the Glory of God, your Majesty’s Honour, and  
 ‘ the Prosperity of your People; and being most  
 ‘ desirous to put an End to these Miseries which  
 ‘ now infect, and further threaten, a Desolation of  
 ‘ this Kingdom if not timely prevented; and that  
 ‘ they may provide for the Safety of your Majesty’s  
 ‘ Royal Person, and for the Defence of your loyal  
 ‘ Subjects, against all such as would, in their Mind,  
 ‘ destroy the Worship of God in his true Religion,  
 ‘ the Laws of this Land, and the Rights and Privi-  
 ‘ leges of Parliament; and also to settle such Way  
 ‘ for the future, as the like or other Distractions  
 ‘ and Distempers may not again break forth, do most  
 ‘ humbly beseech your Majesty to accept of and  
 ‘ grant these their most humble Desires and *Pro-  
 ‘ positions*, as the most necessary and effectual Means  
 ‘ thereunto, through God’s Blessing; and that  
 ‘ thereby your Majesty may live in as great Honour  
 ‘ as any of your Royal Ancestors have done, and  
 ‘ be as formidable to your Enemies as any of your  
 ‘ Predecessors have been; and that your Subjects,  
 ‘ with Peace and Plenty, may, with Gladness of  
 ‘ Heart, perform their Duties to God and your Ma-  
 ‘ jesty,

The *Propositions*  
 to the King for  
 Peace, as drawn  
 up by the House  
 of Lords,



Ann. 12. Car. I.  
1642.

December.

of Commons, should be left to the Trial of Parliament, omitting the rest of those which are impeached, say *Content*; and it passed affirmatively. On which the following Lords entered their Dissent; and, after repeating the two last Questions of Yesterday and To-day, carried against them, they proceeded to say,

A Protest enter'd  
thereupon.

WE, whose Names are subscribed, do conceive that the Demanding, by this House, of some to be left to Justice, and Leaving out of others, who are under the like Impeachment of High Treason, and have been, by Force of Arms, protected from being brought to a Trial, in the highest Court of Judicature, is an Example of very ill Consequence: Because we conceive that it is not proper for this House to move the House of Commons, in the Stopping of their Proceedings upon Impeachments; and that it doth not only give Encouragement to a King to attempt the like Stoppage of Justice by Force, and, from this Precedent, to stand upon the Protecting of Persons impeached; but to Subjects also, who may be induced to undertake any Thing in Hopes of Impunity, even from the Desires of this House; which hath not demanded any one of those to be left to Trial, who, since his Majesty's Going to *York*, have been impeached of High Treason, for actual levying War against the King and Kingdom.

Upon these, amongst other Reasons, we have demanded our Right of *Protestation*; and do now accordingly enter it, to clear ourselves from any Inconveniences that may follow from these *Votes*; which are, in our Opinion, very prejudicial to the Privileges of Parliament and the Liberty of the Subject.

WARWICK.

PETERBOROUGH.

MANCHESTER.

SAY and SELE.

WHARTON.

BOLINGBROKE.

WILLOUGHBY of Parham.

BROOKE.

GREY de Werk,

Nex<sup>t</sup>



Next was read the Whole of the *Propositions* for Peace, which were agreed on by the Lords, and ordered to be sent down to the Commons; but, as they laid a long Time in that House, being not presented to the King till above a Month after this, and were also much altered from this Copy, it cannot be amiss to give it here, and postpone the other to its proper Place. By this Means may be evidently seen, That the Lords were much more inclined to an Agreement than the Commons, by the Softness of these *Propositions*, and the Harshness of the other.

An. 13. Car. I.

1642.

December.

The said *Propositions* were as follows:

“YOUR Majesty’s most humble and faithful  
 “Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Par-  
 “liament assembled, having always in their Thoughts  
 “the Glory of God, your Majesty’s Honour, and  
 “the Prosperity of your People; and being most  
 “desirous to put an End to these Miseries which  
 “now infect, and further threaten, a Desolation of  
 “this Kingdom if not timely prevented; and that  
 “they may provide for the Safety of your Majesty’s  
 “Royal Person, and for the Defence of your loyal  
 “Subjects, against all such as would, in their Mind,  
 “destroy the Worship of God in his true Religion,  
 “the Laws of this Land, and the Rights and Privi-  
 “leges of Parliament; and also to settle such Way  
 “for the future, as the like or other Distractions  
 “and Distempers may not again break forth, do most  
 “humbly beseech your Majesty to accept of and  
 “grant these their most humble Desires and *Pro-  
 positions*, as the most necessary and effectual Means  
 “thereunto, through God’s Blessing; and that  
 “thereby your Majesty may live in as great Honour  
 “as any of your Royal Ancestors have done, and  
 “be as formidable to your Enemies as any of your  
 “Predecessors have been; and that your Subjects,  
 “with Peace and Plenty, may, with Gladness of  
 “Heart, perform their Duties to God and your Ma-  
 “jesty,

The Propositions  
 to the King for  
 Peace, as drawn  
 up by the House  
 of Lords.

An. 13. Car. 1.  
1642.

December.

‘ jesty, and enjoy their just Liberties under your  
‘ most gracious Protection.

‘ That your Majesty will be pleased to give  
‘ the Royal Assent unto the Bill for taking away  
‘ superstitious Innovations,

‘ To the Bill against scandalous Ministers,

‘ To the Bill against Pluralities,

‘ To the Bill for a Consultation to be had with  
‘ godly, religious, and learned Divines : And

I. ‘ That your Majesty would be pleased to pro-  
‘ mise to pass such other good Bills, for settling of  
‘ the Church Government, as, upon Consultation  
‘ with the Assembly of the said Divines, shall be  
‘ resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, and,  
‘ by them, to be presented unto your Majesty :  
‘ And that your Majesty will confirm the *Decla-*  
‘ *ration*, passed in both Houses, for the taking away  
‘ of Bishops, Deans and Chapters; and that such  
‘ unnecessary Ceremonies, as are offensive to tender  
‘ Consciences, may not be pressed upon your Ma-  
‘ jesty’s good Subjects, as hath already been graci-  
‘ ously promised by your Majesty.

II. ‘ That the Rights, Liberties, and Privileges  
‘ of Parliament may be no ways infringed, but  
‘ maintained.

III. ‘ That such as have been impeached by the  
‘ House of Commons, before the first Day of *Ja-*  
‘ *nuary*, 1641, and likewise the Lord *Digby* shall be  
‘ left to their due Trial in Parliament; that the  
‘ Marquis of *Hertford* may be removed from his  
‘ Charge about the Prince; the Earl of *Bristol*, the  
‘ Lord *Herbert* of *Rogland*, Mr. *Piercy*, Mr. *Jer-*  
‘ *myn*, and Mr. *Wilnot*, may be removed from the  
‘ Verge of the Court.

IV ‘ That your Majesty will be pleased to pass  
‘ an Act in such Manner, as may vindicate and  
‘ secure the Privilege of Parliament from the ill  
‘ Consequences of the late Precedent, in the Charge  
‘ and Proceeding against the Lord *Kimbolton*, now  
‘ Earl of *Manchester*, and the five Members of the  
‘ House of Commons.

V. ‘ That



V. ' That your Majesty, upon the humble Petition of both Houses of Parliament, will be pleased to grant your Letters Patent to

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

December.

' to be Chief Justice of your Court of *King's Bench* ;  
' to the Lord Chief Justice *Banks*, to be continued  
' to be Chief Justice of your Court of *Common Pleas* ; to Mr. Justice *Foster*, to be Chief Baron of  
' your Court of *Exchequer* ; and that Mr. Justice  
' *Reeve* may be continued one of the Judges in the  
' Court of *Common Pleas* ; to Mr. Justice *Bacon*,  
' to be continued one of the Judges in your Court of  
' *King's Bench* ; to Mr. Serjeant *Wylde*, to be one  
' of the Judges of your Court of *King's Bench* ; to  
' Mr. Serjeant *Rolle*, to be one of the Judges of  
' your Court of *King's Bench* ; to Mr. Serjeant  
' *Pheasant*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of  
' *Common Pleas* ; to Mr. Serjeant *Atkins*, to be one  
' of the Judges of your Court of *Common Pleas* ;  
' to Mr. Serjeant *Creswell*, to be one of the Barons  
' of the Court of *Exchequer* ; to Mr. *Samuel Brown*,  
' and Mr. *John Puleston*, to be two of the Barons  
' of your Court of *Exchequer* ; and that all of them  
' may hold their Places *quamdiu se bene gesserint*.

VI. ' That such Justices of the Peace, that  
' have been lately out of the Commission of the  
' Peace in the several Counties of *England* and  
' *Wales*, may be restored ; and that the Lord-Keeper  
' may be commanded to revoke the Commission,  
' and omit such as are unfit for that Government.

VII. ' That your Majesty's Royal Assent may be  
' given unto such Acts, as shall be advised by both  
' Houses of Parliament, for the satisfying and pay-  
' ing of the Debts wherein the Kingdom now stands  
' engaged.

VIII. ' That all Acts of the Council-Table,  
' that do concern Government, may be attested  
' under the Hands of those who give the Advice.

IX. ' That an Act of Oblivion may pass for all  
' Crimes and Offences committed, or pretended to  
' be committed, excepting the Persons desired to be  
' brought to their Trial in Parliament.

X. ' That



An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

December.

X. 'That your Majesty's general Pardon may be granted to all, excepting such as before named.

XI. 'It is humbly desired that your Majesty will declare your Pleasure, whether you will not have a Cessation from all Manner of Acts of Hostility for fourteen Days; the Cessation to commence from such a Time, as shall be agreed on by your Majesty and the two Houses of Parliament.

XII. 'That the Laws against Popish Recusants may be put in due Execution.'

Dec. 22. *Petitions* came up from different Parts of the Kingdom to the Lords, all crying loudly for Peace. To which the Lords returned this *Answer*: 'That they approved of their Desires for Peace and Agreement between the King and Parliament, which was always desired and endeavoured by that House; and that they were then about it, and hoped for good Success.'

The same Day a Letter from the Earl of *Stamford* was read, giving an Account of the Securing of *Bristol* to the Parliament; and that he was raising a very considerable Number of Forces in those Parts.

Nothing else material occurs in the *Journals*, till the last Day of this Month; when a new Subscription, for the further Maintenance of the Army, seems to be warmly promoted in the House of Lords. And the Peers underwritten subscribed their Names and Sums, as follows:

A Subscription in the House of Lords, for Main- tenance of the Parliament's Ar- my.	L.		L.	
Earl of <i>Warwick</i> —	500	Ld. Visc. <i>Say and Sele</i>	100	
Earl of <i>Manchester</i>	300	Lord <i>Brooke</i> —	200	
Earl of <i>Bolingbroke</i>	200	Lord <i>Fielding</i> —	500	

It was *ordered*, also, That the Speaker of that House should move, on the first of *January* next, to know the Answer of those Lords who have not subscribed to the Maintenance of the Army, as well as the Assistants also attending this House.

That

That the Parliament was driven to great Straits for want of Money at this Time, is also evident from a Message sent to the House of Commons, this Day, importing, That there was a great Necessity for Money, and that the City of *London* was willing to make a further Subscription, if the Members of Parliament would set a good Example in that Particular. That divers Lords had already subscribed to this Purpose, and the Speaker was ordered to know the Answers of those who have not; and others were appointed to take the Subscriptions of the Assistants this Afternoon; therefore the Commons were desired to take the same Course with their Members, that it may be recommended, with all Expedition, to the City of *London* to do the like.

An. 13. Car. I.  
1642.  
December.

Thus ended the Calendar Year of 1642, and a very busy Year it was, both in respect of the various Multiplicity of Parliamentary Affairs, or rather Military Affairs transacted in Parliament, and the dismal Apprehensions each Party in the Kingdom must be in, of being plundered, burnt out, ruined, or slain by the other: So that the safest *Asylum* for any single Person was, then, a Station in the King's or the Parliament's Army.

All the Prisons, in and about *London*, were full of *Malignants* and *Delinquents*, as they were then called by the Parliament; insomuch that, besides the common Prisons, *Windſor* Castle, *London* House, the Lord *Petre's* House in the City, the Deanery of *St. Paul's*, *Ely* House, and, lastly, *Lambeth* House, as *Winchester* House in *Southwark* had been before, were made use of for that Purpose.

The King at this Time kept his Court at *Oxford*, his Army being quartered conveniently in the neighbouring Towns, this Season not being proper for Action. Hither great Numbers of both Houses of Parliament had resorted to him, insomuch that, in a short Time, they constituted a Kind of separate House of Lords and Commons of themselves; as will be shewn hereafter.—But now to proceed with our *Journals*:

Jan-

## 110 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 13. Car. I.  
1642.

January.

A new Bill proposed relating to the Militia.

*January 2.* Being *Monday*, the Earl of *Northumberland*, from a Committee appointed to consider of a Bill to settle the *Militia*, reported what they had done in this Business. And great Difficulties appearing hereupon, the Lords thought fit to respite the offering any Bill for that Purpose till the King should return to Parliament; but, in the mean time, to make ready a Bill which should declare, That the King should not dispose of the Power of the *Militia* without the Parliament, nor the Parliament without the King; that both Sides might have an equal Power, to prevent all Jealousies.

*Jan. 3.* The Scots Commissioners presented two Memorials to Parliament, complaining, That their Army in *Ireland*, on *English* Pay, were almost starved for want of it; and that 40,000 *l.* the remaining Part of the Brotherly Assistance-Money, tho' long due, was yet unpaid. The Parliament excused both these Neglects; laid the Blame on the Civil War and the present Distractions of the Times; but promised as speedy a Payment as possible, according to that Justice and Honour which they owed to all Men, but in a more especial and affectionate Manner to their Brethren of *Scotland*.

*Jan. 4.* The Commons sent up a Message to the Lords, and with it a Letter they had just received from their General, the Lord *Fairfax*, in the *North*; which we here give in its own Words. It was addressed to one of their Members:

A Letter from Lord Fairfax concerning the Proceedings of the two Armies in Yorkshire.

*I* Have of late addressed some Relations of my Proceedings here, to the Committee appointed for the Safety of the Kingdom; being assured that they would, from Time to Time, impart them to both Houses of Parliament; that such Consideration might be had of them as the Necessity of the Cause requires. Now I address this Relation to you, not doubting but it shall be imparted to both Houses of Parliament and to the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom; that the Affairs of this Country being known to them all, they may



may be provided for as their *Wisdoms* shall see convey- An. 18. Car. I.  
nient. 1642.

January.

I have, formerly, advertised that the Earl of Newcastle's Army have seiz'd upon Leeds, where they plundered the well-affected Party, and raised a very great Sum of Money out of those that they could draw to compound for their Securities. From Leeds they marched, on Sunday the 18th of this Month, with five Troops of Horse, six Companies of Dragoons, 200 Foot, and two Drakes of the Earl of Newcastle's Army; besides Sir William Saville, and divers other Gentlemen of Yorkshire and their Forces, that join'd themselves with them. They came to Bradford about Ten o'Clock in the Morning, intending to surprize the Town in Time of Prayer; but the Town having Scouts abroad, had Notice of their coming, and gave the Alarm to the Country, who came in to their Succour from the Parts adjoining; yet they had not in all above 80 Muskets, the rest being arm'd with Clubs, and such rustick Weapons, with which small Force they put the Cause to Trial with the great Strength of the Enemy; who planted their Drakes, and discharged each of them seventeen Times upon the Town, untill a Town's Man, with a Fowling-piece, kill'd one of the Canoneers; and then they all, with great Courage, issued from the Town upon the Enemy, killed many of them, took about 30 Prisoners, and forced the rest to retreat; leaving 40 of their Muskets and a Barrel of their Powder, with much other Provisions, behind them; and this with the Loss of but three Bradford Men.

The Report of the Country is, That the Enemy, amongst those that were killed, lost Col. Evers, Captain Bynns, and another Commander; that Col. Goring, General of the Horse, with the Earl of Newcastle, was wounded; that Serjeant-Major Carr is taken Prisoner; and it is generally reported that 150 more ran away upon the Retreat, and are not since returned to Leeds.

In this Victory the Hand and Power of God was most evident, the Town being open on all Sides, and of itself not being defensible; assaulted on every Side by a mali-

112 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

*malicious and bloody Enemy, and defended by a few half-naked Men; there being in the Town not above 80 Muskets before they got 40 more by the Spoils of the Enemy: So that the Slaughter was, for the most Part, with Clubs, and Seythes mounted on Poles, when they clos'd and came to Hand-Blows. With this Defeat the Enemies are so enraged, that they threaten utter Ruin to Bradford; whereupon the Town's Men sent to me for Succour of Men and Arms, and I have sent my Son, with Sir Henry Foulis, to them with three Troops of Horse and 120 Dragoons. These are safely arrived there, and received with great Joy and Acclamation of the Country, who flock to him, and offer themselves most willingly to serve against the Popish Enemies, if Arms could be furnished to them. He hath already surprized some Victuals sent in, upon Warrants, to the Enemy at Leeds, by the over-awed Country; and he hath sent Capt. Mildmay with his Troop of Horse and some Dragoons into Craven, to stop the raising of Money and Forces in that Country; which is attempted by the Earl of Cumberland, who is lately retired from York to Skipton; and I hope he will leave nothing unattempted that may conduce to the Safety of the Country, so far as can be expected from the few Forces he hath with him.*

*The Earl of Newcastle proceeds in raising Money, by all the illegal and oppressive Ways that can be devised; and, both by the Commission of Array, and by Presses made in the Churches, raiseth all the Men he can. This being attempted in Cleveland by certain of the disaffected Gentry, their Expectation was prevented; the Resort and Appearance of the People stopped, and the Commissioners themselves forced to fly, by Sir Hugh Cholmley, to whom I sent special Order for that End. I hear he hath also been at Malton, and there surprized both the Receiver and the Monies raised out of the Country thereabouts, by those Warrants. I cannot hear, certainly, what Monies or Men the Earl of Newcastle hath raised since he came into this Country; but he grants Commissions to sundry convicted Recusants to raise Troops of Horse, as Sir John Middleton, Sir Walter Vavasor, Mr. Tindale,*



dale, and others; who, I hear, are now raising their Men: And I hear daily Complaints of horrible Plunders and Spoils done by that Army, and those by special Order, and in such Manner, as, if they be not speedily restrained, and this Popish Army expelled the Country, they will not only utterly ruin all Trade and Commerce, but discourage and disable all Husbandry; and so bring Poverty and Famine upon the Land.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
January.

Since my last Estimate of our Forces, there is little Alteration of them; only 120 Dragoons of Sir Anthony Irby's Regiment are come hither, which I sent to Bradford with my Son. Col. Boynton, with his Regiment, being 500 Foot and 40 Horse, are come hither; but Captain Crompton's Dragoons, as he complains to me, are all run away; so I have given him a new Commission to raise a Company. For any other Supplies, I cannot expect them untill the Aids come from the South; for Sir Hugh Cholmley, as I hear, cannot bring 130 Men; and those are so much desired to be retained in the North-Riding, to interrupt the raising of Men in that Country in Aid of the Earl of Newcastle, as I do not press his March this Way; and for the Lincolnshire Aids, expected to be sent us, I cannot hope for any from them; having this Day received a Letter by Captain Hatcher, wherein the Earl of Lincoln, and the Committee at Lincoln, write they are not able to defend themselves against 500 Foot, three Troops of Dragoons, and two Troops of Horse, with seven Pieces of Ordnance, sent to Newark by the Earl of Newcastle; and therefore desire Help from me.

I have formerly represented to the Committee the extreme Want of Money here, and how impossible it is to raise any, the Enemy being Master of the Field. I have sent to Sir John Hotham, Sir Edward Rhodes, Sir Hugh Cholmley, and Capt. Hotham; but they all alledge great Necessities of their own, and help me with none; so that I am put upon such Straits, as seldom happen, to retain an Army together, and withall serve against a more potent Enemy; having neither Money to pay them, nor free Quarters to give them. If a speedy Supply of Money do not come, I much fear



After the reading of this Letter, an *Order* was made to send the Lord *Fairfax* a Supply, and to trust to his known Justice and faithful Service for the due Management of it.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

January.

There was nothing material done in the House of Lords for some Days after this, except an *Order* made for quashing an Agreement which had been entered into by both Parties, in *Cheshire*, in order to keep Peace in that County; it being urged, as in the like Case before in *Yorkshire*, which we have particularly taken Notice of in our last Volume, That it was dangerous to the whole Kingdom for one County to stand neuter, and withdraw itself from the Assistance of the rest.

An Agreement of  
Neutrality in  
Cheshire, quash'd  
by Parliament.

A *Declaration* was also made and agreed to, for raising more Money by a fresh Subscription, and that the Speakers of both Houses were to take the Answers of the Members, &c. of each, to learn what they will subscribe for the Maintenance of the Army. The Lord Mayor of *London* was likewise ordered to call a Common Hall, and some Members of both Houses were appointed to go thither, to exhort the Citizens to do the like.

Means for raising  
more Money for  
Maintenance of  
the Army.

*Jan. 10.* A Case happened in the House of Commons, which, though trivial in itself, may not be improper to take Notice of. In one of the Debates relating to the *Propositions* for Peace, the House divided on the Question; when the Tellers came to make their Report of the Numbers, they could not agree upon it, three being of one Opinion, and the fourth of another. The House then divided again, and all that were not present at the first Telling were required to withdraw. The Tellers reported the Numbers to be thirty-three on each Side: But one Member present at the first Division and Telling, yet came not in upon the second Telling, till the Numbers were given in and reported by Mr. Speaker, was desired to be counted; a Debate arose whether he should or not, coming not in till the Report was made: The House divided again on this Question; but, before it was told, the Noes yielded.

Remarkable Di-  
visions on the  
Propositions for  
Peace.

An. 28. Car. 1. ed, and that Member, being added to the Yeas,  
1642. made their Number thirty-four.

January.

Many Copies of *Instructions* are entered at this Time for the Parliament's Lord-Lieutenants, and other Agents in the several Counties; and also a second *Declaration* concerning the King's *Commission of Array*\*: All of them too tedious for our Purpose: But

A Relation of the Manner of presenting a Petition from the City of London to the King at Oxford.

On the 12th of this Month a Relation was read in the House of Lords, sent up by the Commons, concerning the Carrying and Delivery of a *Petition* from the City of *London*, to the King at *Oxford*. This Relation was made by the City's Commissioners appointed for that Purpose; and, since the Consequences of it are somewhat curious, deserves a Place in these Enquiries. The *Petition* is not entered in the *Journals*, being a Work of Common Council only; but we have met with a printed Copy of it, and the King's *Answer* to it, with some Speeches made by a Committee of both Houses, sent to attend the reading of them in the *Guildhall*, which we shall give: And first the Relation itself, as it stands in the *Journals*:

‘ AT this Common Council Sir George Garret,  
‘ Sir George Clark, Knights and Aldermen,  
‘ Mr. Peter Jones, Mr. George Henley, Mr. Richard  
‘ Bateman, and Mr. Barney Reames, Commissioners lately appointed by this Court to make their  
‘ Address unto his Majesty, with an humble Petition, in the Name of the Mayor, Aldermen,  
‘ and Commons of this City, did make their Relation in Writing, which followeth in these  
‘ Words:

On Monday the second of January we came to Oxford, between One and Two o’Clock in the Afternoon; where, tho’ we could get no Lodging before Night,  
yet

\* *Husband's Collections*, from p. 850, to 891.



yet presently we dispatched one to give the Lord Falkland Notice of our Coming. About Three o'Clock we did all of us attend his Lordship, at his Lodgings in New College; with whom we sent one also to the Court, to receive his Majesty's Order for Admission into his Presence; who returning unto us, and bringing us Word, that his Majesty would receive the Petition at Five o'Clock, we accordingly all of us came to the Court. After some small Time of Attendance we were admitted unto his Majesty in his Withdrawing-Chamber, and the Petition publicly read in his Majesty's Presence; unto which his Majesty presently made Answer unto this Effect, That he was glad of the Occasion this Petition would give him, to let the City know some of his Declarations; which, although he had already caused them to be put in Print, yet he doubted might be kept from the Knowledge of his People in the City: That he doubted the Petitioners promised more than they could perform, to wit, *To defend his Majesty from Tumults*; when, as he heard, they could not maintain Peace and Quiet among themselves: That his Answer should be full, which he would expect should be published and made known to all his People in the City. And he added this Question, Whether they had petitioned the Parliament also, to remember them of their Duty to his Majesty? To this it was presently answered, That we were only Messengers of this Petition, and could give no Answer to that Question.

On Tuesday we had no Audience, and only attended our Answer; but on Wednesday the fourth of January, we address'd ourselves for our Dispatch, by a Message unto the Lord Falkland, and received his Majesty's Order to attend at Three o'Clock that Afternoon, which we did accordingly; and, being called in, his Majesty gave us a Paper, which, he said, was his Answer to the Petition; and so delivered it into the Hands of a Gentleman called Mr. Heron, standing by him; who, he said, should go with us, and see it done accordingly. And having demanded which was



An. 13. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

*to the unsettling of the Peace, and disuniting the Spirits of the City, who steer all their Actions by that Maxim of Policy, Divide & impera, divide and do what you will: The rather when they observed that the Counsel of some not so Well-wishers, certainly, to the Public Safety, as to their own private Interests, had prevailed with his Majesty that his Answer should be published at a Common-Hall, by his Majesty's express Order for that Purpose, when as the Petition was humbly tendered to his Majesty from a Common Council. To avoid all Inconveniences, it pleased the Wisdom and Goodness of Heaven to direct the Parliament to chuse an honourable Committee of Lords and Commons to be present at the reading thereof; and the Governors of the City to order that all the Companies should first meet at their several Halls, and then come in their City Habits to the Guildhall, where his Majesty's Answer was to be read: When the Committee of both Houses, with the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and such a Confluence of Liverymen as hath not been seen there in the Memory of the oldest Man in the City, being met, the Lord Mayor commanded the Town Clerk to read, in the Audience of that great Assembly, the City's Petition, which here follows:*

*To the KING's Most Excellent Majesty,  
The HUMBLE PETITION of the Mayor, Aldermen,  
and Commons of the City of London,  
Sheweth,*

The said Petition read at a Common Hall,

**T**HAT the Petitioners, your Majesty's most humble and loyal Subjects, being much peirced with the long and great Divisions between your Majesty and both your Houses of Parliament, and with the sad and bloody Effects thereof, both here and in *Ireland*, are yet more deeply wounded by the Misapprehension which your Majesty seemeth to entertain of the Love and Loyalty of this your City, as if there were some Cause of Fear or Suspicion of Danger to your Royal Person, if your Majesty should return hither; and that  
this

this is made the unhappy Bar to that blessed Re-  
conciliation with your great and most faithful  
Council, for preventing that Desolation and De-  
struction, which is now most apparently immi-  
nent on your Majesty and all your Kingdoms:

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
January.

For Satisfaction therefore of your Majesty, and  
clearing of the Petitioners Innocency, they most  
humbly declare, as formerly they have done, That  
they are in no way conscious of any Disloyalty,  
but abhor all Thoughts thereof: And that they  
are resolved to make good their late solemn *Protesta-  
tion* and sacred Vow made to Almighty God, and,  
with the last Drop of their dearest Bloods, to defend  
and maintain the true Reformed Protestant Religi-  
on; and, according to the Duty of their Allegiance,  
your Majesty's Royal Person, Honour, and Estate;  
(whatever is maliciously and most falsely suggested  
to your Majesty to the contrary) as well as the  
Power and Privileges of Parliament, and the law-  
ful Rights and Liberties of the Subject; and do  
hereby engage themselves, their Estates, and all  
they have, to their uttermost Power, to defend  
and preserve your Majesty and both Houses of  
Parliament from all Tumults, Affronts, and Vio-  
lence, with as much Loyalty, Love, and Duty,  
as ever Citizens expressed towards your Majesty,  
or any of your Royal Progenitors in their greatest  
Glory.

The Petitioners therefore, upon their bended  
Knees, do most humbly beseech your Majesty to  
return to your Parliament, accompanied with  
your Royal, not your Martial, Attendance; to the  
end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties may be  
settled and secured; and whatsoever is amiss in  
Church and Common-wealth reformed by their  
Advice, according to the Fundamental Consti-  
tutions of this Kingdom; and that such a Peace  
may thereby be obtained, as shall be for the Glo-  
ry of God, the Honour and Happiness of your  
Majesty and Posterity, and the Safety and Wel-  
fare of all your loyal Subjects; who (the Peti-  
tioners are fully assured, whatsoever is given out  
to



An. 13. Car. 1.<sup>e</sup> to the contrary) do unanimously desire the Peace  
1642. ' herein expressed.

January.

And the Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

MICHELL.

*This being done, the King's Messenger \* being wished to read his Majesty's Answer to that Petition, made some Apology to be excused; partly willing to intimate that his Commission was but to deliver the Answer to the Lord Mayor. (which seemed very strange to Standers by, who were ready to conclude, that if his Majesty's Command had been of no larger Extent, the Trouble of a Common-Hall might well have been spared) and partly pleading the Inaudibleness of his Voice in such a vast Assembly; but being deemed the fittest for that Service by the Honourable Committee, the Lord Mayor and his Brethren, he then read his Majesty's Answer, which here follows:*

As also the  
King's Answer  
to it,

' HIS Majesty hath graciously considered this  
Petition, and returns this Answer: That  
' his Majesty doth not entertain any Misapprehen-  
' sion of the Love and Loyalty of his City of Lon-  
' don. As he hath always expressed a singular Re-  
' gard and Esteem of the Affections of that City,  
' and is still desirous to make it his chief Place of  
' Residence, and to continue and renew many  
' Marks of his Favour towards it; so he believes  
' much the better and greater Part of that his City  
' is full of Love, Duty, and Loyalty to his Majesty;  
' and that the Tumults which heretofore forced his  
' Majesty, for his Safety, to leave that Place, tho'  
' they were contrived and encouraged by some  
' principal Members thereof, (who are since well  
' known, though they are above the Reach of Ju-  
' stice) consisted more of desperate Persons of the  
' Suburbs, and the neighbouring Towns, who were  
' misled by the Cunning and Malice of their Sedu-  
' cers, than of the Inhabitants of that City. He  
' looks

\* Capt. Heron, Son of Sir Edward Heron, High Sheriff of Lincolnshire, who had been voted a Delinquent, for executing the King's Commission of Array in that County.



looks on his good Subjects there as Persons groaning under the same Burden which doth oppress his Majesty, and awed by the same Persons who begat these Tumults, and the same Army which gave Battle to his Majesty: And therefore as no good Subject can more desire, from his Soul, a Composition of the general Distractions; so no good Citizen can more desire the Establishment of the particular Peace and Prosperity of that Place by his Majesty's Access thither, than his Majesty himself doth.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
January.

But his Majesty desires his good Subjects of London seriously to consider what Confidence his Majesty can have of Security there, whilst the Laws of the Land are so notoriously despised and trampled under Foot; and the wholesome Government of that City, heretofore so famous over all the World, is now submitted to the arbitrary Power of a few desperate Persons of no Reputation, but for Malice and Disloyalty to him: Whilst Arms are taken up not only without, but against, his Consent and express Command; and Collections publickly made, and Contributions avowed, for the Maintenance of the Army which hath given him Battle, and therein used all possible Means, Treason and Malice could suggest to them, to have taken his Life from him, and to have destroyed his Royal Issue; whilst such of his Majesty's Subjects, who, out of Duty and Affection to his Majesty, and Compassion of their bleeding Country, have laboured for Peace, are reviled, injured, and murdered, even by the Magistrates of that City, or by their Directions.

Lastly, What Hope his Majesty can have of Safety there, whilst Alderman *Pennington*, their pretended Lord Mayor, (the principal Author of those Calamities which so nearly threaten the Ruin of that famous City) *Ven*, *Foulke*, and *Mai-  
n-  
waring*, all Persons notoriously guilty of Schism and High Treason, commit such Outrages in oppressing, robbing, and imprisoning, according to their Discretion, all such his Majesty's loving Subjects

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

January.

jects whom they are pleased to suspect but for  
 ' wishing well to his Majesty: And his Majesty  
 ' would know whether the Petitioners believe that  
 ' the Reviling and Suppressing the Book of Common  
 ' Prayer, (established in this Church ever since the  
 ' Reformation) the Discourtenancing and Imprisoning  
 ' godly, learned, and painful Preachers; and  
 ' the Cherishing and Countenancing of *Brownists*,  
 ' *Anabaptists*, and all Manner of *Seſtaries*, be the Way  
 ' to defend and maintain the true Reformed Protestant  
 ' Religion? That to comply with, and assist Persons  
 ' who have actually attempted to kill his Majesty;  
 ' and to allow and favour Libels, Pasquils,  
 ' and seditious Sermons against his Majesty, be to  
 ' defend his Royal Person and Honour according to  
 ' the Duty of their Allegiance? Whether to imprison  
 ' Men's Persons, and to plunder their Houses,  
 ' because they will not rebel against his Majesty,  
 ' nor assist those that do? Whether to destroy their  
 ' Property, by taking away the Twentieth Part of  
 ' their Estates from them; and, by the same arbitrary  
 ' Power, to refer to four Standers-by of their  
 ' own Faction, to judge what that Twentieth Part  
 ' is, be to defend the lawful Rights and Liberties of  
 ' the Subject? And if they think these Actions to  
 ' be Instances of either, whether they do not know  
 ' the Persons before-named to be guilty of them all?  
 ' Or whether they think it possible that Almighty  
 ' God can bless that City, and preserve it from  
 ' Destruction, whilst Persons of such known Guilt  
 ' and Wickedness are defended and justified amongst  
 ' them, against the Power of that Law by which  
 ' they can only subsist?

' His Majesty is so far from suffering himself to  
 ' be incensed against the whole City, by the Actions  
 ' of these ill Men, though they have hitherto been  
 ' so prevalent as to make the Affections of the rest  
 ' of little Use to him; and is so willing to be with  
 ' them and to protect them, that the Trade, Wealth,  
 ' and Glory thereof (so decayed and eclipsed by  
 ' these public Distractions) may again be the Envy  
 ' of



‘ of all foreign Nations; that he doth, once more, An. 18. Car. 1.  
 ‘ graciously offer his Free and General Pardon to all 1642.  
 ‘ the Inhabitants of that his City of *London*, the  
 ‘ Suburbs, and City of *Westminster*, (except the  
 ‘ Persons formerly excepted by his Majesty) if they  
 ‘ shall yet return to their Duty, Loyalty, and Obe-  
 ‘ dience. And if his good Subjects of that his City  
 ‘ of *London* shall first solemnly declare, That they  
 ‘ will defend the known Laws of the Land, and  
 ‘ will submit to, and be governed by, no other  
 ‘ Rule: If they shall first manifest, by defending  
 ‘ themselves, and maintaining their own Rights,  
 ‘ Liberties, and Interests, and suppressing any Force  
 ‘ and Violence unlawfully raised against those and  
 ‘ his Majesty, their Power to defend and preserve  
 ‘ him from all Tumults, Affronts, and Violence:  
 ‘ Lastly, if they shall apprehend, and commit to  
 ‘ safe Custody, the Persons of those four Men who  
 ‘ enrich themselves by the Spoil and Oppression of  
 ‘ his loving Subjects, and the Ruin of the City, that  
 ‘ his Majesty may proceed against them by the  
 ‘ Course of Law, as guilty of High Treason, his  
 ‘ Majesty will speedily return to them with his  
 ‘ Royal, and without his Martial, Attendance;  
 ‘ and will use his utmost Endeavour that they may,  
 ‘ hereafter, enjoy all the Blessings of Peace and  
 ‘ Plenty; and will no longer expect Obedience from  
 ‘ them, than he shall, with all the Faculties of his  
 ‘ Soul, labour in the Preserving and Advancing the  
 ‘ true Reformed Protestant Religion, the Laws of  
 ‘ the Land, the Liberty and Property of the Sub-  
 ‘ ject, and the just Privileges of Parliament.

January.

‘ If, notwithstanding all this, the Art and Inte-  
 ‘ rest of these Men can prevail so far, that they in-  
 ‘ volve more Men in their Guilt, and draw that his  
 ‘ City to sacrifice its present Happiness and future  
 ‘ Hopes to their Pride, Fury, and Malice; his Ma-  
 ‘ jesty shall only give them this Warning, That  
 ‘ whosoever shall, henceforward, take up Arms  
 ‘ without his Consent; contribute any Money or  
 ‘ Plate, upon what Pretence of Authority soever, for  
 ‘ Maintenance of the Army under the Command of  
 ‘ the



An. 13. Car. 1.  
1642.

January.

‘ the Earl of *Essex*, or any other Army in Rebel-  
 ‘ lion against him; or shall pay Tonnage and Pound-  
 ‘ age, till the same shall be settled by Act of Par-  
 ‘ liament; every such Person must expect the severe-  
 ‘ st Punishment the Law can inflict; and, in the  
 ‘ mean time, his Majesty will seize upon any Part  
 ‘ of his Estate within his Power, for the Relief and  
 ‘ Support of him and his Army, raised and main-  
 ‘ tained for the Defence of his Person, the Laws,  
 ‘ and this his Kingdom: And since he denies to his  
 ‘ Majesty the Duty and Benefit of his Subjection,  
 ‘ by giving Assistance to Rebels, which, by the  
 ‘ known Laws of the Land, is High Treason, his  
 ‘ Majesty shall likewise deny him the Benefit of his  
 ‘ Protection; and shall not only signify to all his  
 ‘ foreign Ministers, that such Person shall receive  
 ‘ no Advantage by being his Subject, but shall, by  
 ‘ all other Ways and Means, proceed against him  
 ‘ as a public Enemy to his Majesty and this King-  
 ‘ dom.

‘ But his Majesty hopes and doubts not but his  
 ‘ good Subjects of *London* will call to Mind the Acts  
 ‘ of their Predecessors, their Duty, Affection, Loy-  
 ‘ alty, and Merit towards their Princes; the Re-  
 ‘ nown they have had with all Posterity from, and  
 ‘ the Blessings of Heaven which always accompa-  
 ‘ nied, those Virtues; and will consider the perpet-  
 ‘ ual Scorn and Infamy, which unavoidably will  
 ‘ follow them and their Children, if infinitely the  
 ‘ meaner Part in Quality, and much the lesser Part in  
 ‘ Number, shall be able to alter the Government so  
 ‘ admirably established, destroy the Trade so ex-  
 ‘ cellently settled, and to waste the Wealth, so in-  
 ‘ dustriously gotten, of that flourishing City; and  
 ‘ then they will easily gather up the Courage and Re-  
 ‘ solution to join with his Majesty in Defence of  
 ‘ their Religion, Laws, and Liberties, which hitherto  
 ‘ hath and only can make themselves, his Majesty,  
 ‘ and his Kingdom, happy.

‘ For concurring with the Advice of his two  
 ‘ Houses of Parliament, which, with Reference to  
 ‘ the Common-wealth, may be as well at this Dis-  
 ‘ stance,

‘ stance as at *Whitehall*; his Majesty doubts not  
 ‘ but his good Subjects of *London* well know how  
 ‘ far, (beyond the Example of his Predecessors) his  
 ‘ Majesty hath concurred with their Advice in pas-  
 ‘ sing of such Laws, by which he willingly hath  
 ‘ parted with many of his known Rights, for the  
 ‘ Benefit of his Subjects, which the Fundamental  
 ‘ Constitutions of this Kingdom did not oblige  
 ‘ him to consent to; and hath used all possible Means  
 ‘ to beget a right Understanding between them;  
 ‘ and will therefore apply themselves to those who,  
 ‘ by making just, peaceable, and honourable Propo-  
 ‘ sitions to his Majesty, can only beget that Con-  
 ‘ currence.’

An. 18. Car. 1.  
 1642.  
 January.

*After the King's Messenger had read this once upon the Hustings, in the Audience of those Honourable Persons, he was, for the Help of the Lowness of his Voice, and the Advantage of the great Multitudes in the Hall, willed to read the same a second Time in the Clock-house, in the Audience of the Body of that Assembly; among whom, after he had finished his Work, an inconsiderable Company near the Door made some Offers towards an Acclamation; but finding no expected Eccho to answer their Shout, they wound up in a little Modesty and a great deal of Silence; upon which the Earl of Manchester delivered his Speech as followeth:*

*My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,*

‘ **T**HIS Assembly can never be looked upon by any Members of both Houses of Parliament, but there must be some Offering of Gratitude made to you; of Thanks and Acknowledgements for your former large-hearted Expressions of Affection and Care for the Preservation both of the Parliament and Kingdom: The Occasion why my Lords and these Gentlemen of the House of Commons are come hither is this, They have read an *Answer* to an humble *Petition* of the Lord Mayor and Common-Council and Citizens of *London* to his Ma-

The Earl of Manchester's Speech to the Citizens on that Occasion;



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

*The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's Answer, in the following Speech:*

*My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,*

And Mr. Pym's  
by way of Re-  
ply to the King's  
Answer.

I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Asperion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tendernefs of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been

full



full of Honour and Justice, as they stand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majesty, and of Care for the common Good, and so shall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true *Answer* to most of those Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by observing some Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from those Misrepresentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Sense of both Houses, that your *Petition* was so full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an *Answer* of another Kind.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
January.

‘The first *Observation* I am to make to you is this, that it is said here, *That his Majesty was enforced, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from Whitehall, and to withdraw himself into those Courses which now he hath taken.*

‘In Answer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occasion given by any Tumults rising out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might justly cause his Majesty’s Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons House of Parliament in that unusual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of these unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majesty came into the City without any Guard; that he was present in the Common-Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any such Expressions as were unbeseeming the Majesty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he resided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hampton-Court*, *Windsor*, and Places adjoining, with small Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehensions of Fear; by all which it is manifest, that this is an unjust Aspersions cast upon this City, that any tumultuous

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

‘ the Earl of *Essex*, or any other Army in Rebel-  
 ‘ lion against him ; or shall pay Tonnage and Pound-  
 ‘ age, till the same shall be settled by Act of Par-  
 ‘ liament ; every such Person must expect the severe-  
 ‘ st Punishment the Law can inflict ; and, in the  
 ‘ mean time, his Majesty will seize upon any Part  
 ‘ of his Estate within his Power, for the Relief and  
 ‘ Support of him and his Army, raised and main-  
 ‘ tained for the Defence of his Person, the Laws,  
 ‘ and this his Kingdom : And since he denies to his  
 ‘ Majesty the Duty and Benefit of his Subjection,  
 ‘ by giving Assistance to Rebels, which, by the  
 ‘ known Laws of the Land, is High Treason, his  
 ‘ Majesty shall likewise deny him the Benefit of his  
 ‘ Protection ; and shall not only signify to all his  
 ‘ foreign Ministers, that such Person shall receive  
 ‘ no Advantage by being his Subject, but shall, by  
 ‘ all other Ways and Means, proceed against him  
 ‘ as a public Enemy to his Majesty and this King-  
 ‘ dom.

‘ But his Majesty hopes and doubts not but his  
 ‘ good Subjects of *London* will call to Mind the Acts  
 ‘ of their Predecessors, their Duty, Affection, Loy-  
 ‘ alty, and Merit towards their Princes ; the Re-  
 ‘ nown they have had with all Posterity from, and  
 ‘ the Blessings of Heaven which always accompa-  
 ‘ nied, those Virtues ; and will consider the perpe-  
 ‘ tual Scorn and Infamy, which unavoidably will  
 ‘ follow them and their Children, if infinitely the  
 ‘ meaner Part in Quality, and much the lesser Part in  
 ‘ Number, shall be able to alter the Government so  
 ‘ admirably established, destroy the Trade so ex-  
 ‘ cellently settled, and to waste the Wealth, so in-  
 ‘ dustriously gotten, of that flourishing City ; and  
 ‘ then they will easily gather up the Courage and Re-  
 ‘ solution to join with his Majesty in Defence of  
 ‘ their Religion, Laws, and Liberties, which hitherto  
 ‘ hath and only can make themselves, his Majesty,  
 ‘ and his Kingdom, happy.

‘ For concurring with the Advice of his two  
 ‘ Houses of Parliament, which, with Reference to  
 ‘ the Common-wealth, may be as well at this Di-  
 ‘ stance,



‘ stance as at *Whitehall*; his Majesty doubts not  
 ‘ but his good Subjects of *London* well know how  
 ‘ far, (beyond the Example of his Predecessors) his  
 ‘ Majesty hath concurred with their Advice in pas-  
 ‘ sing of such Laws, by which he willingly hath  
 ‘ parted with many of his known Rights, for the  
 ‘ Benefit of his Subjects, which the Fundamental  
 ‘ Constitutions of this Kingdom did not oblige  
 ‘ him to consent to; and hath used all possible Means  
 ‘ to beget a right Understanding between them;  
 ‘ and will therefore apply themselves to those who,  
 ‘ by making just, peaceable, and honourable Propo-  
 ‘ sitions to his Majesty, can only beget that Con-  
 ‘ currence.’

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.  
 January.

*After the King's Messenger had read this once upon the Hustings, in the Audience of those Honourable Persons, he was, for the Help of the Lowness of his Voice, and the Advantage of the great Multitudes in the Hall, willed to read the same a second Time in the Clock-house, in the Audience of the Body of that Assembly; among whom, after he had finished his Work, an inconsiderable Company near the Door made some Offers towards an Acclamation; but finding no expected Echo to answer their Shout, they wound up in a little Modesty and a great deal of Silence; upon which the Earl of Manchester delivered his Speech as followeth:*

*My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,*

‘ **T**HIS Assembly can never be looked upon by  
 any Members of both Houses of Parlia-  
 ment, but there must be some Offering of Gratitude  
 made to you; of Thanks and Acknowledgements  
 for your former large-hearted Expressions of Af-  
 fection and Care for the Preservation both of the  
 Parliament and Kingdom: The Occasion why my  
 Lords and these Gentlemen of the House of Com-  
 mons are come hither is this, They have read an *An-*  
*swer* to an humble *Petition* of the Lord Mayor and  
 Common-Council and Citizens of *London* to his  
 Ma-

The Earl of  
 Manchester's  
 Speech to the  
 Citizens on that  
 Occasion;



An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

January.

‘ the Earl of *Essex*, or any other Army in Rebel-  
 ‘ lion against him; or shall pay Tonnage and Pound-  
 ‘ age, till the same shall be settled by Act of Par-  
 ‘ liament; every such Person must expect the severe-  
 ‘ st Punishment the Law can inflict; and, in the  
 ‘ mean time, his Majesty will seize upon any Part  
 ‘ of his Estate within his Power, for the Relief and  
 ‘ Support of him and his Army, raised and main-  
 ‘ tained for the Defence of his Person, the Laws,  
 ‘ and this his Kingdom: And since he denies to his  
 ‘ Majesty the Duty and Benefit of his Subjection,  
 ‘ by giving Assistance to Rebels, which, by the  
 ‘ known Laws of the Land, is High Treason, his  
 ‘ Majesty shall likewise deny him the Benefit of his  
 ‘ Protection; and shall not only signify to all his  
 ‘ foreign Ministers, that such Person shall receive  
 ‘ no Advantage by being his Subject, but shall, by  
 ‘ all other Ways and Means, proceed against him  
 ‘ as a public Enemy to his Majesty and this King-  
 ‘ dom.

‘ But his Majesty hopes and doubts not but his  
 ‘ good Subjects of *London* will call to Mind the Acts  
 ‘ of their Predecessors, their Duty, Affection, Loy-  
 ‘ alty, and Merit towards their Princes; the Re-  
 ‘ nown they have had with all Posterity from, and  
 ‘ the Blessings of Heaven which always accompa-  
 ‘ nied, those Virtues; and will consider the perpe-  
 ‘ tual Scorn and Infamy, which unavoidably will  
 ‘ follow them and their Children, if infinitely the  
 ‘ meaner Part in Quality, and much the lesser Part in  
 ‘ Number, shall be able to alter the Government so  
 ‘ admirably established, destroy the Trade so ex-  
 ‘ cellently settled, and to waste the Wealth, so in-  
 ‘ dustriously gotten, of that flourishing City; and  
 ‘ then they will easily gather up the Courage and Re-  
 ‘ solution to join with his Majesty in Defence of  
 ‘ their Religion, Laws, and Liberties, which hitherto  
 ‘ hath and only can make themselves, his Majesty,  
 ‘ and his Kingdom, happy.

‘ For concurring with the Advice of his two  
 ‘ Houses of Parliament, which, with Reference to  
 ‘ the Common-wealth, may be as well at this Di-  
 ‘ stance,

# OF ENGLAND.

- The first of these is the *Constitution*, which is the basis of the whole system of government.
- The second is the *Parliament*, which is the supreme legislative body.
- The third is the *Commons*, which is the lower house of the Parliament.
- The fourth is the *Peers*, which is the upper house of the Parliament.
- The fifth is the *Church*, which is the spiritual power of the nation.
- The sixth is the *Law*, which is the civil power of the nation.
- The seventh is the *Army*, which is the military power of the nation.
- The eighth is the *Navy*, which is the maritime power of the nation.
- The ninth is the *Trade*, which is the commercial power of the nation.
- The tenth is the *Education*, which is the intellectual power of the nation.

The first of these is the *Constitution*, which is the basis of the whole system of government. It is the foundation upon which all the other powers are built. The second is the *Parliament*, which is the supreme legislative body. It is the body which makes the laws of the land. The third is the *Commons*, which is the lower house of the Parliament. It is the body which represents the people. The fourth is the *Peers*, which is the upper house of the Parliament. It is the body which represents the nobility. The fifth is the *Church*, which is the spiritual power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the souls of the people. The sixth is the *Law*, which is the civil power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the order and justice of the land. The seventh is the *Army*, which is the military power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the defence of the country. The eighth is the *Navy*, which is the maritime power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the protection of the country's ships and trade. The ninth is the *Trade*, which is the commercial power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the prosperity of the country. The tenth is the *Education*, which is the intellectual power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the advancement of the country's knowledge and culture.

The first of these is the *Constitution*, which is the basis of the whole system of government.

**T**HE first of these is the *Constitution*, which is the basis of the whole system of government. It is the foundation upon which all the other powers are built. The second is the *Parliament*, which is the supreme legislative body. It is the body which makes the laws of the land. The third is the *Commons*, which is the lower house of the Parliament. It is the body which represents the people. The fourth is the *Peers*, which is the upper house of the Parliament. It is the body which represents the nobility. The fifth is the *Church*, which is the spiritual power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the souls of the people. The sixth is the *Law*, which is the civil power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the order and justice of the land. The seventh is the *Army*, which is the military power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the defence of the country. The eighth is the *Navy*, which is the maritime power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the protection of the country's ships and trade. The ninth is the *Trade*, which is the commercial power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the prosperity of the country. The tenth is the *Education*, which is the intellectual power of the nation. It is the body which is responsible for the advancement of the country's knowledge and culture.

THE  
OF  
UN-  
NUL-  
MOU

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

*The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's Answer, in the following Speech:*

*My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,*

And Mr. Pym's  
by way of Re-  
ply to the King's  
Answer.

**I** Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Asperion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tenderness of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been

full



full of Honour and Justice, as they stand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majesty, and of Care for the common Good, and so shall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true *Answer* to most of those Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by observing some Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from those Misrepresentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Sense of both Houses, that your *Petition* was so full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an *Answer* of another Kind.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
January.

‘The first *Observation* I am to make to you is this, that it is said here, *That his Majesty was enforced, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from Whitehall, and to withdraw himself into those Courses which now he hath taken.*

‘In Answer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occasion given by any Tumult rising out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might justly cause his Majesty’s Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons House of Parliament in that unusual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of these unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majesty came into the City without any Guard; that he was present in the Common-Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any such Expressions as were unbecoming the Majesty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he resided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hampton-Court*, *Windsor*, and Places adjoining, with small Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehensions of Fear; by all which it is manifest, that this is an unjust Aspersions cast upon this City, that any tumultuous

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

*The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's Answer, in the following Speech:*

*My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,*

And Mr. Pym's  
by way of Re-  
ply to the King's  
Answer.

I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Asperſion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tenderneſs of their own Honour, and Reſpect to you, to take away all thoſe Asperſions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been  
full

OF ENGLAND. . . .

[illegible][illegible]

you, I  
man  
might  
you  
lent  
in the  
the  
the  
with

Comme il s'agit d'un document  
interne, je ne suis pas en mesure  
de vous le transmettre.  
Cordialement,  
Jean-Luc Laroche

Y. 22 222



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

*The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's Answer, in the following Speech:*

*My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,*

And Mr. Pym's  
by way of Re-  
ply to the King's  
Answer.

I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Asperion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tendernefs of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been  
full

full of Honour and Justice, as they stand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majesty, and of Care for the common Good, and so shall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true *Answer* to most of those Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by observing some Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from those Misrepresentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Sense of both Houses, that your *Petition* was so full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an *Answer* of another Kind.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
January.

‘The first *Observation* I am to make to you is this, that it is said here, *That his Majesty was enforced, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from Whitehall, and to withdraw himself into those Courses which now he hath taken.*

‘In Answer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occasion given by any Tumults rising out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might justly cause his Majesty’s Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons House of Parliament in that unusual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of these unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majesty came into the City without any Guard; that he was present in the Common-Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any such Expressions as were unbeseeming the Majesty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he resided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hampton-Court*, *Windsor*, and Places adjoining, with small Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehensions of Fear; by all which it is manifest, that this is an unjust Aspersions cast upon this City, that any tumultuous



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

*The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's Answer, in the following Speech:*

*My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,*

And Mr. Pym's  
by way of Re-  
ply to the King's  
Answer.

I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Asperion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tenderness of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been

full



full of Honour and Justice, as they stand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majesty, and of Care for the common Good, and so shall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true *Answer* to most of those Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by observing some Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from those Misrepresentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Sense of both Houses, that your *Petition* was so full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an *Answer* of another Kind.

An. 28. Car. 1.  
1642.  
January.

‘The first *Observation* I am to make to you is this, that it is said here, *That his Majesty was enforced, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from Whitehall, and to withdraw himself into those Courses which now he hath taken.*

‘In Answer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occasion given by any Tumults rising out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might justly cause his Majesty’s Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons House of Parliament in that unusual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of these unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majesty came into the City without any Guard; that he was present in the Common-Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any such Expressions as were unbeseeming the Majesty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he resided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hamp-ton-Court*, *Windsor*, and Places adjoining, with small Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehensions of Fear; by all which it is manifest, that this is an unjust Aspersions cast upon this City, that any tumultuous

## 130 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1

1642.

January.

tuous Carriage of yours was the Occasion of his Majesty's leaving the Parliament, and withdrawing himself to remoter Parts.

‘ It is affirmed, *That the Government of your Country hath been managed by a few desperate Persons, so that they do exercise an arbitrary Power.* In answer to which, the two Houses of Parliament give you the Testimony, That you have, in most of the great Occasions concerning the Government of the Country followed their Direction; and that Direction, which they have given, and you have executed, they must and will maintain to be such as stands with the Honour in giving it, and your Trust and Fidelity in the Performance of it.

‘ It is objected in the third Place, *That Contributions have been publickly made, for the Maintenance of that Army which did join Battle with the King, and did, by all the Means that Treason and Malice could suggest, endeavour to take away his Life, and destroy his Issue.* To this I am commanded to say, That the Design of bringing up the *English* Armies, the gathering together of the Cavaliers about *White-hall*, the violent coming to the House of Commons, the King's going into the *North* and raising Armies there, are clear Evidences that Violence was first intended, and divers Practices were made against the Parliament, before they took any Course, or made any Preparation to take up Arms, for their Defence; for the Danger of his Majesty's Person they were sorry for it, and did, by divers humble *Petitions*, labour to prevent it; and as touching the Royal Issue, they have sufficiently declared to the World, their good Affections towards them, by the Care they have taken both for the Safety and Maintenance of those who are left here.

‘ It is further expressed in this Answer, *That the King demands the Lord Mayor, Mr. Alderman Fowke, Col. Ven, and Col. Manwaring, to be delivered up as guilty of Schism and High Treason.* Concerning which I am commanded to tell you, as the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, That this Demand is against the Privilege of Parliament,

two

two of them being Members of the Commons An. 18. Car. 1.  
House; most dishonourable to the City, that the  
Lord Mayor of London should be subjected to the  
Violence of every base Fellow, be assaulted, seized  
on, without due Process or Warrant, which the  
Law doth afford every private Man; and that you  
should be commanded to deliver up your Chief Ma-  
gistrate, and such eminent Members of the City  
to the King's Pleasure, only because they have done  
their Duty in adhering to the Parliament, for the  
Defence of the Kingdom; and that it is against the  
Rules of Justice, that any Men should be impris-  
oned upon such a general Charge, when no Parti-  
culars are proved against them; and this you are  
to take Notice of, as the Answer to those Scandals,  
and to that Disgrace upon my Lord Mayor, and  
the other Members of the City.

1642  
January.

‘ And I am further to tell you, That there is  
little Cause for his Majesty to make this Demand,  
considering that he himself doth, by Force, keep  
away many accused in Parliament; as my Lord  
*Digby*, and many more impeached of High Treason,  
besides divers other great Delinquents, that  
stand charged there for heinous Crimes; all which,  
by Force, are kept from the due Proceedings and  
legal Trial of Parliament.

‘ It is alledged in this Answer, *That my Lord  
Mayor, and those other Persons named, are Countenancers of Brownists and Anabaptists, and all Manner of Sectaries.* To this I am commanded to say,  
That hereof there is no Proof: It doth not appear  
that they give any such Countenance to *Sectaries* of  
any Kind whatsoever; and if it did, his Majesty hath  
little Reason to object it, while, notwithstanding the  
Profession he hath often made, *That he will main-  
tain the Protestant Reformed Religion,* he doth in the  
mean Time raise an Army of *Papists*; who, by the  
Principles of their Religion, are bound, if Power  
be put into their Hands, to destroy and utterly to  
root out the *Protestants*, together with the Truth  
which they profess.



## 132 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 18. CAR. I.  
1643.  
January.

It is affirmed, *That Men's Persons have been imprisoned, and their Houses plundered, because they will not rebell against his Majesty.* To this I am commanded to declare, That no Men's Houses have been plundered by any Direction of the Parliament, but that they have been very careful to restrain all such violent Courses, so far as they were able; and that they have never committed any Man, but such as, by due Information, they conceived to be seditious Persons, and like to trouble the Peace of the State.

'It is objected further, *That the Property of the Subject is destroyed, by taking away the twentieth Part by an arbitrary Power.* To this they say, That in that *Ordinance* it doth not require a twentieth Part, but doth limit the Assessors that they shall not go beyond a twentieth Part; and that this is done by a Power derived from both Houses of Parliament; the Lords, who have an Hereditary Interest in making Laws in this Kingdom; and the Commons, who are elected and chosen to represent the whole Body of the Commonalty, and trusted for the Good of the People, whenever they see Cause to charge the Kingdom. And they say further, That the same Law, that did enable the two Houses of Parliament to raise Forces to maintain and defend the Safety of Religion, and of the Kingdom, doth likewise enable them to require Contributions, whereby those Forces may be maintained; or else it were a vain Power to raise Forces, if they had not a Power likewise to maintain them in that Service for which they were raised.

'And to this Point I am commanded to add this further Answer, That there was little Reason for this to be objected on his Majesty's Behalf, when it is well known that, from the Subjects which are within the Power of his Army, his Majesty doth take the full yearly Value of their Lands, and in some Cases more; that not only particular Houses, but whole Towns, have been plundered by Command and Design; and that, by *Proclamations*, Men are declared to forfeit all their Estates, because they will

will not obey arbitrary Commands; and this is commonly practised by his Majesty, and on his Part: And, therefore, there was little Reason to charge the Parliament with so necessary and moderate a Contribution as the twentieth Part.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
January.

‘It is declared, *That the King expects to be kept from Tumults and Affronts.* Upon which I am commanded to observe, That his Majesty’s Expressions, in his *Answer*, tend to the making of a Division in this City, and to the raising of a Party which may make some Disturbance in that orderly Government which is now established; both which will certainly prove, equally, destructive to him and both Houses of Parliament; and more prejudicial to his quiet Abode here, than any Thing that hath ever been acted by the Houses of Parliament, or the present Governors of the City.

‘They observe further, that in this *Answer*, *His Majesty doth profess that he will seize upon the Estates of all that shall contribute any Thing towards the Maintenance of the Parliament’s Army, and will put them out of his Protection; and, by his Ministers in foreign States, will take such Course that they may be proceeded against as Enemies; that is, destroyed and spoiled.* To which the Lords and Commons do declare, That this is an Excess of Rigour and Injustice beyond all Example, that particular Men should lose their private Estates here without Law or judicial Proceeding; and that our Prince, who owes Protection to the Kingdom as well as to particular Persons, should suffer the Wealth thereof to be robbed and spoiled by foreign States: Upon due Consideration whereof, they hope his Majesty will be induced by better Counsel to forbear the Execution, than that by which he hath been persuaded to publish such a Resolution.

‘Besides these *Observations* out of the *Answer*, I am to observe one out of a *Narrative* that was received from the Common Council, that the King did declare, *That he would send some Messengers here to observe your Carriage in the City, and what was done amongst you.* The Parliament have just Cause

## 134 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1. to doubt, that these will be Messengers of Sedition  
 1642. and Trouble ; and therefore desire you to observe  
 January. them and find them out, and that they may know  
 who they are.

‘ I am, for a Conclusion, to commend to your Considerations, that you see, by the Proceedings to which the King is drawn by the ill Counsel now about him, that Religion, the whole Kingdom, this glorious City, and the Parliament, are all in great Danger ; that this Danger cannot be kept off, in all likelihood, but by the Army that is now on Foot ; and that the Lords and Commons are so far from being frightened by any Thing that is in this *Answer*, that they have, for themselves, and the Members of both Houses, declared a further Contribution towards the Maintenance of this Army ; and cannot but hope and desire, that you that have shewed so much good Affection, in the former Necessities of the State, will be sensible of your own, and of the Condition of the whole Kingdom ; and add to that which you have already done some further Contribution, whereby this Army may be maintained for all your Safeties.

*At the End of every Period of this Speech, the Applause was so great, that he was fain to rest till Silence was again made ; and, at last, (the Company ready to be dissolved) after some Pause and Consultation with the Committee of Lords and Commons then present, and by their Direction, Silence being made, he closed all with the Words following :*

‘ Worthy Citizens, you have understood the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, concerning my Lord Mayor here, and those worthy Members of your City, that are demanded ; you have heard the Parliament declare, That they will protect them in that which they have done by Direction of both Houses ; and they expect that you should express it yourselves likewise, that if any Violence be offered to them, you will secure and defend them with your uttermost Force ; and you shall always find, that



that this Protection of the Parliament shall not only extend to these, but to all others that have done any Thing by their Command.' An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

January.

*Which Words were no sooner uttered, but the Citizens, with one joint Harmony of Minds and Voices, gave such an Acclamation as would have drowned all the former, if they had been then breathing; which, after a long Continuance, resolved itself into this more articulate and distinct Voice, We will live and die with them, We will live and die with them, and the like.*

*So that in the managing of this Day's Work, God was so pleased to manifest himself, that the Well-affected went away not strengthened only, but rejoicing; and the Malignants (as they have been called) some convinced, others silenced, many ashamed, it fully appearing how little Power they had to answer their Desires of doing Mischief: Whilst, instead of dividing the City, they were exceedingly united; instead of a Dissipation, thousands were unexpectedly brought, as it were, into an unthought-of Association, to live and die in the Defence of these zealous and honourable Assertors of their Peace and Liberties: All which we may sum up in that Triumph of the Man of God, In the Thing wherein they dealt proudly, God was above them.*

The ill Reception the King's *Answer* to the City of *London's Petition* met with at the Common-Hall, occasioned his Majesty to send, a few Days after, the following *Letter* and *Declaration* to the Sheriffs.

*Trusty and Well-beloved, we greet you well,*

WE received a *Petition* lately from the Aldermen and Common Council of our City of *London*, by the Hands of Persons entrusted by them for the Delivery, who found such a Reception from us as well manifested our Regard to that Body which sent them: Though we well knew by whom that *Petition* was framed, and where

The King's Letter to the Sheriffs of London, requiring them to publish his foregoing Answer.

## 134 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 11. Car. I. to doubt, that these will be Messengers of Sedition  
 1642.  
 and Trouble; and therefore desire you to observe  
 them and find them out, and that they may know  
 January. who they are.

‘I am, for a Conclusion, to commend to your Considerations, that you see, by the Proceedings to which the King is drawn by the ill Counsel now about him, that Religion, the whole Kingdom, this glorious City, and the Parliament, are all in great Danger; that this Danger cannot be kept off, in all likelihood, but by the Army that is now on Foot; and that the Lords and Commons are so far from being frightened by any Thing that is in this *Answer*, that they have, for themselves, and the Members of both Houses, declared a further Contribution towards the Maintenance of this Army; and cannot but hope and desire, that you that have shewed so much good Affection, in the former Necessities of the State, will be sensible of your own, and of the Condition of the whole Kingdom; and add to that which you have already done some further Contribution, whereby this Army may be maintained for all your Safeties.

*At the End of every Period of this Speech, the Applause was so great, that he was fain to rest till Silence was again made; and, at last, (the Company ready to be dissolved) after some Pause and Consultation with the Committee of Lords and Commons then present, and by their Direction, Silence being made, he closed all with the Words following:*

‘Worthy Citizens, you have understood the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, concerning my Lord Mayor here, and those worthy Members of your City, that are demanded; you have heard the Parliament declare, That they will protect them in that which they have done by Direction of both Houses; and they expect that you should express it yourselves likewise, but if any Violence be offered to them, you will secure and defend them with your uttermost Force; and you shall always find, that

that this Protection of the Parliament shall not only extend to these, but to all others that have done any Thing by their Command.' An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
January.

*Which Words were no sooner uttered, but the Citizens, with one joint Harmony of Minds and Voices, gave such an Acclamation as would have drowned all the former, if they had been then breathing; which, after a long Continuance, resolved itself into this more articulate and distinct Voice, We will live and die with them, We will live and die with them, and the like.*

*So that in the managing of this Day's Work, God was so pleased to manifest himself, that the Well-affected went away not strengthened only, but rejoicing; and the Malignants (as they have been called) some convinced, others silenced, many ashamed, it fully appearing how little Power they had to answer their Desires of doing Mischief: Whilst, instead of dividing the City, they were exceedingly united; instead of a Dissipation, thousands were unexpectedly brought, as it were, into an unthought-of Association, to live and die in the Defence of these zealous and honourable Assertors of their Peace and Liberties: All which we may sum up in that Triumph of the Man of God, In the Thing wherein they dealt proudly, God was above them.*

The ill Reception the King's *Answer* to the City of *London's Petition* met with at the Common-Hall, occasioned his Majesty to send, a few Days after, the following *Letter* and *Declaration* to the Sheriffs.

*Trusty and Well-beloved, we greet you well,*

WE received a *Petition* lately from the Aldermen and Common Council of our City of *London*, by the Hands of Persons entrusted by them for the Delivery, who found such a Reception from us as well manifested our Regard to that Body which sent them: Though we well knew by whom that *Petition* was framed, and where

The King's Letter to the Sheriffs of London, requiring them to publish his foregoing Answer.



## 136 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
January.

‘ where perused and examined before it was approved by those from whom it seemed to be sent, yet we were so willing to enter into a Correspondence with that our City, and to receive any Address and Application from them, according to that Invitation we had given by our late *Proclamation*; and were so glad to find that there was yet some Hopes they would look to the Peace and Happiness of that City, and at last sever themselves from any Faction or Dependence, which might insensibly involve them in those Calamities they did not foresee; that we returned such a gracious *Answer* thereunto, so full of Candour and Affection that the meanest Inhabitant of that our City, if he carefully consider the same, will find himself concerned in it, and that we have had an especial Care of his Particular.

‘ With this *Answer* of ours we sent a Servant of our own, in the Company of those who had been so well used here, to require and see that it might be communicated to the whole Body of that our City; not doubting but that both it, and the Bringer, should receive such Entertainment there, as might manifest their due Regard of us, and of our Affection to them: But, to our great Wonder, we find that, after ten Days Attendance, and suffering ridiculous Pamphlets to be published in our Name, as if we retracted our former Resolutions, (which Pamphlet we have caused to be burned by the Hand of the Hangman, as we also require you to see done) instead of that Admission we expected to our Messenger and Message, Guards of armed Men have been brought to keep our good Subjects, to whom that our *Answer* was directed, from being present at the Reading thereof; and Speeches have been made by Strangers, (who have been admitted to the City Councils, contrary to the Freedom and Custom of those Meetings) to blast our said *Answer*, and to dishonour and slander us; which if our good Subjects there shall suffer, we shall be much discouraged  
‘ in

in our desired Correspondence with that our City ; An. 12. Car. 1.  
and so, by the Cunning and Power of those In- 1642.  
cendiaries, mentioned in our *Answer*, Alderman  
*Pennington*, (who to shew his great Loyalty to  
us, and his Fitness to be Chief Magistrate of such  
a City, being informed that a desperate Person  
there said, *That he hoped shortly to wash his Hands*  
*in our Blood*, refused to send any Warrant, or to  
give any Direction to any Officer, for his Appre-  
hension) *Ven, Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, who have  
plunged that our City into such unspeakable Ca-  
lamities, in which they would still keep it to  
cure their own desperate Condition; our good  
Subjects there are not suffered to receive our gra-  
cious *Answer* to that *Petition*.

January.

We have therefore thought fit to write these  
our *Letters* to you, requiring you the Sheriffs of  
our said City, to take care for the publishing that  
our *Answer* (which we herewith send you) to our  
good Subjects of that our City : And our Pleasure  
is, That you the Masters and Wardens of the se-  
veral Companies of our said City forthwith sum-  
mon all the Members of your several Companies,  
with all the Freemen and Apprentices (whose  
Hopes and Interests are so much blasted in these  
general Distractions) belonging thereunto, to ap-  
pear at their several Halls; where you shall cause  
our said *Answer*, together with these our *Letters*,  
to be publicly read; that all our good Subjects  
may clearly understand how far we have been  
from begetting, how far we are from continuing  
or nourishing, these unnatural Civil Dissentions;  
and how much it is in their own Power to remove  
the present Pressures, and to establish the future  
Happiness and Glory of that famous City; and  
may seriously weigh every Part of that our *An-  
swer*, as well that which carries Caution in it for  
the future, as Pardon for what is past: For as-  
sure yourselves, for the Time to come, we shall  
proceed with all Severity against such who shall  
incur the Penalty of the Law in those Points, of  
which we have given them so fair a Warning in  
our

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

January.

' where perused and examined  
 ' ved by those from whom it  
 ' yet we were so willing to ent  
 ' dence with that our City, an  
 ' drefs and Application from  
 ' that Invitation we had give  
 ' *clamation*; and were so glad  
 ' was yet some Hopes they wou  
 ' and Happines of that City  
 ' themselves from any Factio  
 ' which might insensibly inve  
 ' Calamities they did not forese  
 ' such a gracious *Answer* thereu  
 ' dour and Affection that the  
 ' of that our City, if he carefull  
 ' will find himself concerned  
 ' have had an especial Care of t  
 ' With this *Answer* of ours v  
 ' our own, in the Company  
 ' been so well used here, to req  
 ' might be communicated to t  
 ' that our City; not doubting h  
 ' the Bringer, should receive s  
 ' there, as might manifest their  
 ' and of our Affection to them:  
 ' Wonder, we find that, after te  
 ' and suffering ridiculous Pamp.  
 ' in our Name, as if we retrac  
 ' solutions, (which Pamphlet w  
 ' burned by the Hand of the H  
 ' require you to see done) inst  
 ' sion we expected to our Mes  
 ' Guards of armed Men have b  
 ' our good Subjects, to whom  
 ' directed, from being present  
 ' of; and Speeches have been  
 ' (who have been admitted t  
 ' contrary to the Freedom o  
 ' Meetings) to blast our said  
 ' nour and slander us; which  
 ' there shall suffer, we shall



ASTOR:

re it was  
med to be  
into a Com  
a retine an  
m; wonder  
by our late  
o find that  
I look to the  
and at last  
or Dece  
ve them  
s that we  
to, so full  
mendt I  
consider  
in it, and  
is Paroc  
ve sent a  
of shol  
uire an  
the wh  
out that  
uch Ex  
due R  
: Bur  
n Day  
hlets to  
ted our  
re have  
ingm  
rad of  
eng  
son  
hat  
the  
man  
the  
I  
A  
A  
A

## 138 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

January.

our said *Answer*: And whosoever shall not behave himself like a good Subject in this our Kingdom, shall not, if we can help it, receive the Benefit and Advantage of being our Subject in any other; but all foreign Princes shall know, that as such Person hath parted with his Loyalty to us, so he must not hope for any Security by us; and, to that Purpose, we shall henceforward have a very inquisitive Eye upon the Actions of all our Subjects, that some Example may be made, how easy it is for us to punish their Disloyalties abroad, who, for a Time, may avoid our Justice at home.

And to the end that none of our good Subjects of that our City may think themselves bound to obey any of the Orders or Commands of the pretended Lord Mayor, whom we have and do still accuse of High Treason, and conspiring to take our Life from us, it is well known to those Citizens, who understand the Charter of that City, (so amply granted by our Royal Progenitors, and so graciously confirmed by us, and of which we presume our good Subjects there do still desire to receive the Benefit,) that the said *Isaac Pennington* was never regularly elected, or lawfully admitted to the Office of Lord Mayor of that our City; that in Truth Alderman *Cordwell* was, by the Plurality of Voices, chosen; and that this Man was never presented to, or admitted by us, in such Manner as is prescribed by their Charter; neither had that Judge, who presumed to swear him, any more Colour of Law or Authority to administer such an Oath to him, than he hath to do the same To-morrow to any other Alderman of the City: And we do therefore hereby declare the said *Isaac Pennington* not to be Mayor of that our City of *London*, and to have no lawful Authority to exercise the same; and that our good Subjects of that our City, ought not to submit to any Orders, Directions, or Commands, which shall issue from him as Lord Mayor of that our City; but that the same are void, and of none effect.

And

‘ And we do once more require you the Sheriffs  
 ‘ of our said City, and all other the Magistrates of  
 ‘ the same, in which all our good Subjects of that  
 ‘ City will assist you, that you cause the said *Isaac*  
 ‘ *Pennington, Ven, Fowke, and Manwaring*, to be  
 ‘ apprehended and committed to safe Custody; that  
 ‘ we may proceed against them as guilty of High  
 ‘ Treason, and as the principal Authors of those  
 ‘ Calamities which are now so heavy upon our poor  
 ‘ Subjects of that City; which, if not suddenly  
 ‘ remedied, will in a short Time utterly confound  
 ‘ a Place and a People, lately of so flourishing an  
 ‘ Estimation in all the Parts of *Christendom*.

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.  
 January.

‘ And whereas we are informed, that one *Brown*,  
 ‘ a Woodmonger, *Titchborne*, a Linendraper, and  
 ‘ one *Harvy*, a Silkman, have exercised great In-  
 ‘ solencies and Outrages in that our City; and when  
 ‘ many of our good Subjects there have assembled  
 ‘ together, in a peaceable and modest Manner, to  
 ‘ consult about the Peace and Welfare of that City,  
 ‘ the said mutinous and seditious Persons have pre-  
 ‘ sumed to lead Multitudes of armed Men against  
 ‘ them; and, by such Force, have beaten, wound-  
 ‘ ed, and killed our good Subjects: Our Will and  
 ‘ Pleasure is, That if the said *Brown, Titchborne*,  
 ‘ and *Harvy*, or either of them, shall so far neglect  
 ‘ our gracious Offer of Pardon, as still to engage  
 ‘ themselves in those unwarrantable and seditious  
 ‘ Courses, you, our Sheriffs of *London*, do raise  
 ‘ Power to suppress the said Force; and that you,  
 ‘ and all our Ministers of Justice, use your utmost  
 ‘ Means to apprehend the said Persons, and to bring  
 ‘ them to condign Punishment: And we do hereby  
 ‘ declare, That it shall be lawful for any of our  
 ‘ loving Subjects to resist and oppose the said Per-  
 ‘ sons, if they shall hereafter, in such a warlike  
 ‘ Manner, endeavour to molest them, as they  
 ‘ would do Rebels and Traitors.

‘ And we hope that all our good Subjects of that  
 ‘ our much-injured City of *London* do take Notice  
 ‘ of our Grace and Favour towards them, in our  
 ‘ so



## 134 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I. to doubt, that these will be Messengers of Sedition  
 1642.  
 and Trouble ; and therefore desire you to observe  
 them and find them out, and that they may know,  
 January. who they are.

‘ I am, for a Conclusion, to commend to your Considerations, that you see, by the Proceedings to which the King is drawn by the ill Counsel now about him, that Religion, the whole Kingdom, this glorious City, and the Parliament, are all in great Danger ; that this Danger cannot be kept off, in all likelihood, but by the Army that is now on Foot ; and that the Lords and Commons are so far from being frightened by any Thing that is in this *Answer*, that they have, for themselves, and the Members of both Houses, declared a further Contribution towards the Maintenance of this Army ; and cannot but hope and desire, that you that have shewed so much good Affection, in the former Necessities of the State, will be sensible of your own, and of the Condition of the whole Kingdom ; and add to that which you have already done some further Contribution, whereby this Army may be maintained for all your Safeties.

*At the End of every Period of this Speech, the Applause was so great, that he was fain to rest till Silence was again made ; and, at last, (the Company ready to be dissolved) after some Pause and Consultation with the Committee of Lords and Commons then present, and by their Direction, Silence being made, he closed all with the Words following :*

‘ Worthy Citizens, you have understood the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, concerning my Lord Mayor here, and those worthy Members of your City, that are demanded ; you have heard the Parliament declare, That they will protect them in that which they have done by Direction of both Houses ; and they expect that you should express it yourselves likewise, that if any Violence be offered to them, you will secure and defend them with your uttermost Force ; and you shall always find, that

that this Protection of the Parliament shall not only extend to these, but to all others that have done any Thing by their Command.' An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
January.

*Which Words were no sooner uttered, but the Citizens, with one joint Harmony of Minds and Voices, gave such an Acclamation as would have drowned all the former, if they had been then breathing; which, after a long Continuance, resolved itself into this more articulate and distinct Voice, We will live and die with them, We will live and die with them, and the like.*

*So that in the managing of this Day's Work, God was so pleased to manifest himself, that the Well-affected went away not strengthened only, but rejoicing; and the Malignants (as they have been called) some convinced, others silenced, many ashamed, it fully appearing how little Power they had to answer their Desires of doing Mischief: Whilst, instead of dividing the City, they were exceedingly united; instead of a Dissipation, thousands were unexpectedly brought, as it were, into an unthought-of Association, to live and die in the Defence of these zealous and honourable Assertors of their Peace and Liberties: All which we may sum up in that Triumph of the Man of God, In the Thing wherein they dealt proudly, God was above them.*

The ill Reception the King's *Answer* to the City of *London's Petition* met with at the Common-Hall, occasioned his Majesty to send, a few Days after, the following *Letter* and *Declaration* to the Sheriffs.

*Trusty and Well-beloved, we greet you well,*

WE received a *Petition* lately from the Aldermen and Common Council of our City of *London*, by the Hands of Persons entrusted by them for the Delivery, who found such a Reception from us as well manifested our Regard to that Body which sent them: Though we well knew by whom that *Petition* was framed, and where

The King's Letter to the Sheriffs of London, requiring them to publish his foregoing Answer.

## 136 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
January.

‘ where perused and examined before it was appro-  
‘ ved by those from whom it seemed to be sent,  
‘ yet we were so willing to enter into a Corresponden-  
‘ dence with that our City, and to receive any Ad-  
‘ dress and Application from them, according to  
‘ that Invitation we had given by our late *Pro-*  
‘ *clamation*; and were so glad to find that there  
‘ was yet some Hopes they would look to the Peace  
‘ and Happiness of that City, and at last sever  
‘ themselves from any Faction or Dependence,  
‘ which might insensibly involve them in those  
‘ Calamities they did not foresee; that we returned  
‘ such a gracious *Answer* thereunto, so full of Can-  
‘ dour and Affection that the meanest Inhabitant  
‘ of that our City, if he carefully consider the same,  
‘ will find himself concerned in it, and that we  
‘ have had an especial Care of his Particular.

‘ With this *Answer* of ours we sent a Servant of  
‘ our own, in the Company of those who had  
‘ been so well used here, to require and see that it  
‘ might be communicated to the whole Body of  
‘ that our City; not doubting but that both it, and  
‘ the Bringer, should receive such Entertainment  
‘ there, as might manifest their due Regard of us,  
‘ and of our Affection to them: But, to our great  
‘ Wonder, we find that, after ten Days Attendance,  
‘ and suffering ridiculous Pamphlets to be published  
‘ in our Name, as if we retracted our former Re-  
‘ solutions, (which Pamphlet we have caused to be  
‘ burned by the Hand of the Hangman, as we also  
‘ require you to see done) instead of that Admis-  
‘ sion we expected to our Messenger and Message,  
‘ Guards of armed Men have been brought to keep  
‘ our good Subjects, to whom that our *Answer* was  
‘ directed, from being present at the Reading there-  
‘ of; and Speeches have been made by Strangers,  
‘ (who have been admitted to the City Councils,  
‘ contrary to the Freedom and Custom of those  
‘ Meetings) to blast our said *Answer*, and to disho-  
‘ nour and slander us; which if our good Subjects  
‘ there shall suffer, we shall be much discouraged  
‘ in



in our desired Correspondence with that our City; An. 18. Car. I.  
and so, by the Cunning and Power of those Incendiaries, mentioned in our *Answer*, Alderman *Pennington*, (who to shew his great Loyalty to us, and his Fitness to be Chief Magistrate of such a City, being informed that a desperate Person there said, *That he hoped shortly to wash his Hands in our Blood*, refused to send any Warrant, or to give any Direction to any Officer, for his Apprehension) *Ven, Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, who have plunged that our City into such unspeakable Calamities, in which they would still keep it to cure their own desperate Condition; our good Subjects there are not suffered to receive our gracious *Answer* to that *Petition*.

1642.  
January.

We have therefore thought fit to write these our *Letters* to you, requiring you the Sheriffs of our said City, to take care for the publishing that our *Answer* (which we herewith send you) to our good Subjects of that our City: And our Pleasure is, That you the Masters and Wardens of the several Companies of our said City forthwith summon all the Members of your several Companies, with all the Freemen and Apprentices (whose Hopes and Interests are so much blasted in these general Distractions) belonging thereunto, to appear at their several Halls; where you shall cause our said *Answer*, together with these our *Letters*, to be publicly read; that all our good Subjects may clearly understand how far we have been from begetting, how far we are from continuing or nourishing, these unnatural Civil Dissentions; and how much it is in their own Power to remove the present Pressures, and to establish the future Happiness and Glory of that famous City; and may seriously weigh every Part of that our *Answer*, as well that which carries Caution in it for the future, as Pardon for what is past: For assure yourselves, for the Time to come, we shall proceed with all Severity against such who shall incur the Penalty of the Law in those Points, of which we have given them so fair a Warning in  
our

## 138 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

our said *Answer*: And whosoever shall not behave himself like a good Subject in this our Kingdom, shall not, if we can help it, receive the Benefit and Advantage of being our Subject in any other; but all foreign Princes shall know, that as such Person hath parted with his Loyalty to us, so he must not hope for any Security by us; and, to that Purpose, we shall henceforward have a very inquisitive Eye upon the Actions of all our Subjects, that some Example may be made, how easy it is for us to punish their Disloyalties abroad, who, for a Time, may avoid our Justice at home.

And to the end that none of our good Subjects of that our City may think themselves bound to obey any of the Orders or Commands of the pretended Lord Mayor, whom we have and do still accuse of High Treason, and conspiring to take our Life from us, it is well known to those Citizens, who understand the Charter of that City, (so amply granted by our Royal Progenitors, and so graciously confirmed by us, and of which we presume our good Subjects there do still desire to receive the Benefit,) that the said *Isaac Pennington* was never regularly elected, or lawfully admitted to the Office of Lord Mayor of that our City; that in Truth Alderman *Cordwell* was, by the Plurality of Voices, chosen; and that this Man was never presented to, or admitted by us, in such Manner as is prescribed by their Charter; neither had that Judge, who presumed to swear him, any more Colour of Law or Authority to administer such an Oath to him, than he hath to do the same To-morrow to any other Alderman of the City: And we do therefore hereby declare the said *Isaac Pennington* not to be Mayor of that our City of *London*, and to have no lawful Authority to exercise the same: and that our good Subjects of that our City, ought not to submit to any Orders, Directions, or Commands, which shall issue from him as Lord Mayor of that our City; but that the same are void, and of none effect.

And

‘ And we do once more require you the Sheriffs An. 18. Car. I.  
 ‘ of our said City, and all other the Magistrates of 1642.  
 ‘ the same, in which all our good Subjects of that  
 ‘ City will assist you, that you cause the said *Isaac*  
 ‘ *Pennington, Ven, Fowke, and Manwaring*, to be  
 ‘ apprehended and committed to safe Custody; that  
 ‘ we may proceed against them as guilty of High  
 ‘ Treason, and as the principal Authors of those  
 ‘ Calamities which are now so heavy upon our poor  
 ‘ Subjects of that City; which, if not suddenly  
 ‘ remedied, will in a short Time utterly confound  
 ‘ a Place and a People, lately of so flourishing an  
 ‘ Estimation in all the Parts of *Christendom*.

January.

‘ And whereas we are informed, that one *Brown*,  
 ‘ a Woodmonger, *Titchborne*, a Linendraper, and  
 ‘ one *Harvy*, a Silkman, have exercised great In-  
 ‘ solencies and Outrages in that our City; and when  
 ‘ many of our good Subjects there have assembled  
 ‘ together, in a peaceable and modest Manner, to  
 ‘ consult about the Peace and Welfare of that City,  
 ‘ the said mutinous and seditious Persons have pre-  
 ‘ sumed to lead Multitudes of armed Men against  
 ‘ them; and, by such Force, have beaten, wound-  
 ‘ ed, and killed our good Subjects: Our Will and  
 ‘ Pleasure is, That if the said *Brown, Titchborne*,  
 ‘ and *Harvy*, or either of them, shall so far neglect  
 ‘ our gracious Offer of Pardon, as still to engage  
 ‘ themselves in those unwarrantable and seditious  
 ‘ Courses, you, our Sheriffs of *London*, do raise  
 ‘ Power to suppress the said Force; and that you,  
 ‘ and all our Ministers of Justice, use your utmost  
 ‘ Means to apprehend the said Persons, and to bring  
 ‘ them to condign Punishment: And we do hereby  
 ‘ declare, That it shall be lawful for any of our  
 ‘ loving Subjects to resist and oppose the said Per-  
 ‘ sons, if they shall hereafter, in such a warlike  
 ‘ Manner, endeavour to molest them, as they  
 ‘ would do Rebels and Traitors.

‘ And we hope that all our good Subjects of that  
 ‘ our much-injured City of *London* do take Notice  
 ‘ of our Grace and Favour towards them, in our

‘ so



An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

January.

our said *Answer*: And whosoever shall not behave himself like a good Subject in this our Kingdom, shall not, if we can help it, receive the Benefit and Advantage of being our Subject in any other; but all foreign Princes shall know, that as such Person hath parted with his Loyalty to us, so he must not hope for any Security by us; and, to that Purpose, we shall henceforward have a very inquisitive Eye upon the Actions of all our Subjects, that some Example may be made, how easy it is for us to punish their Disloyalties abroad, who, for a Time, may avoid our Justice at home.

And to the end that none of our good Subjects of that our City may think themselves bound to obey any of the Orders or Commands of the pretended Lord Mayor, whom we have and do still accuse of High Treason, and conspiring to take our Life from us, it is well known to those Citizens, who understand the Charter of that City, (so amply granted by our Royal Progenitors, and so graciously confirmed by us, and of which we presume our good Subjects there do still desire to receive the Benefit,) that the said *Isaac Pennington* was never regularly elected, or lawfully admitted to the Office of Lord Mayor of that our City; that in Truth Alderman *Cordwell* was, by the Plurality of Voices, chosen; and that this Man was never presented to, or admitted by us, in such Manner as is prescribed by their Charter; neither had that Judge, who presumed to swear him, any more Colour of Law or Authority to administer such an Oath to him, than he hath to do the same To-morrow to any other Alderman of the City: And we do therefore hereby declare the said *Isaac Pennington* not to be Mayor of that our City of *London*, and to have no lawful Authority to exercise the same: and that our good Subjects of that our City, ought not to submit to any Orders, Directions, or Commands, which shall issue from him as Lord Mayor of that our City; but that the same are void, and of none effect.

And

‘ And we do once more require you the Sheriffs  
 ‘ of our said City, and all other the Magistrates of  
 ‘ the same, in which all our good Subjects of that  
 ‘ City will assist you, that you cause the said *Iaac*  
 ‘ *Pennington, Ven, Fowke, and Manwaring*, to be  
 ‘ apprehended and committed to safe Custody; that  
 ‘ we may proceed against them as guilty of High  
 ‘ Treason, and as the principal Authors of those  
 ‘ Calamities which are now so heavy upon our poor  
 ‘ Subjects of that City; which, if not suddenly  
 ‘ remedied, will in a short Time utterly confound  
 ‘ a Place and a People, lately of so flourishing an  
 ‘ Estimation in all the Parts of *Christendom*.

An. 18. Car. I,  
 1642.  
 January.

‘ And whereas we are informed, that one *Brown*,  
 ‘ a Woodmonger, *Titchborne*, a Linendraper, and  
 ‘ one *Harvy*, a Silkman, have exercised great In-  
 ‘ solencies and Outrages in that our City; and when  
 ‘ many of our good Subjects there have assembled  
 ‘ together, in a peaceable and modest Manner, to  
 ‘ consult about the Peace and Welfare of that City,  
 ‘ the said mutinous and seditious Persons have pre-  
 ‘ sumed to lead Multitudes of armed Men against  
 ‘ them; and, by such Force, have beaten, wound-  
 ‘ ed, and killed our good Subjects: Our Will and  
 ‘ Pleasure is, That if the said *Brown, Titchborne*,  
 ‘ and *Harvy*, or either of them, shall so far neglect  
 ‘ our gracious Offer of Pardon, as still to engage  
 ‘ themselves in those unwarrantable and seditious  
 ‘ Courses, you, our Sheriffs of *London*, do raise  
 ‘ Power to suppress the said Force; and that you,  
 ‘ and all our Ministers of Justice, use your utmost  
 ‘ Means to apprehend the said Persons, and to bring  
 ‘ them to condign Punishment: And we do hereby  
 ‘ declare, That it shall be lawful for any of our  
 ‘ loving Subjects to resist and oppose the said Per-  
 ‘ sons, if they shall hereafter, in such a warlike  
 ‘ Manner, endeavour to molest them, as they  
 ‘ would do Rebels and Traitors.

‘ And we hope that all our good Subjects of that  
 ‘ our much-injured City of *London* do take Notice  
 ‘ of our Grace and Favour towards them, in our  
 ‘ so

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

‘ so freely passing by and pardoning the Offences  
 ‘ there committed against us, as we have offered  
 ‘ by our *Proclamation* and our late *Answer* ; and of  
 ‘ our very earnest Desire to be with them, and to  
 ‘ reside amongst them for their Comfort, Support,  
 ‘ and Protection ; if they shall, by first providing  
 ‘ for their own Security, in such Manner as we  
 ‘ have directed them in our late *Answer*, give us an  
 ‘ Instance that we may be safe there too ; and that  
 ‘ they do likewise observe, that, being by such  
 ‘ Violence kept from them, we have done our ut-  
 ‘ most Endeavour to continue and advance the de-  
 ‘ cayed Trading of that our City, by permitting  
 ‘ and encouraging all Resort and Traffick thither ;  
 ‘ and therefore if, by the stopping of Carriages, and  
 ‘ seizing Commodities by other Men, the Com-  
 ‘ merce and Correspondence be broken between  
 ‘ that Place and our good Subjects of other Coun-  
 ‘ ties, they will impute that Mischief to the true  
 ‘ Authors of it, and look upon us only as not able  
 ‘ to help them. \*

‘ Do but your Duties, and this Cloud, which  
 ‘ threatens a present Confusion, will quickly vanish  
 ‘ away ; and you will enjoy all the Blessings of a  
 ‘ happy Nation, to the which no Endeavour of ours  
 ‘ shall be wanting.’

*Given at our Court at Oxford, this 17th Day of  
 January, 1642.*

## The

\* This Passage of the King's *Letter* seems to allude to a *Decla-  
 ration* of Parliament made the 9th of this Month, whereby it was  
*ordained*, ‘ That no Ships whatsoever should, from thenceforth,  
 make any Voyage for the fetching of Coals or Salt from *Newcastle*,  
*Sunderland*, or *Blythe* ; or carrying of Corn, or other Provision of  
 Victual, untill the Town of *Newcastle* should be freed from the  
 Forces there raised, or maintained, against the Parliament ; and that  
 Town be reduced into such Hands, and Condition, as should declare  
 themselves for King and Parliament. And that if any Ship should,  
 at any Time after the first of *February* then next coming, bring into  
 any Port or Place of this Kingdom, any Coals or Salt laden from  
*Newcastle*, *Sunderland*, or *Blythe*, or any of them, untill further  
 Order be taken by both Houses of Parliament, that every such  
 Ship, and the Master and Sailors in the same, should be seized  
 upon, and stayed in such Port and Place where they come in, untill  
 the two Houses of Parliament, being thereof informed, should take  
 further Order and Direction therein.’



The Sheriffs having acquainted both Houses of An. 18. Car. 1.  
their Receipt of the foregoing *Letter* from the King, 1632.  
the several Companies were forbid to assemble at  
their Halls according to his Majesty's Order, and  
the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs were desired to take  
special Care to prevent the same: And some Ma-  
sters of Companies, that were chief Promoters in  
opposing this *Order* of Parliament, were taken into  
Custody. January. Which the Par-  
liament forbid  
them to do.

Thus much for the Proceedings of the Com-  
mittees at the *Guildhall* in *London*, and the Conse-  
quences of that Meeting:—It is now high Time  
to return, and see what other Business was doing  
at *Westminster*.

On the 16th of this Month the Commons made  
an *Order*, That no Carriers, Waggoners, Caris,  
or Waggon, or Horses laden with any Commo-  
dities whatsoever, should be permitted hereafter to  
go to *Oxford*, or any Part of the King's Army,  
with any Manner of Provisions, without the spe-  
cial License of that House: And in case of Dis-  
obedience to such *Order*, their Persons and Goods  
should be seized upon, and kept in safe Custody.  
And that diligent Search be made for any Monies  
that may be carried, or conveyed, by any Person to  
*Oxford*: Also another *Order*, That if any Agent,  
or Servant, to any Person bearing Arms against the  
Parliament, should presume to come to *Westminster*,  
or reside about *London*, they should be forthwith  
apprehended as Spies, and proceeded against accord-  
ingly. And stop all Pro-  
visions from go-  
ing to the King's  
Army, &c.

About this Time the King having issued out a  
*Proclamation* for adjourning all the Courts of Ju-  
stice, the next Term, from *London* and *Westminster*  
to *Oxford*: This was thought so prejudicial to the  
Public, that the Parliament forbade the Officers be-  
longing to the said several Courts to obey this *Pro-  
clamation*, or the King's Letters sent to the princi-  
pal Persons concerned in them. However, at the  
same Time, they thought fit to send a *Petition* to  
his The King ad-  
journs the Term  
to Oxford.

## 142 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1. his Majesty, offering *Reasons* against the said Removal, and praying that the King would revoke his Orders therein : To this the Lords received an *Answer*, which was read in their House, on the 18th of this Month, and was to this Effect : \*

His Majesty's  
Reasons for so  
doing,

‘ HIS Majesty hath seriously weighed the Reasons, presented unto him by both Houses of Parliament, to induce his Majesty to revoke his late *Proclamation* for the adjourning of the Term ; and returns this *Answer* :

‘ That the Lord Keeper of the Great Seal of *England*, being, in regard of his Majesty’s most important Affairs, necessarily to attend his Majesty ; his Majesty hath likewise appointed his High Court of *Chancery* to be held in the Place where his Majesty resides ; that so his Subjects may have their Causes determined by the supreme Judge of that Court : But is well content that the Masters of the *Chancery*, that are Assistants to the House of Peers, shall, notwithstanding his said *Proclamation*, continue their Attendance upon that House where they are Assistants.

‘ For his Court of *Wards*, upon which so essential a Part of his Majesty’s Revenue depends, it concerned him to draw the same to him ; since, being at *London*, it will prove of no Advantage or Supply to his Majesty’s Occasions, by reason of the Stops there of all Money from coming to him : And therefore he shall expect the Presence of the Council of that Court here, the Time of the Term being so short that they may speedily return again to the Service of the Houses, who have not used to deny their Members Leave, for so short a Time, to attend his Majesty’s Service, to which by Law they are bound ; besides that his Majesty doubts not but he may, for a convenient Time, upon pressing and urgent Occasions, especially for the

‘ Dif-

\* From the *Lords Journals* : This *Answer* of the King is omitted by *Rushworth* and *Husband*, though the following *Ordinance*, in Reply to it, is inserted in both those Collections.

# OF ENGLAND. 143

‘ Discharge of another necessary Duty, dispense  
 ‘ with a Peer’s Attendance upon the House without  
 ‘ any Breach of Privilege ; seeing it hath not been  
 ‘ denied in former Parliaments. An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
January.

‘ For the Danger of his Majesty’s Subjects in their  
 ‘ Passage by reason of the several Armies, his Ma-  
 ‘ jesty doth not know that they are to pass through  
 ‘ more Armies to his City of *Oxford*, than they  
 ‘ must to his City of *London* ; or that the Courts of  
 ‘ Justice cannot proceed with the same Freedom and  
 ‘ Liberty where his Majesty’s Army is, as where  
 ‘ there is an Army against him ; but his Majesty  
 ‘ will take care that his good Subjects shall no way  
 ‘ suffer by his Army here, which he can, by no  
 ‘ Means, undertake for the other Army at *London*.

‘ For the Records of the several Courts, his Ma-  
 ‘ jesty expects and requires Obedience from the Of-  
 ‘ ficers thereof, according to his *Proclamation* ; as  
 ‘ no doubt his Subjects will take care for the parti-  
 ‘ cular Evidences that concern themselves ; and for  
 ‘ the safe Carriage and Conveyance of both, that  
 ‘ they suffer not, in the least Degree, by his Majesty’s  
 ‘ Army, his Majesty will surely provide ; neither  
 ‘ can the Prejudice be great to his Subjects, the  
 ‘ Courts of Equity being no further removed from  
 ‘ the Courts of Law.

‘ The Reason of his Majesty’s Adjournment of  
 ‘ the Courts of Law till *Craftino Purificationis*, is  
 ‘ for the great Danger his good Subjects must un-  
 ‘ dergo by passing through the Armies : And his  
 ‘ Majesty much fears his good Subjects will have  
 ‘ little Benefit by their legal Proceedings, whilst  
 ‘ his Majesty and the Law are no better able to de-  
 ‘ fend one another.

‘ For these Reasons, and those expressed in his  
 ‘ *Proclamation*, his Majesty can, by no Means, re-  
 ‘ voke his said *Proclamation* ; but it being his un-  
 ‘ doubted Right to adjourn or remove the s<sup>e</sup>rms to  
 ‘ what Place he pleases, if he hath yet any undoubt-  
 ‘ ed Right, his Majesty expects Obedience to his  
 ‘ said *Proclamation* and to every Part thereof.’

This



## 144 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 18. CAR. I.  
1642.

January.

An Ordinance of  
Parliament, for-  
bidding any Obe-  
dience to the  
King's Procla-  
mation for such  
Adjournment.

This *Answer* of the King's was ordered to be communicated to the Commons: And, a few Days after, both Houses passed the following *Ordinance*, to justify their Conduct in not suffering the Adjournment of the Courts to *Oxford*.

THE Lords and Commons having taken in-  
to their serious Consideration a *Proclama-*  
*tion*, dated at *Oxford* the 27<sup>th</sup> of *December* last,  
for the adjourning of the Court of *Chancery*, the  
Court of *Wards* and *Liveries*, the Duchy of *Lan-*  
*caster*, the Court of *Requefts*, the Receipt of his  
Majesty's *Exchequer*, and of the *First Fruits* and  
*Tenths*, from the City of *Westminster* unto the  
City of *Oxford*; and for adjourning the Courts of  
King's Bench, Common Pleas, and *Exchequer*, un-  
to the Return *Craftino Purificationis*, found it to  
tend much to the Prejudice of the Common-wealth  
to remove the said Courts and Receipts to *Oxford*,  
where the Body of an Army, raised against the  
Parliament and the Authority thereof, now resides;  
and therefore, in performance of the Duty and  
Trust reposed in them by the Kingdom, whom  
they represent, did exhibit their humble Advice  
and Petition to his Majesty, with the Reasons in-  
ducing them thereunto, to revoke the said *Procla-*  
*mation*; and, with all Humility, desired that the  
said Courts and Receipts might be kept at their  
several usual Places and Times, and not at *Ox-*  
*ford*: But his Majesty, giving still more Credit to  
the Suggestions of those wicked and malignant  
Persons that yet encompass him, than to his high-  
est and most faithful Council, returned his nega-  
tive Answer, and expressly denied to repeal this  
*Proclamation*:

Now, the Lords and Commons clearly disco-  
vering the great Inconveniencies and Mischiefs that  
necessarily must happen to his Majesty's most  
faithful and best affected Subjects, in case those  
Courts and Receipts be removed to *Oxford*; where  
such of them as have Occasion to attend, cannot,  
with

with any Safety to their Persons and Estates, repair; his Majesty having, in effect, declared all Persons that have contributed any thing in Aid or Defence of the Parliament, and the Privileges thereof, to be guilty of High Treason; and, in pursuance thereof, by the Force and Power of the Army there remaining, have seized upon many of their Persons, where they are detained Prisoners, and some proceeded against as Traitors; having nothing laid to their Charge but their assisting the Parliament, and opposing that Army raised to destroy it and the Kingdom: And finding that divers, both Judges and others, whose Attendance upon the said Courts and Receipts will be necessary, consist of Persons that are Members and Assistants to both Houses of Parliament, whose Presence at this Time cannot be spared; and that if the Records, necessary to be used in the said Courts, should be removed from the usual Places towards *Oxford*, in a Time when two Armies are residing near thereabouts, it would endanger the Miscarriage of them; which might ruin many of his Majesty's Subjects, whose Estates depend thereupon: And that so long a Distance between the said Courts of Law and Equity, which have necessary Dependence one upon another, would prove exceeding prejudicial to many, thought it their Duty, in Discharge of the Trust reposed in them by the Common-wealth, as much as in them lieth to prevent the said Inconveniences: And therefore do hereby *declare and order*, That no Judge, Minister, or other Person belonging to any of the said Courts or Receipts, shall repair to the said City of *Oxford*; or do or execute any thing belonging to the said Offices and Employments, but in Places usual for the doing and executing thereof: And that no Member of, or Assistant to, any of the two Houses of Parliament, that have any Place, Office or Employment, about any of the said Courts or Receipts, shall presume to depart from their Attendance on Parliament, without the special Leave of that House

An. 18. Car. 1.  
 1642.  
 January.

## 146 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I. whereof they are Members or Assistants: And that  
 1642.  
 January.

‘no Person shall remove, or cause to be remov’d,  
 ‘any Records or Writings of any of the said Courts  
 ‘or Receipts to or towards the City of *Oxford*:  
 ‘And the Lords and Commons do *declare*, That if any  
 ‘Person shall disobey this *Order*, they will proceed  
 ‘against them as wilful Contemners of the Autho-  
 ‘rity of Parliament, and Disturbers of the Peace of  
 ‘the Kingdom.  
 ‘And it is further *declared* and *ordered* by the  
 ‘said Lords and Commons, That no Judgment,  
 ‘Decree, Order and Proceedings whatsoever, that  
 ‘shall be given, made, or had, by or in any of the  
 ‘said Courts or Receipts, out of the usual Places  
 ‘where the said Courts and Receipts have been ac-  
 ‘customed to be held and kept, shall bind any Per-  
 ‘son that shall or may be concerned therein, with-  
 ‘out his own voluntary Consent: And that the  
 ‘said Lords and Commons will, by the Authority  
 ‘of both Houses of Parliament, protect and keep  
 ‘indemnified all Judges, Officers, and other Per-  
 ‘sons from any Damage or Inconvenience, that  
 ‘may or can happen to them for yielding Obedience  
 ‘to this *Ordinance*.’

The Commons had been, all the latter End of this Month, fully employed in settling the several *Articles*, by way of *Propositions*, to be presented to the King, for a general Pacification, which had been sent down to them from the Lords. After several Conferences, Altercations, and Emendations made by both Houses, and several Divisions on the principal Heads by the latter, they were at last finished on the 27th. And a Committee, consisting of four Lords and eight Commoners, was appointed to go to *Oxford*; for whom a Letter of Safe Conduct was desired. The King immediately returned one, and, on the first Day of *February*, the following *Propositions* were presented to his Majesty, at *Oxford*, by the Parliament’s Commissioners appointed for that Purpose. Their Titles and Names were, the Earls of *Northumberland*, *Pembroke*



*broke, Sarum, and Holland; for the Commons, the Lords Wenman and Dungarvon, Sir John Holland, Sir William Litton, the Hon. William Pierpoint, Bulstrode Whitlocke, Edmund Waller, and Richard Winwood, Esqrs.*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
February.

*The HUMBLE DESIRES and PROPOSITIONS of the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, tendered unto his Majesty, Feb. 1, 1642.*

‘ **W**E your Majesty’s most humble and faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, having in our Thoughts the Glory of God, your Majesty’s Honour, and the Prosperity of your People; and being most grievously afflicted with the pressing Miseries and Calamities which have overwhelmed your two Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, since your Majesty hath, by the Persuasion of evil Counsellors, withdrawn yourself from the Parliament, raised an Army against it, and, by Force thereof, protected Delinquents from the Justice of it; constraining us to take Arms for the Defence of our Religion, Laws, Liberties, Privileges of Parliament, and for the Sitting of the Parliament in Safety; which Fears and Dangers are continued and increased by the raising, drawing together, and arming of great Numbers of Papists under the Command of the Earl of *Newcastle*; likewise by making the Lord *Herbert of Ragland*, and other known Papists, Commanders of great Forces; whereby many grievous Oppressions, Rapines, and Cruelties have been, and are daily exercised upon the Persons and Estates of your People; much innocent Blood hath been spilt, and the Papists have attained Means of attempting, with Hopes of effecting, their mischievous Design of rooting out the Reformed Religion, and destroying the Professors thereof. In the tender Sense and Compassion of these Evils, under which your People and Kingdom lie, (according to the Duty which we owe to God, your Majesty, and the Kingdom for which we are trusted)

The Parliament’s Propositions for Peace, presented to the King at Oxford.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

February.

do most earnestly desire that an End may be put to these great Distempers and Distractions, for the preventing of that Desolation which doth threaten all your Majesty's Dominions; and as we have rendered, and still are ready to render, to your Majesty that Subjection, Obedience, and Service which we owe unto you; so we most humbly beseech your Majesty to remove the Causes of this War, and to vouchsafe us that Peace and Protection which we and our Ancestors have formerly enjoyed under your Majesty and your Royal Predecessors, and graciously to accept and grant these our most humble Desires and Propositions:

I. That your Majesty will be pleased to disband your Armies, as we likewise shall be ready to disband all those Forces which we have raised; and that you will be pleased to return to your Parliament.

II. That you will leave Delinquents to a legal Trial, and Judgment of Parliament.

III. That the Papists may not only be disbanded, but disarmed according to Law.

IV. That your Majesty will be pleased to give your Royal Assent unto the Bill for taking away superstitious Innovations: To the Bill for the utter abolishing and taking away of all Archbishops, Bishops, their Chancellors and Commissaries, Deans, Sub-deans, Deans and Chapters, Archdeacons, Canons, and Prebendaries, and all Chaunters, Chancellors, Treasurers, Sub-Treasurers, Succentors, and Sacrists; and all Vicars Choral, Choiristers, old Vicars and new Vicars of any Cathedral or Collegiate Church, and all other their Under-Officers out of the Church of *England*: To the Bill against scandalous Ministers: To the Bill against Pluralities: And to the Bill for Consultation to be had with Godly, Religious, and Learned Divines: That your Majesty will be pleased to promise to pass such other good Bills for settling of Church-Government, as, upon Consultation with the Assembly of the said Divines, shall



shall be resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, and, by them, be presented to your Majesty.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

February.

V. That your Majesty having express'd, in your *Answer* to the *Nineteen Propositions* of both Houses of Parliament, an hearty Affection and Intention for the rooting out of Popery out of this Kingdom; and that if both the Houses of Parliament can yet find a more effectual Course to disabie Jesuits, Priests, and Popish Recusants, from disturbing the State or eluding the Laws, that you would willingly give your Consent unto it; that you would be graciously pleased, for the better Discovery and speedier Conviction of Recusants, that an Oath may be established by Act of Parliament, to be administred in such Manner as by both Houses shall be agreed on; wherein they shall abjure and renounce the Pope's Supremacy, the Doctrine of Transubstantiation, Purgatory, worshipping of the consecrated Host, Crucifixes and Images; and the Refusing the said Oath, being tendered in such Manner as shall be appointed by Act of Parliament, shall be a sufficient Conviction in Law of Recusancy. And that your Majesty will be graciously pleased to give your Royal Assent unto a Bill for the Education of the Children of Papists, by Protestants, in the Protestant Religion. That for the more effectual Execution of the Laws against Popish Recusants, your Majesty will be pleased to consent to a Bill for the true levying of the Penalties against them; and that the same Penalties may be levied and disposed of in such Manner as both Houses of Parliament shall agree on, so as your Majesty be at no Loss. And likewise to a Bill, whereby the Practice of Papists against the State may be prevented, and the Laws against them duly executed.

VI. That the Earl of *Bristol* may be removed from your Majesty's Counsels; and that both he and the Lord *Herbert*, eldest Son to the Earl of *Worcester*, may likewise be restrained from coming within the Verge of the Court; and that they



An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

February.

‘ may not bear any Office, or have any Employ-  
‘ ments, concerning the State or Common-wealth.

VII. ‘ That your Majesty will be graciously  
‘ pleased, by Act of Parliament, to settle the Mi-  
‘ litia, both by Sea and Land, and also the Forts and  
‘ Ports of the Kingdom, in such a Manner as shall  
‘ be agreed on by both Houses.

VIII. ‘ That your Majesty will be pleased, by  
‘ your Letters Patent, to make Sir *John Brampton*  
‘ Chief Justice of your Court of *King’s Bench*;  
‘ *William Lenthall*, Esq; the now Speaker of the  
‘ Commons House, Master of the *Rolls*; and to  
‘ continue the Lord Chief Justice *Bankes* Chief Ju-  
‘ stice of the Court of *Common Pleas*; and likewise  
‘ to make Mr. Serjeant *Wylde* Chief Baron of your  
‘ Court of *Exchequer*; and that Mr. Justice *Ba-*  
‘ *con* may be continued, and Mr. Serjeant *Rolle* and  
‘ Mr. Serjeant *Atkins* made Justices of the *King’s*  
‘ *Bench*; that Mr. Justice *Reeves* and Mr. Justice  
‘ *Foster* may be continued, and Mr. Serjeant *Phea-*  
‘ *sant* made one of the Justices of your Court of  
‘ *Common Pleas*; that Mr. Serjeant *Creswell*, Mr.  
‘ *Samuel Brown*, and Mr. *John Puleston* may be  
‘ Barons of the *Exchequer*; and that all these, and  
‘ all the Judges of the same Courts for the Time  
‘ to come, may hold their Places, by Letters Pa-  
‘ tent under the Great Seal, *quamdiu se bene gef-*  
‘ *serint*; and that the several Persons, not before  
‘ named, that do hold any of these Places before  
‘ mentioned, may be removed.

IX. ‘ That all such Persons as have been put  
‘ out of the Commission of Peace, or Oyer and  
‘ Terminer, or from being *Custodes Rotulorum*,  
‘ since the first Day of *April*, 1642, other than such  
‘ as were put out by Desire of both or either of  
‘ the Houses of Parliament, may again be put into  
‘ those Commissions and Offices; and that such  
‘ Persons may be put out of those Commissions  
‘ and Offices as shall be excepted against by both  
‘ Houses of Parliament.

X. ‘ That your Majesty will be pleased to pass  
‘ the Bill now presented to your Majesty, to vindi-  
‘ cate

cate and secure the Privileges of Parliament from  
the ill Consequence of the late Precedent, in the  
Charge and Proceeding against the Lord *Kimbol-*  
*ton*, now Earl of *Manchester*, and the five Mem-  
bers of the House of Commons.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
February.

XI. That your Majesty's Royal Assent may  
be given unto such Acts, as shall be advised by  
both Houses of Parliament for the satisfying and  
paying the Debts and Damages, wherein the two  
Houses of Parliament have engaged the Public  
Faith of the Kingdom.

XII. That your Majesty will be pleased, ac-  
cording to a gracious *Answer* heretofore received  
from you, to enter into a more strict Alliance with  
the States of the *United Provinces*, and other  
Neighbour Princes and States of the Protestant  
Religion, for the Defence and Maintenance there-  
of against all Designs and Attempts of the Popish  
and Jesuitical Faction to subvert and suppress it;  
whereby your Subjects may hope to be free from  
the Mischiefs which this Kingdom hath endured,  
tho' the Power which some of that Party have  
had in your Councils, and will be much encour-  
aged, in a Parliamentary Way, for your Aid and  
Assistance, in Restoring your Royal Sister and the  
Prince Elector to those Dignities and Dominions  
which belong unto them, and the Relieving the  
other Protestant Princes who have suffered in the  
same Cause.

XIII. That in the General Pardon which your  
Majesty hath been pleased to offer to your Sub-  
jects, all Offences and Misdemeanors committed  
before the 10th of *January* 1641, which have  
been, or shall be, questioned or proceeded against  
in Parliament, upon Complaint in the House of  
Commons, before the 10th of *January* 1643,  
shall be excepted; which Offences and Misdeme-  
anors shall, nevertheless, be taken and adjudged  
to be fully discharged against all other inferior  
Courts. That likewise there shall be an Excep-  
tion of all Offences committed by any Person or  
Persons, which hath, or have, had any Hand or  
Prac-



## 152 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

February.

Practice in the Rebellion of *Ireland*; which hath, or have, given any Counsel, Assistance, or Encouragement to the Rebels there, for the Maintenance of that Rebellion; as likewise the Exception of *William Earl of Newcastle*, and *George Lord Digby*.

XIV. 'That your Majesty will be pleased to restore such Members of either House of Parliament to their several Places of Services and Employment, out of which they have been put since the Beginning of this Parliament; that they may receive Satisfaction and Reparation for those Places, and for the Profits which they have lost by such Removals, upon the Petition of both Houses of Parliament; and that all others may be restored to their Offices and Employments, who have been put out of the same upon any Displeasure conceived against them for any Assistance given to both Houses of Parliament, or obeying their Commands; or forbearing to leave their Attendance upon the Parliament without Licence; or for any other Occasion arising from these unhappy Differences betwixt your Majesty and both Houses of Parliament, upon the like Petition of both Houses.

'These Things being granted and performed, as it hath always been our hearty Prayer, so shall we be enabled to make it our hopeful Endeavour, that your Majesty and your People may enjoy the Blessings of Peace, Truth, and Justice; the Royalty and Greatness of your Throne may be supported by the loyal and bountiful Affections of your People; their Liberties and Privileges maintained by your Majesty's Protection and Justice; and this public Honour and Happiness of your Majesty and all your Dominions, communicated to other Churches and States of your Alliance; and be derived to your Royal Posterity and the future Generations in this Kingdom for ever.'

Mr. Whitlocke's  
Account of that  
Affair.

Mr. *Whitlocke*, one of the Commissioners above-mentioned, gives us the following Particulars relating to this remarkable Embassy: 'They had  
their



their first Access to the King in the Garden of *Christ-Church*, where he was walking with the Prince, and divers other Lords attending him: All of them kissed his Hand, not as they were ranked in the Safe-Conduct, but according to their several Degrees. Mr. *Pierpoint* before the Knights, he being an Earl's Son \*; and Mr. *Winwood* before Mr. *Whitlocke*, he being the eldest Knight's Son; and Mr. *Waller* the last: The King said to him, *Though you are the last, yet you are not the worst, nor the least in my Favour*: The Discovery of a Plot then in hand in *London*, to betray the Parliament, wherein Mr. *Waller* was engaged with *Chaloner*, *Tomkins*, and others, which was then in Agitation, did manifest the King's Courtship to Mr. *Waller* to be for that Service.

An. 18. Car. I,  
1642.

February.

' After they had all kissed the King's Hand, the Prince gave them his Hand to kiss.

' The Earl of *Northumberland* read the *Propositions* to the King, with a sober and stout Carriage; and being interrupted by the King, he said smartly, *Your Majesty will give me Leave to proceed?* The King answered, *Ay, ay*; and so the Earl read them all through.'

To go on with this Affair, since nothing else material intervened, except a Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, out of the *North*, which we postpone for the present:—The *Journals* inform us, That the Lords Commissioners, at their Return to the House, *February* 6, made the following Report of this whole Proceeding; that when they presented the *Propositions* to the King, he made them this short Answer:

*My Lords,*

' I Was always for Peace, and am more concerned in it than any, being the Father of the Country next under God. I cannot chuse but speak, though I thought to have said nothing. I confess

The King's Answer to the Commissioners.

\* This Gentleman's Father, the Earl of *Kingsfon*, and his elder Brother, the Lord *Newark*, were at this Time in the King's Army.

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

February.

‘sefs I am surprized, though I have seen somewhat  
 ‘of this, yet I believed them not to be such as these  
 ‘are. They that principally contrived and penned  
 ‘them, had no Thoughts of Peace in their Hearts,  
 ‘but to make Things worse and worse; yet I shall  
 ‘do my Part, and take as much Honey out of the  
 ‘Gall as I can. I will think of them, and take  
 ‘Time to give you my *Answer*.’

‘That, two Days after, the King sent for them  
 again, and told them, That he had considered of  
 the *Propositions*, presented unto him from both  
 Houses of Parliament, and had returned this *Answer*,  
 which he commanded the Earl of *Holland* to read:

And to the Par-  
 liament.

‘IF his Majesty had not given up all the Faculties  
 ‘of his Soul to an earnest Endeavour of a Peace  
 ‘and Reconciliation with his People, or if he would  
 ‘suffer himself, by any Provocation, to be drawn  
 ‘to a Sharpness of Language, at a Time when there  
 ‘seems somewhat like an Overture of Accommo-  
 ‘dation, he could not but resent the heavy Charges  
 ‘upon him in the Preamble of these *Propositions*;  
 ‘and would not suffer himself to be reproached with  
 ‘protecting of Delinquents, by Force, from Justice;  
 ‘(his Majesty’s Desire having always been, that all  
 ‘Men should be tried by the known Law, and  
 ‘he having been refused it) with raising an Army  
 ‘against his Parliament; and to be told that Arms  
 ‘have been taken up against him, for the Defence  
 ‘of Religion, Laws, Liberties, Privileges of Par-  
 ‘liament, and for the Sitting of the Parliament in  
 ‘Safety; with many other Particulars in that Pre-  
 ‘amble, so often and so fully answered by his Ma-  
 ‘jesty, without remembering the World of the  
 ‘Time and Circumstances of raising those Arms  
 ‘against him, when his Majesty was so far from  
 ‘being in a Condition to invade other Men’s Rights,  
 ‘that he was not able to maintain and defend his  
 ‘own from Violence; and without telling his good  
 ‘Subjects that their Religion, (the true Protestant  
 ‘Religion, in which his Majesty was born, hath faith-  
 ‘fully



fully lived, and to which he will die a willing Sa-  
crifice) their Laws, Liberties, Privileges and Safety  
of Parliament, were so amply settled and establish-  
ed, or offered to be so, by his Majesty, before any  
Army was raised against him, and long before any  
raised by him for his Defence; that if nothing had  
been desired but that Peace and Protection which his  
Subjects and their Ancestors had, in the best Times,  
enjoyed under his Majesty, or his Royal Prede-  
cessors, this Misunderstanding and Distance be-  
tween his Majesty and his People, and this gene-  
ral Misery and Distraction upon the Face of the  
whole Kingdom, had not been now the Discourse  
of *Christendom*: But his Majesty will forbear any  
Expressions of Bitterness, or of a Sense of his own  
Sufferings; that, if it be possible, the Memory  
thereof may be lost to the World; and therefore,  
though many of the *Propositions*, presented to his  
Majesty by both Houses, appear to him very de-  
rogatory from, and destructive to, his just Power  
and Prerogative, and no way beneficial to his  
Subjects; few of them being already due to them  
by the Laws establish'd (and how Unparliamentary  
it is by Arms to require new Laws, all the World  
may judge); yet, because these may be waved or  
mollified, and many Things that are now dark and  
doubtful in them cleared and explained upon De-  
bate, his Majesty is pleased (such is his Sense of  
the Miseries this Kingdom suffers by this unnatural  
War, and his earnest Desire to remove them by an  
happy Peace) that a speedy Time and Place be a-  
greed upon for the Meeting of such Persons as his  
Majesty and both Houses shall appoint, to discuss  
these *Propositions*, and such others here following,  
as his Majesty doth propose to them:

I. That his Majesty's own Revenue, Maga-  
zine, Towns, Forts, and Ships, which have  
been taken or kept from him by Force, be forth-  
with restored unto him.

II. That whatsoever hath been done or published  
contrary to the known Laws of the Land, or  
derogatory to his Majesty's legal and known  
Power



## 156 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 13. Car. 1.

1642.

February.

‘ Power and Rights, be renounced and recalled ;  
‘ that no Seed may remain for the like to spring out  
‘ of for the future.

III. ‘ That whatsoever illegal Power hath been  
‘ claimed and exercised by or over his Subjects, as  
‘ imprisoning their Persons without Law, stopping  
‘ their *Habeas Corpus*, and imposing upon their  
‘ Estates without Act of Parliament, &c. either by  
‘ both or either House, or any Committee of both  
‘ or either, or by any Persons appointed by any of  
‘ them, be disclaimed ; and all such Persons so com-  
‘ mitted, forthwith discharged.

IV. ‘ That as his Majesty will readily consent,  
‘ having done so heretofore, to the Execution of  
‘ all Laws already made, and to any good Acts to  
‘ be made for the Suppressing of Popery, and for  
‘ the firm Settling of the Protestant Religion now  
‘ established by Law ; so he desires that a good Bill  
‘ may be framed for the better preserving the Book  
‘ of Common Prayer from the Scorn and Violence  
‘ of *Brownists*, *Anabaptists*, and other *Sectaries*, with  
‘ such Clauses for the Ease of tender Consciences as  
‘ his Majesty hath formerly offered.

V. ‘ That all such Persons as, upon the Treaty,  
‘ shall be excepted out of the General Pardon, shall  
‘ be tried *per Pares*, according to the usual Course  
‘ and known Laws of the Land ; and that it be left  
‘ to that, either to acquit or condemn them.

VI. And to the Intent this Treaty may not suf-  
‘ fer Interruption by any intervening Accidents, that  
‘ a Cessation of Arms, and free Trade, for all his  
‘ Majesty’s Subjects may be first agreed upon.

‘ This Offer and Desire of his Majesty he hopes  
‘ will be chearfully entertained, that a speedy and  
‘ blessed Peace may be accomplished. If it shall  
‘ be rejected, or by insisting upon unreasonable Cir-  
‘ cumstances be made impossible, (which he hopes  
‘ God in his Mercy to this Nation will not suffer)  
‘ the Guilt of the Blood which will be shed, and  
‘ the Desolation which must follow, will lie upon  
‘ the Heads of the Refusers. However his Majesty  
‘ is resolved, thro’ what Accidents soever he shall  
‘ be

‘ be compelled to recover his Rights, and with what  
 ‘ prosperous Success soever it shall please God to bless  
 ‘ him, that by his earnest constant Endeavours to  
 ‘ propagate and promote the true Protestant Reli-  
 ‘ gion, and by his governing according to the known  
 ‘ Law of the Land, and upholding the just Privileges  
 ‘ of Parliament, according to his frequent Protestations  
 ‘ made before Almighty God, which he will  
 ‘ always inviolably observe, the World shall see that  
 ‘ he hath undergone all these Difficulties and Hazards  
 ‘ for the Defence and Maintenance of those ;  
 ‘ the zealous Preservation of which his Majesty  
 ‘ well knows is the only Foundation and Means for  
 ‘ the true Happiness of him and his People.’

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.  
 February.

Upon the Reading of this *Answer*, the Lords resolved to communicate it to the House of Commons, as a Matter of great and serious Consideration, and to desire them to take it into their utmost Care and Thought.

But before we proceed any farther in the Transactions of *February*, it is necessary to take Notice of a Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, in the *North*; which was delivered to the Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference, and read in that House on the first of this Month. The Letter was address'd to the Speaker :

S I R,

*I*T is most necessary that I continue my Relation to you of the State and Condition of the Affairs in this Country, that they may be made known to both Houses; and Provision made for Succours to be sent us, which have hitherto come very slowly, though they have made large Expressions of their Care. We have been long destitute of Money to pay the Army, and to supply that Want, I have used all possible Industry, by taking up Money upon Exchange, and by calling upon the Country to supply me for the present upon the Public Faith.

Lord Fairfax's  
 Letter concerning  
 his taking of  
 Leeds.

The Want of Money doth so perplex the Part of the Army here, as I imagine the House will not expect  
 any



## 156 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

February.

‘ Power and Rights, be renounced and recalled ;  
‘ that no Seed may remain for the like to spring out  
‘ of for the future.

III. ‘ That whatsoever illegal Power hath been  
‘ claimed and exercised by or over his Subjects, as  
‘ imprisoning their Persons without Law, stopping  
‘ their *Habeas Corpus*, and imposing upon their  
‘ Estates without Act of Parliament, &c. either by  
‘ both or either House, or any Committee of both  
‘ or either, or by any Persons appointed by any of  
‘ them, be disclaimed ; and all such Persons so com-  
‘ mitted, forthwith discharged.

IV. ‘ That as his Majesty will readily consent,  
‘ having done so heretofore, to the Execution of  
‘ all Laws already made, and to any good Acts to  
‘ be made for the Suppressing of Popery, and for  
‘ the firm Settling of the Protestant Religion now  
‘ established by Law ; so he desires that a good Bill  
‘ may be framed for the better preserving the Book  
‘ of Common Prayer from the Scorn and Violence  
‘ of *Brownists*, *Anabaptists*, and other *Sectaries*, with  
‘ such Clauses for the Ease of tender Consciences as  
‘ his Majesty hath formerly offered.

V. ‘ That all such Persons as, upon the Treaty,  
‘ shall be excepted out of the General Pardon, shall  
‘ be tried *per Pares*, according to the usual Course  
‘ and known Laws of the Land ; and that it be left  
‘ to that, either to acquit or condemn them.

VI. And to the Intent this Treaty may not suf-  
‘ fer Interruption by any intervening Accidents, that  
‘ a Cessation of Arms, and free Trade, for all his  
‘ Majesty’s Subjects may be first agreed upon.

‘ This Offer and Desire of his Majesty he hopes  
‘ will be chearfully entertained, that a speedy and  
‘ blessed Peace may be accomplished. If it shall  
‘ be rejected, or by insisting upon unreasonable Cir-  
‘ cumstances be made impossible, (which he hopes  
‘ God in his Mercy to this Nation will not suffer)  
‘ the Guilt of the Blood which will be shed, and  
‘ the Desolation which must follow, will lie upon  
‘ the Heads of the Refusers. However his Majesty  
‘ is resolved, thro’ what Accidents soever he shall

‘ be



‘ be compelled to recover his Rights, and with what  
 ‘ prosperous Success soever it shall please God to bless  
 ‘ him, that by his earnest constant Endeavours to  
 ‘ propagate and promote the true Protestant Reli-  
 ‘ gion, and by his governing according to the known  
 ‘ Law of the Land, and upholding the just Privileges  
 ‘ of Parliament, according to his frequent Protestations  
 ‘ made before Almighty God, which he will  
 ‘ always inviolably observe, the World shall see that  
 ‘ he hath undergone all these Difficulties and Hazards  
 ‘ for the Defence and Maintenance of those ;  
 ‘ the zealous Preservation of which his Majesty  
 ‘ well knows is the only Foundation and Means for  
 ‘ the true Happiness of him and his People.’

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.  
 February.

Upon the Reading of this *Answer*, the Lords resolved to communicate it to the House of Commons, as a Matter of great and serious Consideration, and to desire them to take it into their utmost Care and Thought.

But before we proceed any farther in the Transactions of *February*, it is necessary to take Notice of a Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, in the *North*; which was delivered to the Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference, and read in that House on the first of this Month. The Letter was address'd to the Speaker :

S I R,

*IT* is most necessary that I continue my Relation to you of the State and Condition of the Affairs in this Country, that they may be made known to both Houses; and Provision made for Succours to be sent us, which have hitherto come very slowly, though they have made large Expressions of their Care. We have been long destitute of Money to pay the Army, and to supply that Want, I have used all possible Industry, by taking up Money upon Exchange, and by calling upon the Country to supply me for the present upon the Public Faith.

Lord Fairfax's  
 Letter concern-  
 ing his taking of  
 Leeds.

The Want of Money doth so perplex the Part of the Army here, as I imagine the House will not expect  
 any

## 158 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

February.

*any considerable Matter to be done by us; though, God be thanked, the Forces I send from hence, and are raised by the Country in other Places, are daily acting something to advance the Public Service. As in the North-Riding, where Sir Hugh Cholmley hath carried himself very bravely, giving several Defeats to the Enemy near Malton; and on Monday the sixteenth of this Month, joining his Forces to Sir Matthew Boynton, they fell upon Col. Slingsby at Gifbrough, where they defeated him and 600 Horse and Foot with him, that had done much Spoil in the North-Riding; they wounded and took Col. Slingsby himself, with 140 other Prisoners; killed a great many, and recovered 200 Arms with the Place. Amongst the Prisoners taken by Sir Hugh Cholmley at Malton, and here at Gifbrough, it is found that a great Number are Papists; and indeed the Strength of the Enemies will be found to consist much of Papists, and Popishly affected, the Earl of Newcastle granting his Commissions, for raising Men, to Papists for the most Part. I have heard, of late, of Commissions granted to twelve Recusants of these Parts, whose Names I send inclosed; and it is not to be doubted he walks the same Ways in other Places, as well as here; which Courses have so advanced Popery, as I hear, that in York where many Recusants are settled, Mass is ordinarily said in every Street; and such Affronts offered to the Protestants and the Ministry, as few dare resort to Church. In other Parts of the Country, I am informed, that for many Miles together, the religious Ministry are all either fled, or imprisoned; which Persecutions, if they be not timely repressed, will extirpate or much depress the Protestant Religion in these Parts.*

*About Bradford and Halifax, God hath blessed my Son and those small Forces with good Success against the Enemy, in several light Skirmishes: On Monday was Se'nnight, he seized on the Lord Saville's House at Howley, and put about 100 Musqueteers into it; and on Tuesday, I sent Sir William Fairfax and his Officers, with some Arms, to raise his Regiment in those Parts; and for his Convoy, I sent what Horse and Dra-*



Dragooners I could spare from hence, directing them An. 18. Car. 1.  
to stay with my Son to assist him in his Design against  
Leeds. 1642.

February.

Yesterday I received Letters from him, wherein he relates to me, that on Monday last, he drew his Forces out of Bradford, and marched to Leeds, where Sir William Saville commanded in Chief; my Son first summoned them by a Trumpet to yield, which being refused, the Assault began, wherein his Men carried themselves with great Resolution; for the Town was fortified on all Sides, furnished with two brass Sakers, and manned with 1500 Soldiers, yet they forced an Entry in two Hours Fight; there were not lost on both Sides above forty Men, but he took four Colours, and 500 Prisoners, of which six are Commanders; and, with the Prisoners, they took many Arms, the Sakers, and all the Munition they had, which was not much; on our Part we lost thirteen Men, and Capt. Briggs, and Capt. Lee, both sore wounded; and I perceive that in this Exploit, Sir William Fairfax, Sir Thomas Norcliffe, and Serjeant-Major Forbes, with the rest of the Commanders, carried themselves very gallantly. The People do observe that Sir William Saville, and the chief Commanders on the other Side, soon after the Fight began, fled by secret Ways towards Pontefract, and their Men after them by Degrees; but, by the Way, Serjeant-Major Beaumont was drowned crossing the River, and Sir William Saville very narrowly escaped the like Fate.

After Leeds was thus won, my Son writes that he intended to have marched to Wakefield, where Sir George Wentworth commanded, but was prevented therein by the Enemies Fears; who, hearing he had taken Leeds, fled all away from Wakefield to Pontefract, and left the Town; so he hath sent some Forces to invest and keep that Place: Thus hath God blessed their Endeavours on that Side; and now I am told that Capt. Hotham and Sir John Saville are gone up Yesterday with some Forces into those Parts, but upon what Design I know not.

Yesterday Morning I had some Intelligence that the most Part of the Forces were marched, the Day before,

out



An. 18. Car. 1

1642.

February.

out of Doncaster; so I have sent my Serjeant-Major-General with six Companies of Foot to invest that Place, and to leave some Forces to keep it untill more Strength come to us out of the Southern Counties; which, if it could be hastened hither, might very much advance the Cause, and crush the Popish Forces before they be supplied by the Queen's Coming, or their Party in Scotland, of which there is some Expectation.

I desire you will make known to the House the great Extremities that are put upon me; and that a certain Course may be settled for supplying us with Money for the Entertainment of the Army, in such Season as our Men may be encouraged in the Service, and not fall into a Way of plundering for Want of Pay. My Son upon the taking of Leeds, though he entered it by Force, yet he restrained his Army from Pillaging; so I have ordered that the Malignants, in lieu of the Spoil challenged to be due unto the Soldiers, shall give them a Month's Entertainment, which I hope will content both Parties.

Yesternight Intelligence was brought to me, that the Earl of Newcastle hath drawn down all his Forces from the South Parts of Yorkshire, those only excepted that kept the Castle at Pontefract; for Yesterday he marched from Sherburne to York, with thirty-six Colours, two Pieces of Canon, forty-five other Carriages; the certain Cause I do not yet know, but suppose it is to meet the Arms and Munition coming from Newcastle; or to prepare for the Queen's Entertainment at York, which is much spoken of. I shall carry a vigilant Eye upon his Designs, and endeavour to prevent them, so far as can be expected from the Forces under the Command of,

Sir,

Selby, Jan. 26,  
1642.

Your most affectionate

Friend and Servant,

FER. FAIRFAX.

P. S. I have sent unto Mr. White, to be shewed unto you, three Papers found with Col. Slingsby, when he was taken at Gifbrough, by Sir Hugh Cholm-

Cholmley; which may, peradventure, be thought necessary to be made known to the House, if Sir Hugh have not already presented the Transcript to you.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
February,

The Names of the Recufants in these Parts, to whom the Earl of Newcastle hath granted Commissions to raise Forces, are Mr. Robert Trapps, Mr. Stephenson of Thornton, Sir John Middleton, Sir Walter Vavasour, Mr. Ann, Mr. Tindale, Mr. Bretton, Sir Philip Hungate, Mr. Waterton, Mr. Thwinge, Capt. Sare, and Capt. Granger.

After the Reading of this Letter, the following Ordinance is entered in the *Lords Journals*.

‘ **W** Hereas many and fervent Prayers have been sent up to God, for his Blessing to be poured down upon the Endeavours of the Parliament in Maintenance of his own Cause and Religion, now openly assaulted by *Papists*; and because it is most just and necessary to observe the Return of these Prayers, that our Mouths and Hearts may be as much enlarged in Praises as they have been in Prayers, the Lords and Commons have thought fit to publish some late good Successes, as so many Answers from Heaven, which God hath given to the Prayers of his Servants.

An Ordinance of  
Parliament in  
Consequence  
thereof.

‘ And whereas sundry late *Declarations* have shewed to the World divers Informations and Proofs concerning the raising of a *Papish* Army, with an Intention to subvert God’s true Religion professed, and by Law established, in this Kingdom, and to introduce *Papish* Idolatry and Superstition; that it may appear what was, before, an Intention is now Matter of Fact, and really put in Execution, a most certain and true Relation is here offered to public Notice and Observation; wherein it may be seen that this *Papish* Army hath set up the open Practice of their abominable Idolatry in *York*, the second City in the Kingdom; and are grown to that Height of Insolency, that they terrify and drive away the *Protestant* Ministers and People from



An. 18. Car. 1

1642.

February,

out of Doncaster; so I have sent my Serjeant-Major-General with six Companies of Foot to invest that Place, and to leave some Forces to keep it untill more Strength come to us out of the Southern Counties; which, if it could be hastened hither, might very much advance the Cause, and crush the Popish Forces before they be supplied by the Queen's Coming, or their Party in Scotland, of which there is some Expectation.

I desire you will make known to the House the great Extremities that are put upon me; and that a certain Course may be settled for supplying us with Money for the Entertainment of the Army, in such Season as our Men may be encouraged in the Service, and not fall into a Way of plundering for Want of Pay. My Son upon the taking of Leeds, though he entered it by Force, yet he restrained his Army from Pillaging; so I have ordered that the Malignants, in lieu of the Spoil challenged to be due unto the Soldiers, shall give them a Month's Entertainment, which I hope will content both Parties.

Yesternight Intelligence was brought to me, that the Earl of Newcastle hath drawn down all his Forces from the South Parts of Yorkshire, those only excepted that kept the Castle at Pontefract; for Yesterday he marched from Sherburne to York, with thirty-six Colours, two Pieces of Canon, forty-five other Carriages; the certain Cause I do not yet know, but suppose it is to meet the Arms and Munition coming from Newcastle; or to prepare for the Queen's Entertainment at York, which is much spoken of. I shall carry a vigilant Eye upon his Designs, and endeavour to prevent them, so far as can be expected from the Forces under the Command of,

Sir,

Selby, Jan. 26,  
1642.

Your most affectionate

Friend and Servant,

FER. FAIRFAX.

P. S. I have sent unto Mr. White, to be shewed unto you, three Papers found with Col. Slingsby, when he was taken at Gisbrough, by Sir Hugh Cholm-



Cholmley; which may, peradventure, be thought necessary to be made known to the House, if Sir Hugh have not already presented the Transcript to you.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
February.

*The Names of the Recusants in these Parts, to whom the Earl of Newcastle hath granted Commissions to raise Forces, are Mr. Robert Trapps, Mr. Stephenson of Thornton, Sir John Middleton, Sir Walter Vavasour, Mr. Ann, Mr. Tindale, Mr. Bretton, Sir Philip Hungate, Mr. Waterton, Mr. Thwinge, Capt. Sare, and Capt. Granger.*

After the Reading of this Letter, the following Ordinance is entered in the Lords Journals.

‘ **W** Hereas many and fervent Prayers have been sent up to God, for his Blessing to be poured down upon the Endeavours of the Parliament in Maintenance of his own Cause and Religion, now openly assaulted by *Papists*; and because it is most just and necessary to observe the Return of these Prayers, that our Mouths and Hearts may be as much enlarged in Praises as they have been in Prayers, the Lords and Commons have thought fit to publish some late good Successes, as so many Answers from Heaven, which God hath given to the Prayers of his Servants.

An Ordinance of  
Parliament in  
Consequence  
thereof.

‘ And whereas sundry late *Declarations* have shewed to the World divers Informations and Proofs concerning the raising of a *Popish* Army, with an Intention to subvert God’s true Religion professed, and by Law established, in this Kingdom, and to introduce *Popish* Idolatry and Superstition; that it may appear what was, before, an Intention is now Matter of Fact, and really put in Execution, a most certain and true Relation is here offered to public Notice and Observation; wherein it may be seen that this *Popish* Army hath set up the open Practice of their abominable Idolatry in *York*, the second City in the Kingdom; and are grown to that Height of Insolency, that they terrify and drive away the *Protestant* Ministers and People from

## 162 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

February.

‘ frequenting their own Churches, and from the  
‘ Practice of their own Religion ; wherein they  
‘ have given a Pattern and Pledge what they intend  
‘ to do, and what must be expected from them,  
‘ through the whole Kingdom. The Considera-  
‘ tion hereof (whereby the most precious Things in  
‘ the World, God’s Glory and true Worship, and  
‘ the Salvation of the Souls of Men, are brought in-  
‘ to Danger) ought to excite and stir up, and we  
‘ are confident it will, the strongest Endeavours and  
‘ most united Conjunctions, of all religious and  
‘ well-affected *Protestants* and Patriots, to resist and  
‘ suppress those Common Enemies of God, in Pity  
‘ to their Country and the Common-wealth ; for  
‘ now it plainly appears that, however they pretend  
‘ to defend the Religion and the Laws, yet their main  
‘ Intention is to establish *Papery* in this Kingdom, and  
‘ to extirpate the *Protestant* Religion ; which can-  
‘ not be done without Subversion of the Laws, as  
‘ the *Papists* have, almost, effected in *Ireland*.’

A Committee of  
Sequestration ap-  
pointed.

*February 3.* The Commons, after passing some  
*Votes*, for sequestering the Estates, real and personal,  
of some particular Persons, appointed a Committee  
to consider of the sequestering and seizing the Estates,  
real and personal, of all such Persons as have been,  
are, or shall be, in actual War or Arms against the  
Parliament : And to have Power to appoint Seque-  
strators, to make Allowances to such as should  
be employed in this Service ; and to use all other  
Means thought effectual to it. This was the first  
Beginning of an *Ordinance* of Parliament, which  
proved so extreme bitter to the Royalists in the  
Consequence.

An Ordinance for  
assessing Monies  
upon Malignants.

*Feb. 4.* Another severe *Ordinance* for the raising  
two Troops of Horse and one Regiment of Dragoons  
in the County of *Northampton* ; and for assessing of  
Monies upon the Malignants, disaffected Persons,  
*Papists*, Bishops, Deans, Deans and Chapters, &c.  
for the Maintenance of the said Forces, was read  
and put to the Question, in the House of Commons,  
but



but it passed in the Negative, by forty-one Voices An. 18. Car. I.  
against twenty.

1642.

February.

*Feb. 7.* The Lords took into Consideration the King's last *Answer* to their *Propositions*; and, first, it was agreed to proceed in the *Treaty*. Next, it was proposed, That the Armies on both Sides should be totally disbanded, and to have a *Cessation* of Arms, that there might be a *Treaty*; when, after a long Debate, it was resolved, in the Affirmative.

*Feb. 8.* A Paper was read in the House of Lords, called, *A general Confession of National Sins*; which was agreed to by both Houses, and ordered to be used by their Ministers at the next public Fast. \*

Several Days were employed in seeking out Ways and Means for raising of Money; and, amongst others, a Weekly Assessment was agreed on for the Maintenance of the Army; and an *Ordinance* was made for that Purpose. These new kind of Taxes lay prodigious hard on the Citizens of *London*, and all those Counties which were within the Power of the Parliament. The King seems to have supported his Army at this Time, chiefly, by Gifts and Loans.

And for a general Weekly Assessment.

*Feb. 13.* The Commons sent up their *Resolutions* on the intended *Treaty* at *Oxford*. They told the Lords, in a Conference, That they agreed with them in some Things, and differed in others; and offered the following *Votes*, of their House, to their Lordships Consideration.

*Resolved*, 'That this House doth concur with the Lords in their *Votes*, That there shall be a speedy Disbanding of both Armies; and that there should be a fixed Time appointed for it. The *Northern* and *Western* Armies to be first disbanded, which shall be on the first Day of *March* next; and the Day for disbanding all the other Armies, on the tenth of the same Month.'

Votes and Resolutions relating to disbanding the King's and the Parliament's Armies.

*Resolved*, 'That a Message be sent to his Majesty to desire his Consent for disbanding the Armies,

L 2

ac-

\* This Confession is in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 147.



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

February.

according to the *Votes* of this House; and that Persons shall be appointed to treat with his Majesty concerning the Manner of Disbanding.

The Question being put, Whether there shall be a present *Cessation* of Arms, in order to the *Treaty* on the *Propositions*, before the Disbanding of the Armies? it passed in the Negative.

*Resolved*, 'That when his Majesty shall have assented to a Disbanding, and the Time and Manner of it, then the Time for an immediate *Cessation* shall be agreed on.'

They also presented the following *Reasons* why there should be no *Treaty*, upon the *Propositions*, before disbanding :

'**T**HAT a *Treaty*, before the Disbanding, will be ineffectual to produce such a *Peace*, as may secure Religion against the Designs of the Papists to destroy it, and the Prelatical Party to corrupt it; or to secure the Liberties of the Kingdom, and the Privileges of Parliament, against Projectors and Delinquents. The Grounds and Evidence whereof are these :

1. 'Because Papists, Malignants, and other Delinquents, are now in greatest Power about the King; and this *Treaty* is like to be managed by their Counsels, whose Hopes and Interests are built upon the Breach and Distemper betwixt the King and his People; whereof they having been the greatest Cause, will still endeavour to hinder such a *Peace*, as may interrupt their own Designs: Whereas if the *Treaty* be after the Disbanding, the Authority of Parliament will be more powerful to remove such Impediments.

2. 'If the *Treaty* be before the Disbanding, it will not be safe for his Majesty to yield to any such Propositions as shall be for the suppressing of Papists and Malignants, his Person being in their Power; nor yet so safe for the Kingdom, whilst Arms are in their Hands, and so great a Party, both in *Ireland* and beyond the Seas, to encourage and assist them

them in resisting the Observance and Execution of An. 18. Car. I.  
any such *Treaty*. 1642.

3. ' If the Armies be once disbanded, though the *Treaties* should not succeed, yet the War cannot be carried on, but there will be Time of Mediation to take up those Differences without any further shedding of Blood: Whereas, if the Armies be on Foot, upon every Difference in the *Treaty* both Sides may be provoked, with more Animosity and Bitterness, to refer Matters to the bloody Trial of the Sword; and many intervening Accidents may interrupt the *Treaty*.

February.

4. ' That it will be most honourable for his Majesty, and more safe for his People, that the *Propositions* be yielded after the Disbanding than before; for thereby his Majesty will be freed from the Imputation of granting any thing by Force; which might both trench upon his Honour, and weaken the Validity of the Things granted; and both Houses will be free from that Tax of unparliamentary Proceedings, implied in his Majesty's *Answer*, Of requiring new Laws by Arms.

5. ' That if the *Treaty* be before Disbanding, it will endanger, or delay, his Majesty's Consent to the Disbanding at the Time limited; for there will be the same Reason, on his Majesty's Part, for concluding the *Treaty* before the Disbanding, as for the beginning it; that so, if he be like to have more Advantage by Arms than by the *Treaty*, he may still have it in his Power to pursue the same Ends for which his Force was at first raised; and all Delays in that Kind will make the Burdens and Miseries insupportable to the Kingdom, by the necessary Maintenance of all the Armies, and other Charges and Mischiefs which will thereby fall upon the Subject.

To these *Reasons* of the Commons was annexed the following *Resolution*:

' That, forthwith after the Disbanding of both Armies, this House will send a Committee to attend his Majesty, by an humble *Treaty*, to give him



## 166 The Parliamentary History

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

February.

due Satisfaction concerning the *Propositions* sent to them from his Majesty, and those presented from them to his Majesty.

These *Votes*, *Reasons* and *Resolutions*, laid before the Lords till the sixteenth of this Month, when they were quickened by another Message from the Commons. The *Votes* and *Reasons* were again read; and, after Debate, the Lords *resolved*, 'Not to recede from their former *Votes*, but to adhere to them, notwithstanding the *Reasons* of the House of Commons: To have a Conference with them, and acquaint them, That this House thinks it fit that the Time, from the Beginning of the *Treaty*, ought not to exceed twenty Days.

'That the King's *Propositions*, concerning his Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships; and the *Propositions* of both Houses for disbanding of all Armies may be first treated of.

'That the remote Armies may be disbanded by the last Day of *March*, or sooner if it can be: That the King's Army under the Command of the Earl of *Forth*, and that under the Earl of *Essex* raised by Parliament, may be disbanded by the 10th of *April*, or sooner.

'That there may be a present *Cessation* of all Acts of Hostility, on both Sides; and that all other Things may continue in the same State, without any further Intercourse, or free Passage, than is at present.

*Lastly*, 'Because that Money is necessary to maintain and support the Army, the Lords think fit to propose to the Commons, to join with them in sending to the Lord Mayor of *London*, to call a Common-Council the next Day, to move them to advance Money for the Supply of the Army.'

*Feb. 17.* The Debates on the disbanding, or not disbanding, the Armies before the *Treaty*, were this Day continued in the House of Commons; and, on two Divisions, one of them 76 against 73, and the other 86 against 83, it was carried to enter upon the *Treaty* before Disbanding. We meet with the following Speech of Sir Benjamin Rudyard of this  
very



very Day \*; which probably was one great Means An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
of the Question's being carried in the Affirmative.

Mr. Speaker,

February.

‘ I Do verily think that the Vote we have already pass’d, for the disbanding the Armies the first and tenth of *March*, will find us no farther on our Way than where we now are, besides the ill Accidents that may happen, and so much precious Time spent, as till then.

Sir Benjamin  
Rudyard’s  
Speech on that  
Occasion.

‘ Sir, the main Business is, whether we shall have a present *Treaty* or no. And this concerns us in all that we have, and are. Since we refused a *Treaty* at *Nottingham*, I do not find that we have gotten much Ground, although our Army then was fresh, full, and full paid; the People erect, bountiful and forward to the War. Now the Disposition of the Kingdom, for the greatest Part, stands bent towards a Peace: So that wheresoever the Refusal, or Delay of the Way to it shall be fix’d, the Disadvantage will fall on that Side. How clear soever the Intentions of the House are, yet abroad it will be taken but as a Shew without Reality, and so it will be returned upon us.

‘ For the *Propositions*; I have not known, nor heard, that all the Propositions in any *Treaty* of Importance were ever swallowed whole. If some be harsh and rough, they may be wrought and supplied by wise Treaters, made fit for an acceptable Agreement. If others be unpassable, they may be totally rejected. Those that are our unquestionable Rights, may be so claimed, and held.

‘ Mr. Speaker, we have already tasted the bitter bloody Fruits of War, we are grown exceedingly behind hand with ourselves since we began it: If we persist, there will such a Confluence of Mischiefs break in upon us, as, I am afraid, will ruin the King, the Kingdom, the Nation; unless God be merciful to us, and do step in with a great Miracle, for a little one will not serve our Turn.

‘ I

\* From the original Edition, printed for Michael Young,

## 168 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

February.

‘ I have long and thoughtfully expected that the Cup of Trembling, which hath gone round about unto other Nations, would at length come in amongst us; it is now come at last, and we may drink the Dregs of it, the worst; which God avert.

‘ There is yet some Comfort left, that our Miseries are not likely to last long: For we cannot fight here as they do in *Germany*, in that great, large, vast Continent; where, although there be War in some Parts of it, yet there are many other remote quiet Places, for Trade and Tillage to support it. We must fight as in a Cock-pit, we are surrounded with the Sea. We have no stronger Holds than our own Skulls, and our own Ribs, to keep out Enemies; so that the whole Kingdom will suddenly be but one Flame.

‘ It hath been said in this House, That we are bound in Conscience to punish the Shedding of innocent Blood: But, Sir, who shall be answerable for all the innocent Blood which shall be spilt hereafter, if we do not endeavour a *Peace*, by a speedy *Treaty*? Certainly God is as much to be trusted in a *Treaty*, as in a *War*: It is he that gives Wisdom to treat, as well as Courage to fight, and Success to both, as it pleaseth him. Blood is a crying Sin, it pollutes a Land: Why should we defile this Land any longer?

‘ Wherefore, Mr. Speaker, let us stint Blood as soon as we can. Let us agree with our Adversaries in the Way, by a present, short, wary *Treaty*. God direct us.’

*Feb. 18.* At a Conference, this Day, the Commons informed the Lords, That they agreed with them in all the Articles relating to the *Treaty*; but these will fall after in another Place.

Propositions from the Citizens of London, as to raising Money, disbanding the Army, &c.

*Feb. 20.* New *Propositions* having been made to the Citizens for a considerable Advance of Money, some of the Aldermen and Common-Council, this Day, attended the House of Lords; when, being called in, they declared, ‘ That they were sent from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Common Coun-



Council of the City of *London*, to give their Lordships an Account of the Desire of both Houses for the Advancement of 60,000 *l.* which the Common Council have taken into Consideration, and voted to raise it speedily, if possible it may be; and the Common Council have many Things in Agitation, which are not yet digested; but think it fit humbly to desire of their Lordships, and the House of Commons, some Things that will give Encouragement in the raising of this Money, which they offer to their Lordships Consideration.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
February.

1. ' That both Houses would vouchsafe to advance the raising of 60,000 *l.* by their own Example, and pay it in to the Hands of the Treasurers at *Guild-hall*, in *London*, to the end that the Sight of it may encourage others.

2. ' That they may be eased in the Rates of the weekly Assessment, because it exceeds the Proportion of the County, if it be not too late.

3. ' That the 3000 *l.* per Month, granted for Defence of the City, out of the weekly Assessment, may be made 4000 *l.*

4. ' It is humbly desired that the Citizens Lands and Houses in the Country, may not be rated for the weekly Assessment, so that they pay in *London*.

5. ' It is desired, in regard they are informed that divers Misinformations have been made concerning the City of *London* by private Persons, that hereafter no such Credit may be given thereunto, as to be accounted the Sense of the City, unless it proceeds from the Court of Aldermen or Common-Council, signified by special Messengers of their own, or by their Burgeses, directed by one of the said Courts.

6. ' That it will much promote the said Service, if the Money assessed by virtue of divers *Ordinances*, be collected forthwith in *London*, and other Parts of the Kingdom, that the Charge may not lye wholly upon the willing Party; for that otherwise the Well-affected will be either destroyed with them or for them; with them, if they should refuse as others do; or for them, by contributing, alone, to the Public Safety more than their Estates will bear.

7. ' That



An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

February.

‘ I have long and thoughtfully expected that the Cup of Trembling, which hath gone round about unto other Nations, would at length come in amongst us ; it is now come at last, and we may drink the Dregs of it, the worst ; which God avert.

‘ There is yet some Comfort left, that our Miseries are not likely to last long : For we cannot fight here as they do in *Germany*, in that great, large, vast Continent ; where, although there be War in some Parts of it, yet there are many other remote quiet Places, for Trade and Tillage to support it. We must fight as in a Cock-pit, we are surrounded with the Sea. We have no stronger Holds than our own Skulls, and our own Ribs, to keep out Enemies ; so that the whole Kingdom will suddenly be but one Flame.

‘ It hath been said in this House, That we are bound in Conscience to punish the Shedding of innocent Blood : But, Sir, who shall be answerable for all the innocent Blood which shall be spilt hereafter, if we do not endeavour a *Peace*, by a speedy *Treaty* ? Certainly God is as much to be trusted in a *Treaty*, as in a *War* : It is he that gives Wisdom to treat, as well as Courage to fight, and Success to both, as it pleaseth him. Blood is a crying Sin, it pollutes a Land : Why should we defile this Land any longer ?

‘ Wherefore, Mr. Speaker, let us stint Blood as soon as we can. Let us agree with our Adversaries in the Way, by a present, short, wary *Treaty*. God direct us.’

*Feb. 18.* At a Conference, this Day, the Commons informed the Lords, That they agreed with them in all the Articles relating to the *Treaty* ; but these will fall after in another Place.

Propositions from  
the Citizens of  
London, as to  
raising Money,  
disbanding the  
Army, &c.

*Feb. 20.* New *Propositions* having been made to the Citizens for a considerable Advance of Money, some of the Aldermen and Common-Council, this Day, attended the House of Lords ; when, being called in, they declared, ‘ That they were sent from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Common  
Coun-

Council of the City of *London*, to give their Lordships an Account of the Desire of both Houses for the Advancement of 60,000 *l.* which the Common Council have taken into Consideration, and voted to raise it speedily, if possible it may be; and the Common Council have many Things in Agitation, which are not yet digested; but think it fit humbly to desire of their Lordships, and the House of Commons, some Things that will give Encouragement in the raising of this Money, which they offer to their Lordships Consideration.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
February.

1. ' That both Houses would vouchsafe to advance the raising of 60,000 *l.* by their own Example, and pay it in to the Hands of the Treasurers at *Guild-hall*, in *London*, to the end that the Sight of it may encourage others.

2. ' That they may be eased in the Rates of the weekly Assessment, because it exceeds the Proportion of the County, if it be not too late.

3. ' That the 3000 *l.* per Month, granted for Defence of the City, out of the weekly Assessment, may be made 4000 *l.*

4. ' It is humbly desired that the Citizens Lands and Houses in the Country, may not be rated for the weekly Assessment, so that they pay in *London*.

5. ' It is desired, in regard they are informed that divers Misinformations have been made concerning the City of *London* by private Persons, that hereafter no such Credit may be given thereunto, as to be accounted the Sense of the City, unless it proceeds from the Court of Aldermen or Common-Council, signified by special Messengers of their own, or by their Burgeses, directed by one of the said Courts.

6. ' That it will much promote the said Service, if the Money assessed by virtue of divers *Ordinances*, be collected forthwith in *London*, and other Parts of the Kingdom, that the Charge may not lye wholly upon the willing Party; for that otherwise the Well-affected will be either destroyed with them or for them; with them, if they should refuse as others do; or for them, by contributing, alone, to the Public Safety more than their Estates will bear.

7. ' That



An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

February.

7. ' That Search be made, without the Liberties, in the Parts adjacent, for suspected Persons; and that, upon the Disbanding, those that are called the King's Army may be enjoined to go to their several Habitations, and not to come to *London*, to the Disturbance of the Peace, Safety, and Welfare of the said City, and of the good Government thereof; and that during the Time of the *Treaty* and *Cessation*, none of the said Army may be permitted to come to the City.

8. ' That to prevent Misapprehensions and Jealousies concerning the present Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, about the *Treaty* and *Cessation*, and *Disbanding*, it is humbly prayed it may be declared, That the Resolution of both Houses is the same as at the first, That nothing shall be done but that which tends to the securing the true Protestant Religion, the just Liberties of the Subjects, and Privileges of Parliament.

9. ' It is desired that the *Ordinance* for the weekly Assessment may pass forthwith, for securing the Reimbursement of the 60,000 *l.* which, otherwise, will not be raised.

' The Resolutions of both Houses are humbly desired herein, as an Encouragement to carry on the Business.'

The *Answer* returned to these *Messages* was,

' That their Lordships gave the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council, Thanks for their Readiness and Care in the raising of 60,000 *l.* and to let them know that their Lordships hope nothing shall be done in this *Treaty*, but what shall be for the Security of the true Protestant Religion, the Privilege of Parliament, the just Privileges of the Subject, and the Security of the City of *London*.

' For the *Ordinance* for the weekly Assessment, this House hath passed it already, and sent it to the House of Commons; and concerning the making of 3000 *l.* Allowance a-week to be 4000 *l.* their Lordships will give the best Furtherance they can in

it.



# Of ENGLAND. 171

it. As for other Particulars their Lordships will take them into Consideration? An. 13. Car. I.  
1642.

February.

*Feb. 21.* The House of Lords had sent a Copy of the *Votes* of both Houses concerning the *Cessation*, &c. to the Earl of *Essex*, their General; at the same Time desiring his Opinion and Advice about them; to which the General returned the following Answer, addressed to their Speaker:

My Lord,

*I* Must acknowledge the Obligation I have to the Lords, that they desire my Advice about the Particulars concerning a Cessation. My Lord, if I had known of it before it had been voted, I should have clearly delivered my Opinion, and then submitted myself and it to your Lordships greater Wisdoms; but, my Lord, now I know my Duty. The Arms you have raised are so dispersed, and so many Difficulties in it, that it is too great a Burthen for me to undertake to deliver my Opinion; not doubting but that your Lordships, in your grave Wisdoms, have weighed all the Inconveniences that may happen to your Servants employed by you, during this Cessation, and the Ways how to prevent them, before you voted the Cessation. My Lord, if I knew how to give a clear Answer to a Business I am so great a Stranger to, having been at none of the Debates, I should shew my Obedience to their Commands. I am,

My Lord,

Windfor, Feb. 20.  
1642.

Your Lordship's

humble Servant,

ESSEX.

After this the House being informed that one Mr. William Murray was without, with a Letter from his Majesty to the Speaker. His Lordship was appointed to receive it; which contained only a Command to read the following *Message* in the House, and

An. 18. Car. 1. and afterwards to communicate it to the Com-  
mons.

1642.

February.

CHARLES R.

And the King's  
Message on the  
same Subject.

Whereas his Majesty hath, together with a  
*Treaty* proposed a *Cessation* of Arms to  
both his Houses of Parliament, now sixteen Days  
since, to which, as yet, he hath received no An-  
swer: To the end that his Majesty may so clearly  
understand the Houses, that no such Imputations,  
as have been formerly, may after be laid upon him,  
upon Occasion of any thing that may intervene;  
his Majesty desires, if a *Cessation* shall be approved  
of by them, that the Day upon which the *Cessa-  
tion* is thought fit to begin, and such particular  
Limits and Conditions of that *Cessation* as are ne-  
cessary to be understood and agreed on before the  
*Cessation* itself can actually begin, be proposed by  
them at the same Time, with their Approbation  
of it; since, as his Majesty supposes by the pre-  
sent great Preparation of several Forces of the Earl  
of *Essex* to march several Ways, that till such  
Time as this be done, they do not conceive them-  
selves obliged to an actual *Cessation*: So neither,  
till then, doth his Majesty conceive himself obliged  
to it.

Hereupon the Lords *resolved* to have a Confe-  
rence with the House of Commons, and commu-  
nicate this *Message* and the Earl of *Essex's Letter*  
to them; and to desire that a Committee of Mem-  
bers of both Houses may be appointed to consider in  
what Manner, and what Limitations, the *Cessation* of  
Arms may proceed in, and how to be carried on.

Feb. 23. The Parliament had sent a *Petition* to  
the King, which they called their *Desire and Ad-  
vice*, That the next *Lent Assizes, &c.* should be  
put off, during these turbulent Times; they, this  
Day, receiv'd an *Answer* to it from the King, which  
was read in the House; and, for Connection Sake,  
we



we give them both together. And, first, the *Desire* An. 18. Car. 1.  
and *Advice*: 1642.

February.

**T**HE Lords and Commons in Parliament humbly  
shew, That your Justices and other liege People, who are or shall be summoned, or have other Cause to attend at the next Assizes, and General Goal-Delivery appointed to be shortly kept in the several Counties of England and Wales, cannot resort thither without great Peril of their Lives, and Damage to their Estates, by reason of the present miserable Distractions, and armed Forces being in all Parts of your Realm: In regard whereof, the Lords and Commons do humbly advise and desire your Majesty to command, That the said Assizes and General Goal-Delivery be not holden as is appointed; but that the same may be deferred untill it shall please God to restore Peace unto your People.

The Parliament desire the Lent-Assizes may be put off;

HIS MAJESTY'S ANSWER to the foregoing DESIRE and ADVICE.

**H**IS Majesty hath weighed the *Desire* and *Advice* of the Lords and Commons, sent in a Letter to the Lord Falkland, from the Earl of Manchester, concerning the putting off the General Assizes and Goal-Delivery throughout the Kingdom. To which his Majesty returns this Answer, That the present bloody Distraction of the Kingdom (which his Majesty hath used all possible Means to prevent, and will still to remove) doth afflict his Majesty, under no Consideration more, than of the great Interruption and Stop it makes in the Course and Proceedings of Justice, and the Execution of the Laws; whereby his good Subjects are robbed of the Peace and Security they were born to: And therefore, as much as in him lies, he will advance that only Means of their Happiness; at least they shall see that their Sufferings, that Way, proceed not from his Majesty: And since they may now expect,

To which the King refuses his Consent.

by



# 174 The Parliamentary History

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

February.

by the Laws, Statutes, and Customs of the Kingdom, the *Affizes* and *General Goal-Delivery* in every County, his Majesty thinks not fit to command the contrary; but will take severe and precise Order, that none of his good Subjects shall receive the least Prejudice, as they repair thither, by any of his Majesty's Forces; which Rule he shall be glad to see observed by others; and then he hopes, by the due Execution of the Laws, even these Public Calamities may have some Abatement, and the Kingdom recover its former Peace and Prosperity.

The latter End of this Month was chiefly taken up in framing Articles to be sent to the King for a *Cessation* of Arms, before the intended *Treaty* began. And, after consulting with their Lord-General and a Council of War, a Form was drawn up; which, after many Conferences and Alterations, was, on the 28th of this Month, perfected, read, and agreed to by both Houses, and ran in these Words:

Articles of Cessation, previous to the Treaty.

Whereas the Lords and Commons in Parliament, out of a tender Sense of the present Miseries and Distractions of the Kingdom, and for the obtaining and settling of a happy Peace between his Majesty and his People, have humbly presented his Majesty divers *Propositions*, to which he hath been pleased to make this Return; That his Desire was, that a speedy Time and Place might be appointed for the discussing of those Propositions, and likewise some others proposed by his Majesty. It is thereupon agreed in both Houses, that a Committee of both Houses shall be appointed to attend his Majesty, on or before the fourth of March, if his Majesty shall so please, to endeavour to give him all humble and fit Satisfaction concerning the said Propositions, both his Majesty's and their own.

And whereas, for the more speedy Removal of the bloody and miserable Effects of War, his Majesty hath likewise been graciously pleased, by a late *Message*, to signify his Desire, That, for avoiding

# Of ENGLAND. 175

ing all intervening Accidents of War, which might interrupt this Treaty, there might be a Cessation of Arms, under such particular Conditions and Limitations as should be agreed on: Their humble Desires therein concurring with his Majesty, it is, by them, assented and agreed, That a Cessation of Arms, in order to such a Treaty as is resolved upon by both Houses of Parliament, may be enjoined to all the Armies and Forces now on Foot in the Kingdom of England and Dominion of Wales, on either Side, under the Restrictions and Limitations hereafter following; and that neither Side shall be bound and limited by this Cessation, in any other-wise, or to any other Purpose, than is hereafter expressed.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

February.

I. That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Money, Bullion, and all other Commodities, passing without such a Safe-Conduct as may warrant their Passage, may be staid and seized on, as if no such Cessation were agreed on at all.

II. That all Manner of Persons, passing without such a Safe-Conduct as is mentioned in the Article next going before, shall be apprehended and detained, as if no such Cessation were agreed on at all.

III. That his Majesty's Forces in Oxfordshire, shall advance no nearer to Windsor than Wheatly; and, in Buckinghamshire, no nearer to Aylesbury than Brill; and that, in Berkshire, the Forces respectively shall not advance nearer the one to the other than now they are; that the Parliament Forces in Oxfordshire shall advance no nearer to Oxford than Henley; those in Buckinghamshire, no nearer to Oxford than Aylesbury; that his Majesty's Forces shall take no new Quarters above twelve Miles from Oxford, any Way; and that the Parliament Forces shall take no new Quarters above twelve Miles from Windsor, any Way.

IV. That no Siege shall be begun, or continued, against Gloucester; and that his Majesty's Forces, now employed in the Siege, shall return to Cirencester,



## 176 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.

February,

*cester* and *Malmshury*, or to *Oxford*, as shall be most for their Conveniency: That the Parliament Forces which are in *Gloucestershire* shall remain in the Cities of *Gloucester*, *Bristol*, and the Castle and Town of *Berkley*; or retire nearer to *Windsor*, as they shall see Cause; and that those of *Wales*, which are drawn to *Gloucester*, shall return into their Quarters, where they were before they drew down to *Gloucestershire*.

V. 'That in case it be pretended on either Side, that the *Cessation* is violated, no Act of Hostility is immediately to follow; but, first, the Party complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on the other Side, and to allow three Days, after Notice given for Satisfaction: And in case Satisfaction be not given or accepted, then five Days Notice to be given before Hostility begin: And the like to be observed, in the remoter Armies, by the Commanders in Chief.

'*Lastly*, That all other Forces in the Kingdom of *England*, and Dominion of *Wales*, and not beforementioned, shall remain in the same Quarters and Places, as they are at the Time of the publishing of this *Cessation*, and under the same Conditions as are mentioned in the Articles before; and that this *Cessation* shall not extend to restrain the setting forth, or employing, of any Ships for the Defence of his Majesty's Dominions.

'All which they humbly desire his Majesty will be pleased to ratify and confirm, and that this *Cessation* may begin upon the fourth of *March* next, or sooner if it may be, and continue untill the twenty-fifth of the same Month; and, in the mean Time, to be publish'd to the Commanders, Officers, and Soldiers, and all other his Majesty's loving Subjects on either Side; and that the *Treaty*, intended, may commence upon the fourth of *March* next, or sooner if it may be; and the Continuance thereof not to exceed twenty Days.'

The same Day a *Petition* was presented to the Lords, from the City of *London*, by four Aldermen,



men, importing, That by the *Ordinance* lately made for the weekly Supply of 10,000*l.* the said Sum is too much for the City to bear, in regard of the Inequality between them and the Rates of other Counties; and they desired that there might be a clearer Explanation than is yet by the said *Ordinance* made: Also a full Declaration to free the Citizens of London, for their Houses and Lands lying in several Counties, they being assessed and paying in the City.

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
February.

The Aldermen were called in and told, That since their *Petition* was directed to both Houses of Parliament, the Lords would communicate it to the Commons, and consider of it in due Time.

The Commons sent up an *Ordinance* as a Security to the City for the late Loan of 60,000*l.* at 8*l.* per Cent. the Principal to be repaid out of the first Monies to be raised by the Weekly Assessment, now forthwith to be laid as well on the rest of the Kingdom as on the City of London. Agreed to by the Lords; and particular Commissioners were named and appointed to go down into the several Counties, to see this extraordinary Tax levied, and the *Ordinance* for it duly executed, which amounted, according to an Historian of that Age, to 33,580*l.* a Week\*.

Notwithstanding the King's *Answer* to the Parliament's *Petition* about putting off the Assizes, they concluded, That the Oath the Judges had taken to obey the King's *Mandates*, and that they might be prejudiced in obeying the Parliament, were no Reasons for holding the Assizes in these Times; when the Power of the Sword was so prevailing, that the public Justice of the Kingdom could not be administered in an equal and indifferent Way: They therefore *ordained*, That the several Judges and Justices of Assize of the several Courts, *&c.* should forbear to execute any Commissions of Assize this Lent Vacation, as they would answer the Contempt thereof at their Peril.

The Parliament  
forbid the Judges  
to go their Cir-  
cuits.

VOL. XII.

M

The

\* See George Wharton's Chronology.

## 178 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.  
1642.

March.

Commissioners  
appointed for the  
Treaty at Oxford.

The last Thing that both Houses agreed upon, as this Day, was the naming and appointing Commissioners to go upon the *Oxford Treaty*. The Lords named the Earl of *Northumberland* and the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*; and the Commons, Sir *William Armyn*, Sir *John Holland*, Mr. *Pierpoint*, and Mr. *Whitlocke*. It was also ordered, That the Speaker of the House of Lords should send the *Articles* relating to the *Cessation*, inclosed in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, the King's principal Secretary of State; and likewise to desire a Safe-Conduct from his Majesty, for the Commissioners of both Houses to go to *Oxford* and back again.

An *Ordinance* of Parliament was now made for fortifying the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Borough of *Southwark*; and the stopping up all High-ways and Bye-ways leacing to them, &c.

*March 2.* The neighbouring Counties associating with one another against the King, was much encouraged by the Parliament. The King did all he could to prevent it, by *Proclamations*, &c. and, this Day, one of them was sent up to the Lords by the Commons, with the latter's *Resolutions* and *Votes* upon it; to which they desired the Lords Concurrence: A Copy of which we think proper to insert, as a Specimen of many more, in the *Journals*, of the same Kind.

By the KING.

HIS MAJESTY'S PROCLAMATION, *forbidding all his loving Subjects of the Counties of Kent, Surrey, Suffex, and Hampshire, to raise any Forces without his Majesty's Consent, or to enter into any Association or Protestation for the Assistance of the Rebellion against his Majesty.*

The King's Proclamation against the Associations in favour of the Parliament.

Whereas we have been informed of certain *Propositions* agreed upon by some seditious Persons of our several Counties of *Kent, Surrey, Suffex, and Hampshire*, for an *Association* betwixt the said Counties, to raise an Army of 3000 Foot  
' and

and 300 Horſe, and great Sums of Money for the Maintenance thereof, and an Invitation to our good Subjects of thoſe Counties, to enter into a *Proteſtation* to aſſiſt them in this odious and unnatural Rebellion: We do hereby declare for the Satisfaction of all our loving Subjects of thoſe Counties, and that they may not be ſeduced from their Obedience by the Cunning and Subtilty of thoſe Men, That the Entry into ſuch an *Aſſociation* and *Proteſtation*, and raiſing of Men, or contributing Money unto the ſame, is an Act of High Treason, and an Endeavour to take away our Life from us: And we do therefore ſtraitly charge and command all our loving Subjects whatſoever, upon their Allegiance, not to enter into any ſuch *Aſſociation* or *Proteſtation*; and that ſuch as, by colour of ſuch Authority, have aſſembled together, do immediately diſband, and repair to their Houſes.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
March.

And we do, once more, renew our Offer of a free and gracious Pardon to all our Subjects of our ſaid four ſeveral Counties, excepting thoſe whom we before excepted in our ſeveral *Proclamations* concerning thoſe our Counties; againſt all which we ſhall proceed according to the Rules of the Law, as againſt Perſons guilty of High Treason; and whom we do hereby require all our Officers and Miniſters of Juſtice, and all our loving Subjects whatſoever, to apprehend, and cauſe to be kept in ſafe Cuſtody.

And our expreſs Pleaſure is, and we do hereby will and command all the ſeveral Tenants of the Perſons excepted in our *Proclamation* for thoſe four Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Suſſex*, and *Hampſhire*, and all other Perſons who are any ways indebted unto them, and all the Tenants to any other Perſon of any of the ſaid Counties who is now in actual and open Rebellion againſt us, or who, after the publiſhing of this our *Proclamation*, ſhall contribute to the Maintenance of the Armies now in Rebellion againſt us, under the Conduct of *Robert* Earl of *Effex*, or of any other Perſon or Perſons, or that ſhall join in any ſuch traiterous



# 178 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

March.

Commissioners  
appointed for the  
Treaty at Oxford.

The last Thing that both Houses agreed upon, as this Day, was the naming and appointing Commissioners to go upon the *Oxford Treaty*. The Lords named the Earl of *Northumberland* and the Lord Viscount *Say and Sele*; and the Commons, Sir *William Armyn*, Sir *John Holland*, Mr. *Pierpoint*, and Mr. *Whitlocke*. It was also ordered, That the Speaker of the House of Lords should send the *Articles* relating to the *Cessation*, inclosed in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, the King's principal Secretary of State; and likewise to desire a Safe-Conduct from his Majesty, for the Commissioners of both Houses to go to *Oxford* and back again.

An *Ordinance* of Parliament was now made for fortifying the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Borough of *Southwark*; and the stopping up all High-ways and Bye-ways leading to them, &c.

*March 2.* The neighbouring Counties associating with one another against the King, was much encouraged by the Parliament. The King did all he could to prevent it, by *Proclamations*, &c. and, this Day, one of them was sent up to the Lords by the Commons, with the latter's *Resolutions* and *Votes* upon it; to which they desired the Lords Concurrence: A Copy of which we think proper to insert, as a Specimen of many more, in the *Journals*, of the same Kind.

By the KING.

HIS MAJESTY'S PROCLAMATION, forbidding all his loving Subjects of the Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Sussex*, and *Hampshire*, to raise any Forces without his Majesty's Consent, or to enter into any Association or Protestation for the Assistance of the Rebellion against his Majesty.

The King's Proclamation against the Associations in favour of the Parliament.

‘ WHEREAS we have been informed of certain Propositions agreed upon by some seditious Persons of our several Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Sussex*, and *Hampshire*, for an Association betwixt the said Counties, to raise an Army of 3000 Foot  
‘ and

‘ and 300 Horſe, and great Sums of Money for the Maintenance thereof, and an Invitation to our good Subjects of thoſe Counties, to enter into a *Proteſtation* to aſſiſt them in this odious and unnatural Rebellion: We do hereby declare for the Satisfaction of all our loving Subjects of thoſe Counties, and that they may not be ſeduced from their Obedience by the Cunning and Subtilty of thoſe Men, That the Entry into ſuch an *Association* and *Proteſtation*, and raiſing of Men, or contributing Money unto the ſame, is an Act of High Treason, and an Endeavour to take away our Life from us: And we do therefore ſtraitly charge and command all our loving Subjects whatſoever, upon their Allegiance, not to enter into any ſuch *Association* or *Proteſtation*; and that ſuch as, by colour of ſuch Authority, have aſſembled together, do immediately diſband, and repair to their Houſes.

An. 13. Car. I.

1642.

March.

‘ And we do, once more, renew our Offer of a free and gracious Pardon to all our Subjects of our ſaid four ſeveral Counties, excepting thoſe whom we before excepted in our ſeveral *Proclamations* concerning thoſe our Counties; againſt all which we ſhall proceed according to the Rules of the Law, as againſt Perſons guilty of High Treason; and whom we do hereby require all our Officers and Miniſters of Juſtice, and all our loving Subjects whatſoever, to apprehend, and cauſe to be kept in ſafe Cuſtody.

‘ And our expreſs Pleaſure is, and we do hereby will and command all the ſeveral Tenants of the Perſons excepted in our *Proclamation* for thoſe four Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Suſſex*, and *Hampſhire*, and all other Perſons who are any ways indebted unto them, and all the Tenants to any other Perſon of any of the ſaid Counties who is now in actual and open Rebellion againſt us, or who, after the publiſhing of this our *Proclamation*, ſhall contribute to the Maintenance of the Armies now in Rebellion againſt us, under the Conduct of *Robert Earl of Eſſex*, or of any other Perſon or Perſons, or that ſhall join in any ſuch traiterous



An. 13. Car. 1.

1642.

March.

*Association or Protestation*, That they forbear to pay any Rents or Debts due to the said several Persons, but detain the same in their Hands towards the Maintenance of the Peace of those Counties, and the Reparation of such Men who have suffered by the Violence of others.

And if any Soldier or Soldiers, now under Command against us in either of our said Counties, shall, within six Days after the publishing of this our *Proclamation*, apprehend and bring before us, or any Officers of our Army, or any other our Minister of Justice, so that the Person apprehended be kept in safe Custody, the Bodies of any of the Persons so excepted by us, or of any of the Commanders or Officers now in Rebellion against us in any of the said four Counties, such Soldiers, besides their Pardons, shall receive such liberal Rewards, by Pensions or otherwise, as their several Services, in respect of the Qualities of the Persons so apprehended, shall deserve.

And if any Commander or Officer, except the Persons so excepted, now in Rebellion against us, in any of the said four Counties, shall, within five Days after this our *Proclamation* published, being convinced in his Conscience of his damnable Offence against God and us, in assisting this odious Rebellion, return to his Allegiance and repair to our Army, and commit no hostile Act in the mean while against us, we shall not only pardon him, but so far employ him as his Quality and Demeanour shall deserve.

And we do hereby require all our loving Subjects, of what Degree or Quality soever, within our said four several Counties, upon their Allegiance, and as they tender the Cause of God, (the *Protestant* Religion being invaded and threatened to be rooted up by *Anabaptists*, *Brownists*, and *Atheists*) of us and our Posterity, (our Life being sought after in this Rebellion) and of themselves, (the Law and Liberty of the Subject being apparent Hazard to be subjected to an arbitrary lawless Power of a few schismatical, factious, and

am-



# Of ENGLAND. 181

‘ ambitious Persons) to assist us in Person, or with  
 ‘ the Loan of Money, Plate, and Horses, in this  
 ‘ our present great Necessity.

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.

March.

‘ And having said thus much out of our tender  
 ‘ Regard of our Subjects of those our Counties, if  
 ‘ they shall henceforward be guilty of the Premises;  
 ‘ and shall, either by Loan or Contribution, assist the  
 ‘ said Army of Rebels, or assemble and muster them-  
 ‘ selves in Arms, without Authority derived from  
 ‘ us under our Hand; or shall enter into any Oath  
 ‘ of *Association* for opposing us and our Army, and  
 ‘ so compel us to send Part of our Forces thither  
 ‘ to reduce them to their Obedience, they must an-  
 ‘ swer to God and their Country for the Miseries  
 ‘ that must follow.

‘ And our Pleasure is, That this our *Proclama-  
 tion* be read in all the Parish Churches and Chapels  
 ‘ in the said four several Counties.

*Given at our Court at Oxford, this sixteenth Day  
 of February, in the eighteenth Year of our  
 Reign.*

This *Proclamation* being read, the House of Com-  
 mons desired their Lordships Concurrence in the  
 following *Votes*:

1. ‘ That in this *Proclamation*, prohibiting the  
 Association of divers Counties, and the Contribu-  
 tions to the Army under the Earl of *Essex*, there  
 are contained divers false and scandalous Charges  
 upon the Proceedings of Parliament; and that it  
 is Treason to the Common-wealth in those that  
 advised his Majesty to the setting forth of this *Pro-  
 clamation*; and likewise in all such as shall publish  
 the same, or act any thing upon it; and that the  
 Houses will proceed against them according to  
 Law.

Votes of the  
 Commons there-  
 upon.

2. ‘ That whosoever did advise the setting forth  
 of this *Proclamation*, did thereby express a malicious  
 Intention to hinder the *Treaty*, and the happy  
 Peace and Union to be hoped from thence, between  
 the King and the People.

M 3

3. ‘ That

An. 13. Car. 1.

1642.

March.

3. ' That these several Counties of *Kent, Surrey, Suffex, Hantsire*, or any other Counties, notwithstanding any thing in this *Proclamation*, may proceed to associate themselves.

4. ' That the Lords be moved that a Committee be nominated of some Members of both Houses, for drawing a *Declaration* for vindicating the Proceedings of Parliament from the Scandals in this *Proclamation*, and upon the other Matters contained in these *Votes*.'

The House of Commons also desired the Time might be taken Notice of, in the *Declaration*, when this *Proclamation* was made; which was presently after the King had sent a Message to both Houses, desiring a *Treaty* and *Cessation* of Arms that so all Differences might be settled betwixt his Majesty and the Parliament.

To all which the  
Lords agree.

The Lords concurred with the House of Commons in all the aforesaid *Votes*, and nominated the Earls of *Northumberland, Pembroke, Holland, Warwick*, and *Bolingbroke*, and the Lord Viscount *Say and Sele*, to join with a proportionable Number of the House of Commons to draw up the said *Declaration*.

*March 6.* This Day the Lords received an *Answer* from the King to their *Articles* of *Cessation*; which was as follows:

The King's Ar-  
ticles of Cessa-  
tion.

**H**IS Majesty hoped the *Treaty* would have been begun, and the *Cessation* agreed on long since; and that much might, in this Time, have been concluded in order to the Peace and Happiness of the Kingdom; but since, in almost a Month (for his Majesty's *Propositions* were made on the third of *February*, and he heard not, since, from both Houses till the first of *March*) no Consent hath been yielded to it, he conceives the *Cessation* cannot begin so soon as the fourth of this Month; by which Time (though his Majesty uses no Delay in making his Answer) the same can hardly



' hardly be returned to them ; and many of the An. 18. Car. I.  
 ' Articles now presented to him from both Houses 1642.  
 ' concerning the *Cessation*, are so strict, that such  
 ' of his good Subjects, who are not of his Army  
 ' (and for whom, generally, he shall always have a  
 ' principal, just, and compassionate Regard) receive  
 ' not any Benefit, or are restored to any Liberty  
 ' thereby, which his Majesty shall ever insist upon ;  
 ' (when in Matters merely concerning himself, he  
 ' may descend to easier Conditions) and which he  
 ' hath returned with such Alterations, as he doubts  
 ' not both his Houses will consent to ; and do suffici-  
 ' ently manifest how sollicitous his Majesty is for the  
 ' Good of his People, and how desirous he is that,  
 ' in this unnatural Contention, no more Blood of  
 ' his Subjects may be spilt, (upon which he looks  
 ' with much Grief, Compassion, and Tenderneſs  
 ' of Heart) even of those who have lifted up their  
 ' Hands against him : And his Majesty therefore de-  
 ' fires (against which he can imagine no Objection  
 ' can be made) That the *Cessation* may begin upon  
 ' the twelfth of this Month, or sooner, if the Con-  
 ' ditions of the *Cessation* shall be sooner agreed on,  
 ' and is willing the same shall continue for twenty  
 ' Days ; in which Time he hopes by the *Treaty*,  
 ' and a clear Understanding of each other, a full  
 ' Peace and Happiness may be established through-  
 ' out the Kingdom. And, during that Time, his  
 ' Majesty is willing that neither Side shall be bound  
 ' or limited by this *Cessation* in any otherwise, or to  
 ' any other Purpose, than is hereafter expressed.

March.

I. ' That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition,  
 ' Money, Bullion, and Victuals, passing for the  
 ' Use of either Army, without a Pass or Safe Con-  
 ' duct from the Generals of each Army, may be  
 ' stayed and seized on, as if no *Cessation* was agreed  
 ' on at all.

II. ' That all Officers and Soldiers of either Ar-  
 ' my, passing without such Licence or Safe Conduct  
 ' as aforesaid, may be apprehended and detained,  
 ' as if no such *Cessation* was agreed on at all : And  
 ' that



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

March.

3. ' That these several Counties of *Kent, Surrey, Sussex, Hantsire*, or any other Counties, notwithstanding any thing in this *Proclamation*, may proceed to associate themselves.

4. ' That the Lords be moved that a Committee be nominated of some Members of both Houses, for drawing a *Declaration* for vindicating the Proceedings of Parliament from the Scandals in this *Proclamation*, and upon the other Matters contained in these *Votes*.'

The House of Commons also desired the Time might be taken Notice of, in the *Declaration*, when this *Proclamation* was made; which was presently after the King had sent a Message to both Houses, desiring a *Treaty* and *Cessation* of Arms that so all Differences might be settled betwixt his Majesty and the Parliament.

To all which the  
Lords agree.

The Lords concurred with the House of Commons in all the aforesaid *Votes*, and nominated the Earls of *Northumberland, Pembroke, Holland, Warwick*, and *Bolingbroke*, and the Lord Viscount *Say and Sele*, to join with a proportionable Number of the House of Commons to draw up the said *Declaration*.

*March 6.* This Day the Lords received an *Answer* from the King to their *Articles* of *Cessation*; which was as follows:

The King's Ar-  
ticles of Cessa-  
tion.

**H**IS Majesty hoped the *Treaty* would have been begun, and the *Cessation* agreed on long since; and that much might, in this Time, have been concluded in order to the Peace and Happiness of the Kingdom; but since, in almost a Month (for his Majesty's *Propositions* were made on the third of *February*, and he heard not, since, from both Houses till the first of *March*) no Consent hath been yielded to it, he conceives the *Cessation* cannot begin so soon as the fourth of this Month; by which Time (though his Majesty uses no Delay in making his Answer) the same can hardly

' hardly be returned to them ; and many of the An. 18. Car. I.  
 ' Articles now presented to him from both Houses 1642.  
 ' concerning the *Cessation*, are so strict, that such }  
 ' of his good Subjects, who are not of his Army }  
 ' (and for whom, generally, he shall always have a }  
 ' principal, just, and compassionate Regard) receive }  
 ' not any Benefit, or are restored to any Liberty }  
 ' thereby, which his Majesty shall ever insist upon ; }  
 ' (when in Matters merely concerning himself, he }  
 ' may descend to easier Conditions) and which he }  
 ' hath returned with such Alterations, as he doubts }  
 ' not both his Houses will consent to ; and do suffici- }  
 ' ently manifest how sollicitous his Majesty is for the }  
 ' Good of his People, and how desirous he is that, }  
 ' in this unnatural Contention, no more Blood of }  
 ' his Subjects may be spilt, (upon which he looks }  
 ' with much Grief, Compassion, and Tenderness }  
 ' of Heart) even of those who have lifted up their }  
 ' Hands against him : And his Majesty therefore de- }  
 ' sires (against which he can imagine no Objection }  
 ' can be made) That the *Cessation* may begin upon }  
 ' the twelfth of this Month, or sooner, if the Con- }  
 ' ditions of the *Cessation* shall be sooner agreed on, }  
 ' and is willing the same shall continue for twenty }  
 ' Days ; in which Time he hopes by the *Treaty*, }  
 ' and a clear Understanding of each other, a full }  
 ' Peace and Happiness may be established through- }  
 ' out the Kingdom. And, during that Time, his }  
 ' Majesty is willing that neither Side shall be bound }  
 ' or limited by this *Cessation* in any otherwise, or to }  
 ' any other Purpose, than is hereafter expressed.

I. ' That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition,  
 ' Money, Bullion, and Victuals, passing for the  
 ' Use of either Army, without a Pass or Safe Con-  
 ' duct from the Generals of each Army, may be  
 ' stayed and seized on, as if no *Cessation* was agreed  
 ' on at all.

II. ' That all Officers and Soldiers of either Ar-  
 ' my, passing without such Licence or Safe Conduct  
 ' as aforesaid, may be apprehended and detained,  
 ' as if no such *Cessation* was agreed on at all : And  
 ' that



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

March.

that all Manner of Persons, his Majesty's Subjects, of what Quality or Condition soever (except Officers and Soldiers of either Army) shall pass to and from the Cities of *Oxford* and *London*, and back again at their Pleasures, during this *Cessation*; as likewise to and from any other Parts of his Majesty's Dominions, without any Search, Stay, or Imprisonment of their Persons, or Seizure and Detention of their Goods or Estates; and that all Manner of Trade, Traffick, and Commerce be free and open between all his Majesty's Subjects, excepting, as aforesaid, between the Officers and Soldiers of either Army; or for Arms, Ammunition, Money, Bullion, or Victuals, for the Use of either Army, without a Pass or Safe-Conduct as aforesaid; which may be a good Beginning to renew the Trade and Correspondence of the Kingdom, and whereby his good Subjects may be restor'd to the Liberty and Freedom they were born to, and have so happily enjoyed till these miserable Distractions; and which, even during this War, his Majesty hath, to his utmost, laboured to preserve; opening the Way, by most strict *Proclamations*, to the Passage of all Commodities, even to the City of *London* itself.

III. That his Majesty's Forces in *Oxfordshire* shall advance no nearer to *Windsor* than *Wheatley*; and, in *Buckinghamshire*, no nearer to *Aylesbury* than *Brill*; and that in *Berkshire*, the Forces respectively shall not advance nearer the one to the other than they shall be at the Day to be agreed upon for the *Cessation* to begin; and that the Forces of the other Army in *Oxfordshire*, shall advance no nearer to *Oxford* than *Henley*, and those in *Buckinghamshire* no nearer to *Oxford* than *Aylesbury*; and that the Forces of neither Army shall advance their Quarters nearer to each other than they shall be upon the Day agreed on for the *Cessation* to begin, otherwise than in Passage and Communication between their several Quarters respectively, without any Acts of Hostility to each other; but may



enlarge themselves within their own Quarters respectively, as they shall find convenient. An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

IV. That the Forces of either Army in Gloucestershire, Wiltshire, and Wales, as likewise in the Cities of Gloucester and Bristol, and the Castle and Town of Berkley, shall be guided by the Rule expressed in the latter Part of the precedent Article.

V. That in case it be pretended on either Side, That the *Cessation* is violated, no Act of Hostility is immediately to follow; but first the Party complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on the other Side, and to allow three Days, after Notice, for Satisfaction; and in Case Satisfaction be not given or accepted, then five Days Notice to be given before Hostility begin: And the like to be observed in the remoter Armies by the Commanders in Chief.

VI. That all other Forces in the Kingdom of England and Dominion of Wales, not before mentioned, shall remain in the same Quarters and Places, as they are at the Time of publishing this *Cessation*, otherwise than in Passage and Communication between their several Quarters, as is mentioned in the latter Part of the third Article: And that this *Cessation* shall not extend to restrain the setting forth, or employing, any Ships for the Defence of his Majesty's Dominions; provided that his Majesty be first acquainted with the Particulars, and that such Ships as shall be set forth be commanded by such Persons as his Majesty shall approve of.

Lastly, That, during the *Cessation*, none of his Majesty's Subjects be imprisoned, otherwise than according to the known Laws of the Land; and that there shall be no Plundering or Violence offered to any of his Subjects. And his Majesty is very willing, if there be any Scruples made concerning these Propositions and Circumstances of the *Cessation*, that the Committee for the *Treaty*, nevertheless, may immediately come hither, and so all Matters concerning the *Cessation* may be here settled by him.

At

An. 13. Car. 1.

1642.

March,

His Majesty  
grants a Safe-  
Conduct to all the  
Parliament's  
Commissioners  
except the Lord  
Say.

At the same Time came a Letter of Safe-Conduct for all the Parliament's Commissioners, except the Lord Say. His Majesty's Reasons for objecting to the last were, 'That his Lordship was excepted against, by Name, in his *Proclamation*, at *Oxford*, of the third of *November*, and by Writ to the Sheriff proclaimed then in that County; in which his Majesty's Intention is declared to proceed against him as a Person guilty of High Treason; and so falling to be within the Case of Sir *John Evelyn*, who, upon the same Exception, was not admitted to attend his Majesty, with the rest of the Committee, at *Colebrooke*, in *November* last; yet his Majesty did signify, that in case the House shall think fit to send any other Person in the Place of the Lord Say, who is not included in the like Exception, his Majesty hath commanded all his Officers, Soldiers, and other Subjects to suffer him as freely to pass and repass, as if his Name had been particularly comprised in the Safe-Conduct.'

With these Objections to the Lord Say came also the following *Message* relating to the *Cessation*:

'**H**IS Majesty is content that his *Proposition* concerning the Magazines, Forts, Ships, and Revenue, and the *Proposition* of both Houses for the disbanding of the Armies, shall be first treated of, and agreed of before the proceeding to treat upon any of the other *Propositions*; and that, afterward, the second of his Majesty's, and the second of theirs be treated on and agreed of, and so on in the same Order; and that, from the Beginning of the *Treaty*, the Time may not exceed twenty Days; in which, he hopes, a full Peace and right Understanding may be established throughout the Kingdom.'

After the reading of these Matters in the House of Lords, the Lord Say stood up and said, That he never heard of this *Proclamation* before; what he did was in Obedience to the Commands of the Parliament,



liament, for the settling of the County of *Oxford* in Quietness and Security; and if he shall be proclaimed a Person guilty of High Treason, for doing his Duty to the Commands of Parliament, it will be a Case worthy their Lordships Consideration, as a Thing which much concerns the Privileges of Parliament: But, for his Part, rather than the *Treaty* and *Cessation* of Arms, for obtaining a happy Peace between the King and Kingdom, should be hindered, he desired the Lords to give him Leave to attend this House, and dispense with his going on the Service. But the Lords, conceiving this Precedent trenched on the essential Proceedings of Parliament, left it freely to the Lord *Say*, either to go or stay as he shall think proper; as in the like Case of Sir *John Evelyn* in the House of Commons.

An. 18. Car. 1.  
1642.  
March.

Both Houses agreed to appoint a Committee to consider of the King's last *Message* on the *Cessation*, and report back what they think fit to be done about it.

*March 7.* A Message came up from the Commons, with their Thoughts on the King's last *Articles* for a *Cessation*, That since the Parliament had, before, sent Committees to consult with the Lord-General about them, they think it fit that the same Committee may be sent again to acquaint him with it, and desire his Advice therein. The Lords *Fielding* and *Hunsdon* were sent to the General for that Purpose.

The King's *Articles* of *Cessation* sent to the Earl of *Essex*.

*March 9.* These Lords reported to the House the Effect of their Embassy to the Earl of *Essex*, That he had called a Council of War to his Assistance; and, upon due Consideration of the King's *Articles*, they offered some Inconveniences which might ensue by accepting the same, which were read *in hæc Verba*:

‘ THAT however any Cautions which his Excellency shall propound by way of Advice concerning the *Cessation*, as is now by his Majesty

His Objections to them.

‘ ity



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

March.

‘ ity propounded in these Articles, may be subject  
 ‘ to Misinterpretations, as if he were disaffected to  
 ‘ Peace; nevertheless, in Satisfaction to the Desire  
 ‘ of both Houses, his Excellency offereth unto their  
 ‘ Consideration these following Inconveniences:

‘ To the first Article these Difficulties are pro-  
 ‘ pounded:

1. ‘ That it cannot possibly be known or discern-  
 ‘ ed what Carriages of Arms, Ammunition, Bullion,  
 ‘ and Victuals are intended for the Use of the Ar-  
 ‘ my, and which are not; whereby continual Con-  
 ‘ tentions are like to arise among the Guards of the  
 ‘ respective Quarters, which will endanger the Vio-  
 ‘ lation of the *Cessation*, and the Breach of this  
 ‘ *Treaty*.

2. ‘ The Words in the last Clause being ambi-  
 ‘ guous, *The Generals of each Army*, ought to be  
 ‘ made clearer by this Expression, *The Generals of*  
 ‘ *both Armies, as well of his Majesty's as the Par-*  
 ‘ *liament's Army*.

‘ To the second Article:

‘ It is scarcely discernible who is a Soldier, and who  
 ‘ not; and then he who was a Soldier Yesterday,  
 ‘ may, To-day, be cashier'd to qualify him for ano-  
 ‘ ther Design in either Army; and, as this Article  
 ‘ lieth, 500 of his Majesty's Army may be cashier'd  
 ‘ for the Purpose, and sent into *London*, to be in  
 ‘ the Head of the Malignant Party: Besides, if they  
 ‘ be Soldiers or not Soldiers, the unrestrained Passage  
 ‘ of all other Persons must, of Necessity, infuse In-  
 ‘ telligence and bad Impressures in the Minds of  
 ‘ Men in each Army; and the Passage of Com-  
 ‘ modities, which must be attended by divers Per-  
 ‘ sons, will open a way to the same Inconveniences;  
 ‘ moreover, upon the free Passage of Commodities,  
 ‘ will, of Necessity, follow the Importation of Mo-  
 ‘ ney into each Army; which is agreed to be re-  
 ‘ strained by the first Article. Furthermore, in the  
 ‘ Passage of Carriages, unsearch'd, by Water or  
 ‘ Land, all Manner of warlike Provisions and contra-  
 ‘ band Goods, may be pack'd up and carried into  
 ‘ each Army, as soon as the Carriages, who pre-  
 ‘ tend

‘ tend to go to another Place, be past the Guards  
 ‘ of the respective Quarters: Neither can the Search  
 ‘ of Goods and Persons be made without great Dis-  
 ‘ putes and Quartels, whereby daily Breaches and  
 ‘ Interruptions of the *Cessation* are to be expected.

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.  
 March.

‘ In consideration of which Premises, it will be  
 ‘ safer for the Subjects to restrain the Passage of  
 ‘ Commodities for a small Time; which, being  
 ‘ but 20 Days at the most, cannot be of any great  
 ‘ Prejudice.

‘ To the third Article:

‘ It is said that the Clause of the Communica-  
 ‘ tion, betwixt the several Quarters respectively, ad-  
 ‘ mits of so great a Latitude, that thereby the Forces  
 ‘ of *Cornwall* and *Newcastle* may be drawn toge-  
 ‘ ther without Violation of the *Cessation*.

‘ To the last Article:

‘ It is said that the former Part of this Article,  
 ‘ prohibiting to imprison any Subject other wise than  
 ‘ by the known Laws of the Land, doth contradict  
 ‘ the second Article, which giveth Licence to appre-  
 ‘ hend and detain Soldiers that have no Safe-Conduct  
 ‘ by Law of War.

‘ For the latter Part of this Article it is requisite  
 ‘ to explain it thus, *That no Violence shall be offered to*  
 ‘ *any Subject, unless it be in case of Disobedience to the*  
 ‘ *Order of one or both Houses of Parliament.*

A Message was sent to the House of Commons  
 by Sir *Robert Rich* and Mr. *Page*, to communicate  
 this Advice of the Lord-General to them, and to  
 desire that the select Committees of both Houses, for-  
 merly appointed to consider of the King's *Answer*  
 touching the *Articles* of the *Cessation of Arms*, may  
 meet this Afternoon at Two o'Clock, and take this  
 Paper, sent from my Lord-General, into Consider-  
 ation; and prepare what they conceive fit to be  
 done thereupon, and offer the same to the Consi-  
 deration of both Houses.

But whilst these Affairs, tending towards Peace,  
 were in Agitation, both Sides were watchful to  
 take



An. 13. Car. 1.

1642.

March.

The Commons  
receive Advice of  
Prince Rupert's  
intending to as-  
sault Bristol.

take Advantage of each other, before the *Cession* took Place, the Spring being now advanced and the Season fit for Action. Accordingly

A Message was, this Day, brought from the Commons, desiring a present Conference, touching some Intelligence they had received from their Lord-General; which was agreed to.

The Speaker reported, 'That, at this Conference, the House of Commons acquainted their Lordships with Letters received from Sir *Robert Cook*, to let them know that Prince *Rupert* is within four Miles of *Bristol*, and intends to assault that City: Upon this the Lord-General intends, To-morrow, to march out from *Windſor* with the whole Army; but desires there might be some Course taken to furnish and supply Money and Victuals; for the effecting hereof the House of Commons have made some *Votes*, wherein they desire their Lordships Concurrence.

The *Votes* were read as follows:

1. 'That this House doth approve of the Lord-General's Resolutions to march, upon Information that the King's Forces are in Motion; and that Thanks be given unto him for his Care of the Safety of the Kingdom.

2. 'That the Lord Mayor be desired, that a Common Council be called to meet To-morrow at Ten o'Clock; and that a Committee of both Houses may go thither; and that a Supply of Money, and other Assistance, may be propounded and desired for the important Service of the Army now to march.'

Both these *Votes* were agreed to by the Lords.

Votes of both  
Houses in Con-  
sequence thereof.

Next it was reported, 'That the House of Commons have received some Letters from the *North*, by which it seems there is some Difference amongst the Officers which command in Chief there; whereupon the House of Commons have passed some *Votes*, wherein they desire their Lordships Concurrence, viz.

1. 'That Letters be sent to the Lord-Lieutenants and Deputy-Lieutenants of the Counties of



of *Lincoln*, *Nottingham*, and *Derby*, to send what Forces they can, with all convenient Speed, to the Lord *Fairfax*.

An. 13. Car. I.  
1642.

March.

2. ' That the Lord *Fairfax* shall be desired to go in Person, if he can, with the best Strength he hath, to the Aid of Captain *Hotham*, in the *East-Riding* of the County of *York*; if not, to send 1000 Foot at least, or more, if he can spare them, to oppose the Army under the Command of the Earl of *Newcastle*; and that the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom do prepare these Letters.'

The Lords agreed to both these *Votes* also.

*March* 10. The Lords were informed of a Report that some Ships, let out by the Parliament, had shot at the House where the Queen lodged, after she had landed at *Bridlington*, in *Yorkshire*, and had killed a Man very near her Majesty.

The Queen, on her Return to England, landing at *Bridlington*, the Parliament's Ships fire upon her Lodgings.

Lord *Clarendon* gives us the following Particulars of this Affair: ' About the Middle of *February* the Queen took Shipping from *Holland*, in a *States Man* of War, assigned by the Prince of *Orange*, with others for her Convoy, and arrived safely in *Bridlington Bay*, upon the Coast of *Yorkshire*; where she had the Patience to stay on Shipboard, at Anchor, the Space of two Days, till the Earl of *Newcastle* had Notice to draw such Part of his Forces that way, as might secure her Landing, and wait on her to *York*; which he no sooner did, (and he did it with all imaginable Expedition) but her Majesty came on Shoar; and, for the present, was pleased to refresh herself in a convenient House upon the very Key, where all Accommodations were made for her Reception; there being many Things of Moment to be unshipped before she could reasonably enter upon her Journey towards *York*.

' The second Day after the Queen's Landing, *Batten*, Vice-Admiral to the Earl of *Warwick*, (who had waited to intercept her Passage) with four of the King's Ships, arrived in *Bridlington Road*; and, finding that her Majesty was landed, and that she

lodged

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

March.

lodged upon the Key, bringing his Ships to the nearest Distance, being very early in the Morning, discharged above 100 Cannon (whereof many were laden with Cross-bar-shot) for the Space of two Hours upon the House where her Majesty was lodged; whereupon she was forced out of her Bed, some of the Shot making Way thro' her own Chamber, and to shelter herself under a Bank in the open Fields; which barbarous and treasonable Act, says his Lordship, was so much the more odious, in that the Parliament never so far took Notice of it as to disavow it.<sup>2</sup>

This last Circumstance is confirmed by the *Lords Journals*, in which we find, That though that House, upon Information of the above Report, ordered, That the Earl of *Warwick* be desired to examine the Truth of this Business, and certify it to their House, when their Lordships would take it into further Consideration; yet nothing more was done upon it: But we are told in the *Commons Journals*, That it being suspected the Ships which brought over the Queen, then lying before *Bridlington*, had some Design upon *Hull*, a Letter was ordered to be sent to the Earl of *Warwick*, to send some Ships from his Squadron, which might prevent any Mischief from that Quarter.— Her Majesty shortly after removed to *York*, where she had been many Weeks expected, as appears by some Passages in the last Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, to the Speaker of the House of Commons.

Her Majesty arrives at York.

Both Houses were employed several Days in framing, a-new, their *Articles of Cessation*, on the Military Plan laid down by the Earl of *Essex* and his chief Officers, and many Alterations and Emendations were made in them.

*March 14.* The Commons, at a Conference this Day, acquainted the Lords with divers Letters they had received from *Bristol*, concerning a bloody Massacre, as it is term'd, intended to have been executed



ecuted in that City. The Letters were read, but An. 18. Car. 1.  
are not entered; upon Consideration thereof, the  
Commons made the following *Votes*: 1642.

1. 'That a *Declaration* might pass from both Houses, to set forth this Conspiracy to the whole Kingdom.

2. 'That an *Ordinance* might pass for the seizing the Estates of all the Conspirators, to be employed for the Maintenance of the War; and that they may be proceeded against, by Direction of the Lord-General, according to the Law of Arms.

3. 'The next Lord's Day to be appointed for giving public Thanks in the City, and another Day throughout the whole Kingdom.'

The Lords agreed to these *Votes*, and a Committee of both Houses was appointed to draw up a *Declaration* of the Fact, to be printed and published. A Letter of Thanks was also *ordered* to be sent down to *Bristol*, to the Mayor, Aldermen, and Soldiery there, for their careful Service in this Business.

It was not untill this Day, (*March 17*) after many Messages and Conferences between the Houses, and some Stiffness shewn on both Sides, that the Articles for a *Cessation* were wholly finished and thoroughly agreed to by them. They were then ordered to be sent to the King by their Commissioners, with full Instructions how to act in this *Treaty*. These two Instruments are of too much Significance in these Enquiries to be omitted. And, first, we shall give the *Articles* for a *Cessation*:

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, The Parlia-  
' being still carried on with a vehement De- ment's Articles  
' fire of *Peace*, that so the Kingdom may speedily for a Cessation,  
' be freed from the Desolation and Destruction, as alter'd by Ad-  
' wherewith it is like to be overwhelmed if the vice of the Earl  
' War should continue, have, with as much Ex- of Essex,  
' pedition as they could, considered of the Articles  
' of *Cessation*, with those Alterations and Additions  
VOL. XII. N offered



An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

March.

offered by his Majesty, unto which they are ready to agree in such Manner as is expressed in these ensuing Articles, viz.

I. 'That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition, Victual, Money, Bullion, and all other Commodities, passing without a Safe-Conduct from the Generals of both Armies, as well of his Majesty's as of the Armies raised by the Parliament, may be stayed and seized on, as if no such *Cessation* were agreed on at all.

II. 'That all Manner of Persons, passing without such a Safe-Conduct as is mentioned in the Article next going before, shall be apprehended and detained, as if no such *Cessation* were agreed on at all.

III. 'That his Majesty's Forces in *Oxfordshire* shall advance no nearer to *Windsor* than *Wheatley*; and, in *Buckinghamshire*, no nearer to *Aylesbury* than *Brill*; and that, in *Berkshire*, the Forces respectively shall not advance nearer the one to the other than they shall be at the Day to be agreed on for the *Cessation* to begin: And that the Forces of the other Army, raised by the Parliament, shall advance no nearer to *Oxford* than *Henley*, and those in *Buckinghamshire* no nearer to *Oxford* than *Aylesbury*; and that the Forces of neither Army shall advance their Quarters nearer to each other than they shall be upon the Day agreed on for the *Cessation* to begin.

IV. 'That the Forces of either Army in *Gloucestershire*, *Wilts*, and *Wales*, as likewise in the Cities of *Gloucester* and *Bristol*, and the Castle and Town of *Berkley*, shall be guided by the Rule expressed in the latter Part of the preceding Article.

V. 'That in case it be pretended on either Side, That the *Cessation* is violated, no Act of Hostility is immediately to follow; but, first, the Party complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on the other Side, and to allow three Days after Notice given for Satisfaction; and, in case Satisfaction

‘faction be not given or accepted, then five Days  
 ‘Notice to be given before Hostilities begin; and  
 ‘the like to be observed in the remoter Armies by  
 ‘the Commanders in Chief.’

An. 18. Car. I.  
 1642.  
 March.

VI. ‘That all other Forces in the Kingdom of  
 ‘*England* and Dominion of *Wales*, not before-  
 ‘mentioned, shall remain in the same Quarters and  
 ‘Places as they are at the Time of the publish-  
 ‘ing of this *Cessation*, and under the same Condi-  
 ‘tions as are mentioned in the Articles before: And  
 ‘that this *Cessation* shall not extend to restrain the  
 ‘setting forth, or employing of, any Ships for the  
 ‘Defence of his Majesty’s Dominions.

VII. ‘That as soon as his Majesty shall be plea-  
 ‘sed to disband the Armies, which both Houses  
 ‘earnestly desire may be speedily effected, and to  
 ‘disarm the Papists according to Law; the Subjects  
 ‘may then enjoy the Benefit of Peace in the Li-  
 ‘berty of their Persons, Goods, and Freedom of  
 ‘Trade; in the mean time, the Generals and Com-  
 ‘manders of the Armies of both Sides shall be en-  
 ‘joined to keep the Soldiers from plundering; which  
 ‘the two Houses of Parliament have ever disliked  
 ‘and forbidden.

‘And for the speedy settling of this so much de-  
 ‘sired *Peace*, they have thought good to send their  
 ‘Committees with Instructions, That, if his Ma-  
 ‘jesty be pleased to consent to a *Cessation*, so limited  
 ‘and qualified, they may forthwith proceed to  
 ‘treat upon the *Propositions*; and because the Time  
 ‘is so far elapsed in these Preparations, they desire  
 ‘the *Cessation* may begin the 25th of this Instant  
 ‘*March*, or sooner if it may be; and, in the mean  
 ‘time, Notice to be given to all the Forces in the  
 ‘several and remote Parts; and the Commanders,  
 ‘Officers, and Soldiers are enjoined to observe this  
 ‘*Cessation* accordingly; to which they hope and  
 ‘pray that God will give such a Blessing, that  
 ‘thereupon, Peace, Safety, and Happiness may be  
 ‘produced, and confirmed to his Majesty and all his  
 ‘People.’



An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

March,

INSTRUCTIONS, agreed on by the LORDS and COMMONS in Parliament, for Algernoon Earl of Northumberland, William Lord Viscount Say and Sele, William Pierpoint, Esq; Sir William Armyn, Bart. Sir John Holland, Bart. and Bulstrode Whitlocke, Esq; Committees appointed to attend his Majesty upon the Propositions made by his Majesty to the Parliament, and likewise upon the other Propositions humbly presented from them to his Majesty.

Their Instructions to the Committee appointed to go to Oxford.

I. ‘ YOU shall present to his Majesty the Articles agreed on for the *Cessation of Arms*, humbly desiring his Majesty to ratify and confirm the same under the Great Seal; which being obtained, you are to send it up to the Parliament with all possible Speed: And shall likewise beseech the King to dispatch away Messengers to the Generals, Commanders, and Soldiers of all his Armies and Forces, with a strict Command and Injunction, that they observe those Articles of *Cessation*, according as they are agreed upon; as the two Houses likewise intend to give the like Direction to the Lord-General of the Armies raised for their Defence.

II. ‘ After his Majesty hath declared and ratified the *Cessation*, you shall then proceed to the *Treaty*, beginning with the *first Proposition* on his Majesty’s Behalf, concerning his Majesty’s own Revenue, his Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships, and thereunto make this *Answer*:

‘ You shall declare, That the two Houses of Parliament have not made Use of his Majesty’s own Revenue, but in a very small Proportion; which, for a good Part, hath been employed in the Maintenance of his Majesty’s Children, according to the Allowance established by himself; and they will satisfy what shall remain due to his Majesty of those Sums received out of his Majesty’s own Revenues, and shall leave the same to his Majesty for the Time to come. And you like-



likewise shall propound to his Majesty, That he will restore what hath been taken for his Use, upon any of the Bills assigned to other Purposes by several Acts of Parliament, or out of the Provision made for the War of *Ireland*:

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.  
March.

That they will remove the Garrisons out of all Towns and Forts in their Hands, wherein there were no Garrisons before these Troubles, and slight all Fortifications made since that Time; which Towns and Forts, it is to be agreed on both Parts, shall continue in the same Condition they were in before; and that those Garrisons shall not be renewed, nor the Fortifications repaired, without Consent of his Majesty, and both Houses of Parliament:

That for those Towns and Forts which are within the Jurisdiction of the *Cinque-Ports*, they shall be delivered up into the Hands of such a Noble Person as his Majesty shall appoint to be Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, being such a one as they shall confide in:

That the Town of *Portsmouth* shall be reduced to the Number of the Garrison, as was at the Time when the Lords and Commons undertook the Custody thereof: And such other Forts, Castles, and Towns as were formerly kept by Garrisons, as have been taken by them into their Care and Custody since the Beginning of these Troubles, shall be reduced to such Proportion of Garrison as they had in the Year 1636, and shall be so continued: And that all the said Towns, Forts, and Castles shall be delivered up into the Hands of such Persons of Quality and Trust, to be likewise nominated by his Majesty, as the two Houses shall confide in:

That the Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and all Governors and Commanders of Towns, Castles, and Forts, shall keep the same Towns, Castles, and Forts respectively, for the Service of his Majesty and the Safety of the Kingdom; and that they shall not admit into any of them any foreign Forces raised without his Majesty's

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

March.

‘thority and Consent of the two Houses of Parliament; and they shall use their uttermost Endeavours to suppress all Forces whatsoever, raised without such Authority and Consent; and they shall seize all Arms and Ammunition provided for any such Forces:

‘That the Ships shall be delivered into the Charge of such a Noble Person as his Majesty shall nominate to be Lord High Admiral of *England*, and the two Houses of Parliament confide in; who shall receive the same Office by Letters Patent *quamdiu bene se gesserit*; and shall have Power to nominate and appoint all subordinate Commanders and Officers, and have all other Powers appertaining to the Office of High Admiral; which Ships he shall employ for the Defence of the Kingdom against all foreign Forces whatsoever, and for the Safeguard of Merchants, securing of Trade, the guarding of *Ireland*, and the intercepting of all Supplies to be carried to the Rebels; and shall use his uttermost Endeavour to suppress all Forces which shall be raised by any Person without his Majesty’s Authority, and Consent of the Lords and Commons in Parliament; and shall seize all Arms and Ammunition provided for Supply of any such Forces: That all the Arms and Ammunition, taken out of his Majesty’s Magazines, which shall remain in their Hands, shall be delivered into his Stores; and whatsoever shall be wanting, they will, in convenient Time, supply in Kind, according to the Proportions which they have received; and that the Persons, to whose Charge those public Magazines shall be committed, being nominated by his Majesty, shall be such as the Lords and Commons shall confide in. And you shall propound to his Majesty, That he will restore all such Arms and Ammunition as have been taken for his Use, from the several Counties, Cities, and Towns.

III. ‘To the *Proposition* made by the two Houses, concerning the Disbanding of the Armies,



‘mies, you shall humbly desire his Majesty’s An. 18. Car. 1.  
 ‘speedy and positive Answer; unto which if he 1642.  
 ‘shall be pleased to give his Assent, you shall then }  
 ‘beseech his Majesty, in the Name of both Houses, March,  
 ‘that a near Day may be agreed upon for the Dis-  
 ‘banding all the Forces in the remote Parts of  
 ‘*Yorkshire*, and the other *Northern* Counties; as  
 ‘also in *Lancashire*, *Cheshire*, and in the Domi-  
 ‘nion of *Wales*, and in *Cornwal* and *Devonshire*;  
 ‘and they being fully disbanded, another Day  
 ‘may be agreed on for the disbanding of all  
 ‘Forces in *Lincolnshire*, *Nottinghamshire*, *Leice-*  
 ‘*stershire*, and all other Places except at *Oxford*  
 ‘and the Quarters thereunto belonging, and *Wind-*  
 ‘*sor* and the Quarters thereunto belonging; and  
 ‘that, last of all, a speedy Day be appointed for  
 ‘the Disbanding those two Armies at *Oxford* and  
 ‘*Windsor*, and all the Forces Members of either  
 ‘of them:

‘That some Officers of both Armies may spee-  
 ‘dily meet to agree of the Manner of the Disband-  
 ‘ing; and that fit Persons may be appointed by  
 ‘his Majesty and the Parliament, who may re-  
 ‘pair to the several Armies, and see the Disband-  
 ‘ing put in speedy Execution accordingly:

‘That his Majesty do likewise remove the Gar-  
 ‘risons out of *Newcastle*, and all other Towns,  
 ‘Castles, and Forts, where any Garrisons have  
 ‘been placed by him since these Troubles; and  
 ‘that the Fortifications be likewise slighted, and  
 ‘the Towns and Forts left in such State and Con-  
 ‘dition as they were in the Year 1636: And

‘That all other Towns, Forts, and Castles,  
 ‘where there have been formerly Garrisons before  
 ‘these Troubles, be committed to the Charge of  
 ‘such Persons, to be nominated by his Majesty,  
 ‘as the Parliament shall confide in, and under  
 ‘such Instructions as are formerly mentioned.

IV. ‘That if his Majesty shall be pleased to af-  
 ‘sent to these *Propositions*, concerning the Towns,  
 ‘Fort, Castles, Magazines, and Ships, that then  
 ‘his



An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

March,

his Majesty be humbly intreated to name Persons of Quality to receive the Charge of the several Offices and Forts, Castles and Towns, to be forthwith certified to the two Houses of Parliament, that thereupon they may express their Confidence in those Persons, or humbly beseech his Majesty to name others; none of which Persons shall be removed during three Years next ensuing, without just Cause, to be approved by Parliament; and if any be so removed, or shall die within the said Space, the Person to be put into the same Office shall be such as both Houses shall confide in:

‘ That all Generals and Commanders in any of the Armies, on either Side, as likewise the Lord Admiral of *England*, the Lord Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, all Commanders of any Ships, and Commanders of any Town, Castle, or Fort, shall take an Oath to observe these Articles aforementioned; and to use their uttermost Power to preserve the true Reformed Protestant Religion, and the Peace of the Kingdom, against all foreign Force, and all other Forces raised without his Majesty’s Authority and Consent of the two Houses of Parliament.

V. ‘ You shall move his Majesty, That for the better Dispatch of the *Treaty*, and the free Inter-course of Instructions and Advertisements betwixt the two Houses of Parliament and the Committee, that there may be a free Pass of Messengers to and from the Parliament and the Committees, without Search or Interruption; and his Majesty’s Safe-Conduct to be obtained to that Effect, to such Persons as are, or shall be, appointed for that Service, viz. Mr. *John Rushworth*, Mr. *Michael Welden*, Mr. *John Corbet* of *Gray’s Inn*, and Mr. *James Standish*.’

Nothing else intervening worth our Notice, we shall go on with an Account of the Intelligence sent from the Commissioners now at *Oxford*, to  
Parlia-

# Of ENGLAND. 201

Parliament. And, this Day, *March 23*, the Lords An. 18. Car. I. 1642.  
read a Letter from the Earl of *Northumberland* in  
these Words :

March.

To the Right Honourable the Earl of *Manchester*,  
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*. Letters from that Committee.

My Lord,

*AS soon as we came hither, between four and five o'Clock in the Afternoon, we sent to know his Majesty's Pleasure when we should wait on him, who commanded us presently to attend him, which we did in the Garden at Christ-Church ; where I read the Articles for the Cessation, and we humbly presented them to the King, who read the Title of them himself, and said, There was a Difference in them from the Articles which he sent to both Houses ; and told us, before he should be many Hours older, he would give his Answer to them ; whereof I shall send your Lordships a speedy and faithful Account, as soon as we shall receive it.*

Your Lordship's

Oxford, March 19,  
1642.

Most humble Servant

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.

Besides the foregoing, there was another Letter from this Earl, of a later Date, read the same Day, directed as before, and was to this Effect :

My Lord,

*THIS Afternoon my Lord Falkland and Mr. Secretary Nicholas came to us, with a Message from his Majesty, to know Whether, in case he would not agree to the Articles of Cessation, in Terminis, that we had any Commission to proceed in the Treaty upon the Propositions ? I answered, We had not.*

*The Council have met often, and sat long, since the Delivery of the Articles of Cessation. Mr.*  
May



## 202 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1. *May came to us from his Majesty, and said he was*  
 1642. *sent with a Message to both Houses of Parliament ;*  
 { *the Contents he was commanded to let us know,*  
 March. *which were, That his Majesty desired free Trade*  
*with the Limitations he formerly sent ; and that*  
*there might be a Cessation by Sea as well as by*  
*Land. That, because there might be a Mis-*  
*understanding of Expressions, we might have*  
*Power to treat on the Articles of Cessation ; if not,*  
*That the Treaty, upon the Propositions, might go*  
*on without a Cessation ; and that all Prisoners ta-*  
*ken in War, except Officers, might be set at Li-*  
*berty. This is the Information he gave us ; for the*  
*present I have no further Account to give to your*  
*Lordship, but that I am,*

Your Lordship's

Oxford, March 22,  
1642.

Humble Servant,

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.

These Letters being produced at a Conference,  
 they were found to correspond, *verbatim*, with  
 others the Commons had received from their Com-  
 missioners at *Oxford*. At this Conference, also, a  
 Letter was read, directed to the Speaker of the  
 House of Lords, from the Lord *Falkland*, in which  
 was inclosed a *Message* from the King, to both  
 Houses, concerning the *Cessation*, dated at *Oxford*,  
*March 22*, in these Words :

CHARLES R.

The King's Ex-  
 ceptions to the  
 Parliament's last  
 Articles of Cef-  
 sation.

HIS Majesty hath immediately, upon their  
 Arrival, admitted the Committee sent to  
 him from both Houses of Parliament, (as the  
 Messengers of Peace) to his Royal Presence, and  
 receiv'd the Articles of *Cessation* brought by them ;  
 which are, in Effect, the same his Majesty former-  
 ly excepted to, though their Expression in the  
 Preface to these Articles, of their Readiness to  
 agree to those Alterations and Additions offered  
 by



by his Majesty, in such Manner as is expressed, An. 13. Car. I.  
made him expect to have found, at least, some of 1642.  
the real Alterations and Additions made by him  
admitted; which he doth not discover. March.

I. ' His Majesty desired, *That Provision might be made, and Licence given to his good Subjects, for their Freedom of Trade, Traffick, and Commerce,* (tho', in Matters which concerned himself more immediately, as in Arms, Ammunition, Money, Bullion, and Victuals for the Use of his Army, and the Passage of all Officers and Soldiers of his Army, he is contented the Restraining should be in such Manner as was proposed) of which his Majesty is so tender, that as he hath provided for the same by his gracious *Proclamations*, so he doth daily release and discharge such Merchandize and Commodities, as are, contrary to those *Proclamations*, stayed by any of his Majesty's Forces.

' To this Freedom and Liberty of his good Subjects, there is not the least Admission given by these Articles; so that they have not any Ease or Benefit by this *Cessation*; which his Majesty desires both Houses to consider of; and whether, if his Majesty should take the same Course to stop and interrupt the Trade of the Kingdom, as the other Army doth, a general Loss and Calamity would not seize upon his good Subjects?

II. ' His Majesty, to the end that a full *Cessation* might be as well at Sea as at Land, and he might be secured that the Ships, proposed to be set forth for the Defence of his Majesty's Dominions, should be employed only to that End and Purpose, desired, *That they might be put under the Command of Persons to be approved of by his Majesty*; which is not consented to by these Articles; but their former, to which his Majesty excepted, strictly and entirely insisted on; by which (besides that Part of Hostility remains) the Conveying of any Number of Forces from one Part to any other, by that Means, remains free to them.

III.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642

March.

III. ' For the Prevention of any Inconveniences  
 ' which might arise upon real Differences, or Mi-  
 ' stakes upon Latitude of Expression; (as if his Ma-  
 ' jesty should now consent to these Articles propo-  
 ' sed, in the Terms proposed, he must confess  
 ' the Army, of which he complains, to be raised by  
 ' the Parliament; and either himself to be no Part  
 ' of the Parliament, or himself to have raised that  
 ' Army) and for Prevention of that Delay which  
 ' he foresaw could not otherwise be avoided, if,  
 ' upon every Difference, the Question must be re-  
 ' mitted to *London*, his Majesty desired, *That the*  
 ' *Committee*, for whom he then sent a Safe-Conduct,  
 ' *might have Liberty to debate any such Difference*  
 ' *and Expressions, and reconcile the same, that all pos-*  
 ' *sible Expedition might be used to the main Treaty.*

' In this Point of so high Concernment, no  
 ' Power is given in these Articles; and the Com-  
 ' mittee confessed to his Majesty they have no  
 ' Power given, but are strictly and precisely bound  
 ' to the very Words of the Articles now sent; and  
 ' that, before these are consented to by us, they  
 ' cannot enter into any *Treaty* concerning the o-  
 ' ther *Propositions*.

IV. ' His Majesty desired, *That, during the Cef-*  
 ' *sation, none of his good Subjects might be imprison-*  
 ' *ed, otherwise than according to the known Laws*  
 ' *of the Land.*

' This is in no Degree consented to; but the  
 ' Privilege and Liberty, to which they were born,  
 ' reserved from them till the disbanding of both  
 ' Armies, though they are no Part of either Ar-  
 ' my; and so have no Benefit by this *Cessation*.

V. ' His Majesty desired, *That, during this Cef-*  
 ' *sation, there should be no Plundering or Violence*  
 ' *offered to any of his Subjects.*

' In the Answer to which, his Desire against  
 ' Violence is not at all taken Notice of, nor is his  
 ' Desire again Plundering anywise satisfied; his  
 ' Majesty, not only intending by it the robbing of  
 ' the Subject by the Unruliness of the uncom-  
 ' manded Soldier (which their Clause of requiring

' *the*



‘ the Generals and Officers to keep them from it, An. 18. Car. I.  
 ‘ seems to imply ; and the Assertion, *That the two* 1642.  
 ‘ *Houses of Parliament had ever disliked and for-*  
 ‘ *bidden it,* declares plainly to be their only  
 ‘ Meaning) but particularly the Violence and Plun-  
 ‘ derings used to his Subjects, by forcibly taking  
 ‘ away their Goods for not submitting to Imposi-  
 ‘ tions and Taxes required from them by *Orders*  
 ‘ or *Ordinances* of one or both Houses of Parlia-  
 ‘ ment, which are contrary to the known Laws  
 ‘ of the Land.

VI ‘ Besides, that there is no Consent given to  
 ‘ those Alterations and Additions offered by his  
 ‘ Majesty, whatsoever is pretended ; for where an  
 ‘ absolute Consent may be supposed, because the  
 ‘ very Words of his Majesty’s Article are wholly  
 ‘ preserved, yet, by reason of the Relation to some-  
 ‘ what going before that is varied by them, the Sense  
 ‘ of those Words is wholly varied too ; as in the  
 ‘ *fourth Article*, where the Part of the *third Article*,  
 ‘ to which that did refer, is wholly left out : So  
 ‘ that, upon the Matter, all the *Propositions* made  
 ‘ by his Majesty, which did not in Terms agree  
 ‘ with those presented to him, are utterly rejected.

‘ For these Reasons, and that this Entrance to-  
 ‘ wards a blessed *Peace* and *Accommodation*, which  
 ‘ hath already filled the Hearts of the Kingdom  
 ‘ with Joy and Hope, may be improved to the  
 ‘ wished End, his Majesty desires, That the Com-  
 ‘ mittee now sent may speedily have Liberty to  
 ‘ treat, debate, and agree upon the Articles of  
 ‘ *Cessation* ; in which they and all the World shall  
 ‘ find, that his Majesty is less solicitous for his  
 ‘ own Dignity and Greatness, than for his Sub-  
 ‘ jects Ease and Liberty : And he doubts not, up-  
 ‘ on such a Debate, all Differences concerning the  
 ‘ *Cessation* will be easily and speedily agreed upon ;  
 ‘ and the Benefit of a *Cessation* be continued and  
 ‘ confirmed to his People by a speedy disbanding  
 ‘ of both Armies, and a sudden and firm *Peace*,  
 ‘ which his Majesty above all Things desires.

‘ If



An. 18. Car. I.

1643.

March.

‘ If this so reasonable, equal, and just Desire  
 ‘ of his Majesty shall not be yielded unto, but  
 ‘ the same Articles still insisted upon : Though his  
 ‘ Majesty, next to *Peace*, desires a *Cessation* ; yet  
 ‘ that the not Agreeing upon the one, may not  
 ‘ destroy the Hopes of, nor so much as delay, the  
 ‘ other, he is willing however to treat (even with-  
 ‘ out a *Cessation*, if that be not granted) upon the  
 ‘ *Propositions* themselves, in that Order as is agreed  
 ‘ upon, and desires the Committee here may be  
 ‘ enabled to that Effect ; in which *Treaty* he shall  
 ‘ give all his Subjects that Satisfaction, That if  
 ‘ any Security to enjoy all the Rights, Privileges,  
 ‘ and Liberties due to them by the Law ; or that  
 ‘ Happiness in Church and State, which the best  
 ‘ Times have seen ; with such farther Acts of Grace  
 ‘ as may agree with his Honour, Justice, and Duty  
 ‘ to his Crown, and as may not render him less  
 ‘ able to protect his Subjects, according to his Oath,  
 ‘ will satisfy them, he is confident, in the Mercy  
 ‘ of God, that no more precious Blood of this  
 ‘ Nation will be thus miserably spent.’

Resolutions of  
 both Houses at a  
 Conference  
 thereupon.

*March 24.* Another Conference was held about this Affair ; the Effect of which was, That the House of Commons communicated to the Lords some *Resolutions*, which they had made concerning the King's last *Message* ; wherein there was an Offer to treat upon the *Propositions*, in case the *Cessation* was not agreed on, to which they desired their Lordships Concurrence. The *Resolutions* were as follows :

1. ‘ That the Committee at *Oxford* shall have Power to treat and debate with his Majesty upon the two first *Propositions*, according to their *Instructions*, for four Days after the Day of the Receipt of this *Message*, notwithstanding that the *Cessation* be not yet agreed upon.

2. ‘ That the Committee, formerly appointed to prepare the Articles of *Cessation* and *Instructions* for the Committee at *Oxford*, shall consider of an  
*Answer,*

*Answer* to be made to his Majesty's *Message* this An. 18. Car. 1.  
Day received; and likewise prepare Reasons to be  
sent to the Committee, for them to press the  
Treaty, and debate the former Articles of *Ces-*  
*sation*; and to shew his Majesty the Grounds  
why the Houses cannot depart from those former  
Articles.

1642.  
March.

For the present, they thought proper to send  
the following *Message* to his Majesty; and the *Ad-*  
*ditional Instructions* to their Commissioners. And  
first the *Message*.

*May it please your Majesty,*

WE your loyal Subjects, the Lords and  
Commons in Parliament, having re-  
ceived a *Message* from your Majesty; in which  
you are pleased to express yourself not to be satis-  
fied with the Articles of *Cessation*, presented un-  
to you by our Committee now attending you at  
*Oxford*, and yet a Signification of your Majesty's  
Willingness to treat upon the *Propositions* them-  
selves, even without a *Cessation*; do, with all  
Humbleness, give our Consent that our Commit-  
tee shall have Power to treat and debate with  
your Majesty upon the two first *Propositions* ac-  
cording to their *Instructions*, for four Days after  
the Day of the Receipt of this *Message*, notwith-  
standing that the *Cessation* be not yet agreed up-  
on; that, as much as in us lies, there may be  
no Delay in the Proceedings, for the Obtaining  
of a blessed Peace, and the Healing up the mi-  
serable Breaches of this distracted Kingdom; and  
do purpose to represent, very speedily, unto your  
Majesty those just Reasons and Grounds, upon  
which we have found it necessary to desire of  
your Majesty a *Cessation*, so qualified as that is;  
whereby we hope you will receive such Satisfac-  
tion, as that you will be pleased to assent unto  
it; and being obtained, we assure ourselves it  
will be most effectual to the Safety of the King-  
dom; and that Peace, which, with so much Zeal

Their Message  
to the King in  
consequence  
thereof,

and



## 208 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.  
1642.

March.

‘ and loyal Affection to your Royal Person, and  
‘ in a deep Sense of the bleeding Condition of this  
‘ poor Kingdom, we humbly beg of your Maje-  
‘ sty’s Justice and Goodness.’

The *Additional Instructions* were as follows :

My Lord \* and Gentlemen,

And Additional  
Instructions to  
their Committee.

*W*Hereas, by your former Instructions, you are tied up to a Circumstance of Time, and are not to proceed unto the Treaty upon the Propositions, untill the Cessation of Arms be first agreed upon : You are now authorized and required, as you may perceive by the Votes of both Houses which you shall herewith receive, to treat and debate with his Majesty upon the two first Propositions, according to those Instructions, for four Days after the Day of the Receipt hereof, notwithstanding that the Cessation be not agreed upon.

Your Lordship’s most humble Servant,

March 24,  
1642.

M A N C H E S T E R,  
Speaker of the House of Peers  
*pro Tempore.*

Thus ends the Legal Year 1642, with a distant Prospect of Peace ; but, however pleasing the Idea of it was to some, and we believe much the greater Part of the Kingdom, yet there were not wanting those, who, for their own private Ends, spared no Pains to change it into much more Blood and Slaughter, than had, hitherto, happened in these distracted Times. We may imagine that such Members of the Commons, concerned in making an *Order* of that House, on the 24th of this Month, to forbid the *Tower* Guns to be fired on the 27th, the Anniversary of the King’s Accession, under Pretence of the Expence of Powder, and of hindering

\* The Reason of this Address being *My Lord*, and not *My Lords*, was because the Lord *Sey* did not go ; and the House, lest they should be thought to countenance the King’s Objection, would not appoint another in his stead.



dering the great Concourse of People, were of An. 19. Car. I.  
the latter Sort : And indeed this *Order* seems to 1643.  
have been clandestinely obtained ; for, the next }  
Day, *March 25*, a Motion being made and the April.  
Question put, Whether Liberty should be given  
to speak against the said *Order* ? The House di-  
vided, and it was carried in the Affirmative, 61  
against 56. What the Speeches were, *pro* and  
*con*, on this Occasion, we know not ; but, soon  
after, another Question was put, Whether the  
*Order* made, concerning the firing and discharging  
the Guns of the *Tower* and *Tower-Hill*, should be  
revoked ? This, also, passed affirmatively by a great-  
er Majority, 75 against 57 : Whereby the Honour  
of the House was saved against a very great Instance  
of ill Manners, or rather Disloyalty, in those who  
had procured the above-mentioned *Order*.

Remarkable  
Votes as to ob-  
serving the An-  
niversary of the  
King's Accession,

The Tellers on this remarkable Occasion were,  
on the first Question, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Peter*  
*Wentworth*, with the Yeas ; Sir *Robert Harley*  
and Sir *Nevile Poole*, with the Noes. And, up-  
on the second Question, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John*  
*Evelyn*, with the Yeas ; Sir *Walter Erle* and Mr.  
*Strode*, with the Noes.

At the Opening of the Year 1643, the Eyes  
of a bleeding and miserable Nation were all turn-  
ed to the *Treaty* at *Oxford* ; but to very little Pur-  
pose, for, so far from any real Advantage being  
gain'd by it, Matters were left in the same, or a  
worse, Situation than before.

To shew how little Desire many of the House  
of Commons had to bring this *Treaty* to a peace-  
able Conclusion, we shall mention the following In-  
stances.—When the King desired the Commis-  
sioners to get the Time, prescribed for the *Treaty*,  
enlarged, which was voted in the Lower House  
on the first of *April*, it was carried for the Enlarge-  
ment by the small Majority of 62 against 56. And  
it being resolved, on that *Vote*, to give further  
Time to *Friday* the seventh of *April*, for the *Trea-*  
*ty*, the Question was again put, Whether that

And Divisions  
relating to the  
*Treaty* at *Ox-*  
*ford*.

Ann. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

April.

Day was included in this Term? and it passed in the Affirmative by yet a smaller Majority, 57 against 54. Two Days after, *April 3*, another Question was started, Whether, if the Commissioners received no positive Answer from the King, to the two first *Propositions*, by *Friday Night*, they should come away on *Saturday*? The House again divided, when 54 were for the Question, and 41 against it. But this last Order was, soon after, revoked, and the Time enlarged to the *Saturday* following. So that it is plain, near one Half of the House, then present, were for knocking the *Treaty* down at once; and, 'tis too probable, were really against any *Treaty* at all. It shews also to what a low Ebb the House of Commons was then reduced, that, even at this critical Conjunction, scarcely one fifth Part of the Members were present: The Reasons for which, being set forth in the Beginning of this Volume, we pass over without further Remark.

We have, already, given the Initial Forms for the constituting this *Treaty*: What followed, as it takes up many Pages in the *Journals*, and is exactly printed in *Rushworth's* and *Husband's Collections*, and in the Pamphlets published, both by the King and Parliament, at that Time, we pass over; and shall content ourselves with the Account of this unsuccessful Negotiation, as drawn up by those two Cotemporary Opposites, the Earl of *Clarendon* and Mr. *Whitlocke*; the former of whom was, at this Time, attending the King's Service at *Oxford*; and the other employed, as himself tells us, by his Brother-Commissioners in drawing up all their Papers to the King, which were afterwards transcrib'd by their Secretaries.—And, first, Lord *Clarendon*.

Lord Clarendon's Account of what passed between the King and the Commissioners there.

WHEN the *Treaty* was first consented to by the two Houses, they ordered that it should be upon the *first Proposition* made by his Majesty, and the *first Proposition* made by themselves; and that those should be first concluded on, before they proceeded to treat upon any of the other



ther *Propositions* : So that the Committee, in the first Place, applied themselves to his Majesty, upon his own *first Proposition*, which was, *That his own Revenue, Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships, which had been taken or kept from him by Force, should be forthwith restored to him.* To which the

An. 19. Car. I.

1643

April.

Committee answered, ‘ That the two Houses had made use of his Majesty’s own Revenue but in a very small Proportion, which in a good Part had been employed in the Maintenance of his Children, according to the Allowance established by himself : And the Houses would satisfy what should remain due to his Majesty of those Sums which they had received ; and would leave the same to him for the Time to come. And they desired likewise, that his Majesty would restore what had been taken for his Use upon any of the Bills, assigned to other Purposes by several Acts of Parliament, or out of the Provision made for the War of *Ireland* : That all the Arms and Ammunition, taken out of his Magazines, should be delivered into his Stores, and whatsoever should be wanting they would supply in Kind, according to the Proportions they had received ; but they proposed the Persons, to whose Charge those public Magazines should be committed, being nominated by his Majesty, might be such as the two Houses of Parliament might confide in ; and that his Majesty would restore all such Arms and Ammunition, as had been taken for his Use, from the several Counties, Cities, and Towns.

‘ That the two Houses would remove the Garrisons out of all Towns and Forts in their Hands, wherein there were no Garrisons before these Troubles, and slight all Fortifications made since that Time, and those Towns and Forts to continue in the same Condition they were in before ; and that those Garrisons should not be renewed, or the Fortifications repaired, without Consent of his Majesty, and both Houses of Parliament : That the Towns and Forts, which were within the Jurisdiction of the *Cinque-Ports*, should be



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

April.

‘ delivered into the Hands of such a Noble Person  
‘ as the King should appoint to be Warden of the  
‘ *Cinque-Ports*, being such a one as they should  
‘ confide in : That *Portsmouth* should be reduced  
‘ to the Number of the Garrison, as was at that  
‘ Time when the Lords and Commons undertook  
‘ the Custody of it ; and that all other Forts,  
‘ Castles, and Towns, in which Garrisons had  
‘ been kept, and had been, since the Beginning of  
‘ these Troubles, taken into their Care and Custo-  
‘ dy, should be reduced to the same Establishment  
‘ they had in the Year 1636, and should be so con-  
‘ tinued ; and that all those Towns, Forts, and  
‘ Castles should be delivered up into the Hands of  
‘ such Persons of Quality and Trust, to be likewise  
‘ nominated by his Majesty, as the two Houses  
‘ should confide in : That the Warden of the *Cinque-  
‘ Ports*, and all Governors and Commanders of  
‘ Towns, Castles, and Forts, should keep the same  
‘ Towns, Castles, and Forts, respectively, for the  
‘ Service of his Majesty, and the Safety of the  
‘ Kingdom ; and that they should not admit into  
‘ them any foreign Forces, or any other Forces  
‘ raised without his Majesty’s Authority, and Con-  
‘ sent of the two Houses of Parliament ; and they  
‘ should use their utmost Endeavour to suppress all  
‘ Forces whatsoever raised without such Authority  
‘ and Consent ; and they should seize all Arms and  
‘ Ammunition provided for any such Forces.

‘ They likewise proposed to the King, that he  
‘ would remove the Garrison out of *Newcastle*,  
‘ and all other Towns, Castles, and Forts where  
‘ any Garrisons had been placed by him since these  
‘ Troubles ; and that the Fortifications might be  
‘ likewise slighted, and the Towns and Forts left  
‘ in such State as they were in the Year 1636 ;  
‘ and that all other Towns and Castles in his  
‘ Hands, wherein there had been formerly Garri-  
‘ sons, might be committed to such Persons, no-  
‘ minated by him, as the Houses should confide  
‘ in, and under such Instructions as were formerly  
‘ mentioned ; and that the new Garrisons should

‘ not

‘ not be renewed, or the Fortifications repaired, without the Consent of the King and both Houses of Parliament: That the Ships should be delivered into the Charge of such a Noble Person as the King should nominate to be Lord High-Admiral of *England*, and the two Houses confide in; who should receive that Office by Letters Patent, *quamdiu se bene gesserit*, and should have Power to nominate and appoint all subordinate Commanders and Officers, and have all other Powers appertaining to the Office of High-Admiral; which Ships he should employ for the Defence of the Kingdom, against all foreign Forces whatsoever, and for the Safeguard of Merchants, securing of Trade, and the guarding of *Ireland*, and the intercepting of all Supplies to be carried to the Rebels; and should use his utmost Endeavours to suppress all Forces which should be raised by any Person without his Majesty’s Authority, and Consent of the Lords and Commons in Parliament; and should seize all Arms and Ammunition provided for Supply of any such Forces.’

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
April.

‘ To this Answer, by which they required, at least, to go whole Sharers with him in his Sovereignty, the King replied, ‘ That he knew not what Proportion of his Revenue had been made Use of by his two Houses, but he had Reason to believe, if much of it had not been used, very much remained still in their Hands; his whole Revenue being so stopped and seized on, by the Orders of one or both Houses, even to the taking of his Money out of his *Exchequer* and *Mint*, and Bonds forced from his *Cofferer’s Clerk*, for the Provisions of his Household, that very little had come to his Use for his own Support; but he would be well contented to allow whatsoever had been employed in the Maintenance of his Children, and to receive the Arrears due to himself, and to be sure of his own for the future. He was likewise willing to restore all Monies taken for his Use, by any Authority from him, up-



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

on any Bills assigned to other Purposes, being  
 assured he had receiv'd very little, or nothing, that  
 Way: And he expected, likewise, that Satisfaction  
 should be made by them for all those several  
 vast Sums received and diverted to other Pur-  
 poses, by *Orders* of one or both Houses, which  
 ought to have been paid, by the Act of Pacifi-  
 cation, to his Subjects of *Scotland*, or employed  
 for the Discharge of the Debts of the Kingdom;  
 or, by other Acts of Parliament, for the Re-  
 lief of his poor Protestant Subjects in *Ireland*.

For what concerned his Magazines, he was  
 content that all the Arms and Ammunition,  
 taken out of his Magazines, which did re-  
 main in the Hands of both Houses, or of Persons  
 employed by them, should be, as soon as the  
*Treaty* was concluded, delivered into the *Tower*  
 of *London*; and that whatsoever should be want-  
 ing of the Proportions taken by them, should be  
 supplied by them, with all convenient Speed, in  
 Kind; which, he said, should be committed to,  
 and continued in, the Custody of the sworn Offi-  
 cers, to whose Places the same belong'd: And  
 if any of those Officers had already forfeited, or  
 hereafter should forfeit, that Trust, by any Mis-  
 demeanors, his Majesty would by no Means de-  
 fend them from the Justice of the Law: That he  
 always intended to restore such Arms and Am-  
 munition, which he had been compelled to take  
 from any Persons and Places, when his own had  
 been taken from him; and would make them  
 Recompence as soon as his own Stores were re-  
 stored to him.

To whatsoever they proposed for the slighting  
 all Fortifications, and reducing all Garrisons  
 which had been made since the Beginning of  
 the Troubles, and leaving them in the State  
 they were before, the King fully and absolutely  
 consented; and that the old Castles and Garri-  
 sons should be reduced to their antient Propor-  
 tion and Establishment; but, for the Governors  
 and Commanders of them, he said, That the  
*Cinque-*



‘*Cinque-Ports* were already in the Custody of a Noble Person, against whom he knew no just Exception; and who had such a legal Interest therein, that he could not, with Justice, remove him from it, untill some sufficient Cause were made appear to him; but he was very willing, if he should at any Time be found guilty of any thing that might make him unworthy of that Trust, that he might be proceeded against according to the Rules of Justice: That the Government of the Town of *Portsmouth*, and all other Forts, Castles, and Towns, as were formerly kept by Garrisons, should be put into the Hands of such Persons, against whom no just Exceptions could be made; all of them being, before these Troubles, by Letters Patent, granted to several Persons, against any of whom he knew not any Exceptions, who should be removed, if just Cause should be given for the same. The Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and all other Governors and Commanders of the Towns and Castles, should keep their Charges, as by the Law they ought to do, and for the King’s Service, and Safety of the Kingdom; and they should not admit into any of them foreign Forces, or other Forces, raised or brought in to them contrary to Law, but should use their utmost Endeavours to suppress such Forces; and should seize all Arms and Ammunition, which, by the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom, they ought to seize.’

‘To that Part which concern’d the Ships, the King told them, ‘That he expected his own Ships should be deliver’d to him, as by the Law they ought to be; and that when he should think fit to nominate a Lord High-Admiral of *England*, it should be such a Person against whom no just Exception could be made; and if any should be, he would always leave him to his due Trial and Examination; and he would grant his Office to him by such Letters Patent, as had been used. In the mean Time he would govern the Admiralty

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

Ann. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

‘ ralty by Commission, as had been in all Times  
 ‘ accustom’d; and whatsoever Ships should be set  
 ‘ out by him, or his Authority, should be employ-  
 ‘ ed for the Defence of the Kingdom against all  
 ‘ foreign Forces whatsoever, for the Safeguard  
 ‘ of Merchants, Securing of Trade, Guarding of  
 ‘ *Ireland*, and the Intercepting of all Supplies to be  
 ‘ carried to the Rebels; and they should use their  
 ‘ utmost Endeavours to suppress all Forces which  
 ‘ should be raised, by any Person whatsoever, a-  
 ‘ gainst the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom;  
 ‘ and to seize all Arms and Ammunition provided  
 ‘ for the Supply of any such Forces.’

‘ It is evident to all Men where the Difference  
 now lay between them, being Whether the King  
 would reserve the Disposal of those Offices and  
 Places of Trust to himself, (which all Kings had  
 enjoyed, and was indeed a Part of his Regality) or  
 Whether he would be content with such a Nomina-  
 tion, as, being to pass, and depend upon their  
 Approbation, no Man should ever be admitted to  
 them, who was nominated by him. The Com-  
 mittee, upon his Majesty’s Answer, desired to  
 know, ‘ Whether he did intend, that both Houses  
 ‘ should express their Confidence of the Persons,  
 ‘ to whose Trust those Places were to be commit-  
 ‘ ted; for that they were directed by their *Instruc-*  
 ‘ *tions*, that, if his Majesty was pleased to assent  
 ‘ thereunto, and to nominate Persons of Quality  
 ‘ to receive the Charge of them, that they should  
 ‘ certify it to both Houses of Parliament; that  
 ‘ thereupon they might express their Confidence  
 ‘ in those Persons, or humbly desire his Majesty  
 ‘ to name others, none of which Persons to be re-  
 ‘ moved during three Years next ensuing, with-  
 ‘ out just Cause to be approved by both Houses;  
 ‘ and if any should be so remov’d, or die within  
 ‘ that Space, the Persons, to be put in their Pla-  
 ‘ ces, to be such, as the two Houses should Con-  
 ‘ sider in.’

‘ The King answered, ‘ That he did not intend  
 ‘ that the Houses should express their Confidence

‘ of



‘ of the Persons, to whose Trusts those Places  
 ‘ should be committed, but only that they should  
 ‘ have Liberty, upon any just Exception, to pro-  
 ‘ ceed against any such Persons according to Law;  
 ‘ his Majesty being resolv’d not to protect them  
 ‘ against the Public Justice. When any of the  
 ‘ Places should be void, he well knew the Nomi-  
 ‘ nation and free Election of those who should  
 ‘ succeed, to be a Right belonging to, and inher-  
 ‘ rent in, his Majesty; and having been enjoyed by  
 ‘ all his Royal Progenitors, he could not believe his  
 ‘ well-affected Subjects desired to limit him in that  
 ‘ Right; and desired they would be satisfied with  
 ‘ this Answer, or give him any Reasons to alter  
 ‘ his Resolution, and he would comply with them.’

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 April.

They told him, ‘ There could be no good and  
 ‘ firm Peace hoped for, if there were not a Cure  
 ‘ found out for the Fears and Jealousies; and they  
 ‘ knew none sure, but this which they had pro-  
 ‘ posed.’

‘ The King reply’d, ‘ That he rather expected  
 ‘ Reasons grounded upon Law, to have shew’d  
 ‘ him, by the Law, that he had not that Right he  
 ‘ pretended, or that they had a Right superior to  
 ‘ his, in what was now in Question; or that they  
 ‘ would have shew’d him some legal Reason, why  
 ‘ the Persons trusted by him were incapable of such  
 ‘ a Trust, than that they would only have insist-  
 ‘ ed upon Fears and Jealousies; of which as he  
 ‘ knew no Ground, so he must be ignorant of the  
 ‘ Cure. That the Argument they used might  
 ‘ extend to the depriving him of, or at least shar-  
 ‘ ring with him in, all his just Regal Power; since  
 ‘ Power, as well as Forces, might be the Object of  
 ‘ Fears and Jealousies; and there would be always  
 ‘ a Power left to hurt, whilst there was any left to  
 ‘ protect and defend.’ He told them, ‘ If he had  
 ‘ as much Inclination, as he had more Right, to  
 ‘ Fears and Jealousies, he might, with more Rea-  
 ‘ son, have insisted upon an Addition of Power, as  
 ‘ a Security to enable him to keep his Forts when  
 ‘ he had them; since it appear’d it was not so great,  
 ‘ but



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

‘but that they had been able to take them from him, than they to make any Difficulty to restore them to him in the same Case they were before. But, he said, as he was himself content with, so, he took God to Witness, his greatest Desire was to observe always and maintain, the Law of the Land; and expected the same from his Subjects; and believ’d the mutual Observance of that Rule, and neither of them to fear what the Law fear’d not, to be, on both Parts, a better Cure for that dangerous Disease of Fears and Jealousies, and a better Means to establish a happy and perpetual Peace, than for him to divest himself of those Trusts, which the Law of the Land had settled in the Crown alone, to preserve the Power and Dignity of the Prince, for the better Protection of the Subject and of the Law, and to avoid those dangerous Distractions, which the Interest of any Sharers with him would have infallibly produced.’

‘The Committee neither offer’d to answer his Majesty’s Reasons, nor to oppose other Reasons to weigh against them; but only said, ‘That they were commanded, by their *Instructions*, to insist upon the Desires of both Houses formerly express’d.’

To which the King made no other Answer, than ‘That he conceiv’d it all the Justice in the World for him to insist, That what was, by Law, his own, and had been, contrary to Law, taken from him, should be fully restored to him, without conditioning to impose any new Limitations upon him, or his Ministers, which were not formerly required from them by the Law; and he thought it most unreasonable, to be press’d to diminish his own just Rights himself, because others had violated and usurped them.’ This was the Sum of what pass’d in the *Treaty* upon that *Proposition*.

‘To the *first Proposition* of the two Houses, That his Majesty would be pleased to disband his Armies, as they likewise would be ready to disband  
‘all

all their Forces, which they had raised, and that he would be pleased to return to his Parliament: An. 19. Car. I. 1643.

‘The King answer’d, ‘That he was as ready and willing that all Armies should be disbanded, as any Person whatsoever; and conceiv’d the best Way to it, would be a happy and speedy Conclusion of the present *Treaty*; which, if both Houses would contribute as much as he would do to it, would be suddenly effected. And as he desired nothing more than to be with his two Houses, so he would repair thither as soon as he could possibly do it with his Honour and Safety.’

April.

‘The Committee asked him, ‘If by a happy and speedy Conclusion of the present *Treaty*, he intended a Conclusion upon the two *first Propositions*, or a Conclusion of the *Treaty* in all the *Propositions* of both Parts?’

‘The King, who well knew it would be very ungracious to deny the Disbanding of the Armies, till all the *Propositions* were agreed, some whereof would require much Time, answer’d, ‘That he intended such a Conclusion of, or in, the *Treaty*, as there might be a clear Evidence to himself, and his Subjects, of a future Peace, and no Ground left for the Continuance, or Growth, of those bloody Dissensions; which, he doubted not, might be obtain’d, if both Houses would consent that the *Treaty* should proceed without farther Interruption, or Limitation of Days.’

‘They asked him, ‘What he intended should be a clear Evidence to him, and his good Subjects, of a future Peace, and no Ground left for the Continuance, and Growth, of those bloody Dissensions?’

‘His Majesty told them, ‘If the Conclusion of the present *Treaty* upon his *first Proposition*, and the *first Proposition* of both Houses, should be so full and perfectly made, that the Law of the Land might have a full, free, and uninterrupted Course, for the Defence and Preservation of the Rights of his Majesty, and of themselves, and the rest of his Subjects, there would be thence a clear



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

‘ clear Evidence to him, and all Men, of a future  
 ‘ Peace; and it would be such a Conclusion as he  
 ‘ intended, never meaning that both Armies should  
 ‘ remain undisbanded untill the *Propositions* on both  
 ‘ Sides were fully concluded.’

‘ To the other Clause of their own *Proposition*,  
 concerning the King’s Return to the Parliament,  
 they said, ‘ They had no Instructions to treat up-  
 on it;’ which the King much wonder’d at; and  
 finding that they had no other Authority to treat,  
 or debate what was necessary to be done in order  
 to Disbanding, but only to perss him to appoint a  
 Day for the actual Disbanding; and that the For-  
 ces in the *North*, where he had a great Army, and  
 they had none, might be first disbanded, he endea-  
 vour’d to draw them to some *Propositions* upon his  
 Return to the Parliament; from whence Expedi-  
 ents would naturally result, if they pursued that  
 heartily, which would conclude a general Peace.  
 And it seem’d very strange, that, after so many  
 Discourses of the King’s Absence from the Houses,  
 from whence they had taught the People to believe  
 that most of the present Evils flow’d and proceed-  
 ed, when a *Treaty* was now enter’d upon, and that  
 was a Part of their own *first Proposition*, that their  
 Committee should have no Instructions or Autho-  
 rity to treat upon it. After this they receiv’d new  
 Instructions, ‘ To declare to his Majesty the De-  
 ‘ sire of both Houses, for his coming to his Parlia-  
 ‘ ment; which, they said, they had often express’d  
 ‘ with full Offers of Security to his Royal Person,  
 ‘ agreeable to their Duty and Allegiance, and they  
 ‘ knew no Cause why he might not repair thither  
 ‘ with Honour and Safety.’

‘ When the King found he could not engage  
 them in that Argument to make any particular  
 Overture or Invitation to him; and that the Com-  
 mittee, who express’d Willingness enough, had  
 not in Truth the least Power to promote, or con-  
 tribute to an Accommodation, lest they should  
 make the People believe that he had a Desire to  
 continue the War, because he consented not to  
 their



their *Proposition* of Disbanding the Armies, he sent An. 19. Car. I.  
this *Message*, by an Express of his own, to the 1643.  
two Houses, after he had first communicated it to  
their Committee. } April.

Oxford, April 12, 1643.

CHARLES R.

**T**O shew to the whole *World*, how earnestly his Majesty longs for Peace, and that no Success shall make him desire the Continuance of his Army to any other End, or for any longer Time, than that; and untill Things may be so settled, as that the Law may have a full, free, and uninterrupted Course, for the Defence and Preservation of the Rights of his Majesty, both Houses, and his good Subjects:

1. As soon as his Majesty is satisfied in his first Proposition, concerning his own Revenue, Magazines, Ships, and Forts, in which he desires nothing, but that the just, known, legal Rights of his Majesty (devolved to him from his Progenitors) and of the Persons trusted by him, which have violently been taken from both, be restored unto him, and unto them; unless any just and legal Exception against any of the Persons trusted by him (which are yet unknown to his Majesty) can be made appear unto him:

2. As soon as all the Members of both Houses shall be restored to the same Capacity of Sitting and Voting in Parliament, as they had upon the first of January 1641; the same, of Right, belonging unto them by their Birth-rights, and the free Election of those that sent them; and having been voted from them for adhering to his Majesty in these Distractions; his Majesty not intending that this should extend either to the Bishops, whose Votes have been taken away by Bill, or to such, in whose Places, upon new Writs, new Elections have been made:

3. As soon as his Majesty, and both Houses, may be secured from such tumultuous Assemblies, as, to the great Breach of the Privileges, and the high Dishonour of Parliaments, have formerly assembled about both Houses, and awed the Members of the same; and  
occa-

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
April.

occasioned two several Complaints from the Lords House, and two several Desires of that House to the House of Commons, to join in a Declaration against them; the Complying with which Desire might have prevented all these miserable Distractions which have ensued; which Security, his Majesty conceives, can be only settled by adjourning the Parliament to some other Place, at the least twenty Miles from London, the Choice of which his Majesty leaves to both Houses:

His Majesty will, most chearfully and readily, consent that both Armies be immediately disbanded, and give a present Meeting to both his Houses of Parliament at the Time and Place, at, and to which, the Parliament shall be agreed to be adjourned: His Majesty being most confident that the Law will then recover due Credit and Estimation; and that upon a free Debate, in a full and peaceable Convention of Parliament, such Provisions will be made against seditious Preaching and Printing against his Majesty, and the established Laws, which have been one of the chief Causes of the present Distractions; and such Care will be taken concerning the legal and known Rights of his Majesty, and the Property and Liberty of his Subjects, that whatsoever hath been published or done, in or by Colour of any illegal Declaration, Ordinance, or Order of one or both Houses, or any Committee of either of them, and particularly the Power to raise Arms without his Majesty's Consent, will be in such Manner recalled, disclaimed, and provided against, that no Seed will remain for the like to spring out of for the future, to disturb the Peace of the Kingdom, and to endanger the very Being of it. And in such a Convention his Majesty is resolved, by his Readiness to consent to whatsoever shall be proposed to him, by Bill, for the real Good of his Subjects (and particularly for the better Discovery, and speedier Conviction of Recufants; for the Education of the Children of Papists by Protestants in the Protestant Religion; for the Prevention of Practices of Papists against the State, and the due Execution of the Laws, and true

le-



levying of the Penalties against them) to make known to all the World, how causeless those Fears and Jealousies have been, which have been raised against him; and by that so distracted this miserable Kingdom. And if this Offer of his Majesty be not consented to (in which he asks nothing for which there is not apparent Justice on his Side, and in which he defers many Things highly concerning both himself and People, till a full and peaceable Convention of Parliament, which in Justice he might now require) his Majesty is confident, that it will then appear to all the World, not only who is most desirous of Peace, and whose Fault it is that both Armies are not now disbanded; but who have been the true and first Cause that this Peace was ever interrupted, or those Armies raised, and the Beginning or Continuance of the War; and the Destruction and Desolation of this poor Kingdom (which is too likely to ensue) will not, by the most interested, passionate, or prejudicate Person, be imputed to his Majesty.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
April.

‘To this Message the two Houses returned no Answer to the King, but required the Committee to return to Westminster (having been in Oxford with his Majesty just twenty Days) with such positive Circumstances, that the House of Commons enjoined their Members to begin their Journey the same Day, which they obeyed; though it was so late, that they were forced to very inconvenient Accommodations; and, at their Return, some of them were looked upon with great Jealousy, as Persons engaged by the King, and disinclined to the Parliament; and this Jealousy prevailed so far, that Mr. Martin opened a Letter from the Earl of Northumberland to his own Lady, presuming he should therein have discovered some Combination; and this Insolence was not disliked.’—Thus far the Noble Historian. The Proceedings of both Houses, in relation to this Intercepting of the Earl of Northumberland’s Letter, will appear more at large, from their Journals, in its proper Order of Time.

We



AN. 19, CAR. I.  
1643.

April.

We now proceed to give Mr. *Whitlocke's* Account of what pass'd, between the King and the abovementioned Committee of Parliament, at *Oxford*.

And Mr. *Whitlocke's* Account of that Treaty.

THE King used the Commissioners with great Favour and Civility; and his General, *Ruthen*, and divers of his Lords and Officers came frequently to their Table, and they had very friendly Discourses and Treatments together. The King himself did them the Honour sometimes to accept of part of their Wine and Provisions, which the Earl of *Northumberland* sent to him, when they had any Thing extraordinary.

Their *Instructions* were very strict, and tied them up to treat with none but the King himself, whom they often attended at his Lodgings in *Christ-Church*: They had Access at all Times when they desired it, and were allowed by his Majesty a very free Debate with him.

He had commonly waiting on him, when he treated with them, Prince *Rupert*, the Lord-Keeper *Littleton*, the Earl of *Southampton*, the Lord Chief-Justice *Banks*, and several other Lords of his Council, who never debated any Matters with them; but gave their Opinions to the King in those Things which he demanded of them, and sometimes would put the King in mind of some particular Things; but otherwise they did not speak at all.

In this *Treaty* the King manifested his great Parts and Abilities, Strength of Reason, and Quickness of Apprehension, with much Patience in hearing what was objected against him; wherein he allowed all Freedom, and would himself sum up the Arguments, and give a most clear Judgment upon them.

His Unhappiness was, That he had a better Opinion of others Judgments than of his own, tho' they were weaker than his own; and of this the Parliament's Commissioners had Experience to their great Trouble.

They

‘ They were often waiting on the King, and debating some Points of the *Treaty* with him untill Midnight, before they could come to a Conclusion. Upon one of the most material Points they pressed his Majesty with their Reasons, and best Arguments they could use, to grant what they desired.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
April.

‘ The King said, ‘ He was fully satisfied, and ‘ promised to give them his *Answer* in Writing, ‘ according to their Desire; but, because it was ‘ then past Midnight, and too late to put it into Writing, he would have it drawn up the next Morning (when he commanded them to wait on him again); and then he would give them his *Answer* in Writing, as it was now agreed upon.’

‘ They went to their Lodgings, full of joyful Hopes to receive this *Answer* the next Morning; and which, being given, would have much conducted to a happy Issue and Success of this *Treaty*; and they had the King’s Word for it, and they waited on him the next Morning at the Hour appointed.

‘ But, instead of that *Answer* which they expected, and were promised, the King gave them a Paper quite contrary to what was concluded the Night before, and very much tending to the Breach of the *Treaty*. They did humbly expostulate this with his Majesty, and pressed him upon his Royal Word, and the ill Consequences which they feared would follow upon this his new Paper.

‘ But the King told them, ‘ He had altered his ‘ Mind; and that this Paper, which he now gave ‘ them, was his *Answer*, which he was now resolved to make upon their last Debate:’ And they could obtain no other from him, which occasioned much Sadness and Trouble to them.

‘ Some of his own Friends, of whom the Commissioners enquired touching this Passage, informed them, That after they were gone from the King, and that his Council were also gone away, some of his Bed-Chamber (and they went higher) hearing from him what *Answer* he had promised,



## 226 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
April.

and doubting it would tend to such an Issue of the *Treaty* as they did not wish, they being rather for the Continuance of the War, never left pressing and persuading of the King, till they prevailed with him to change his former Resolutions, and to give Order for his *Answer* to be drawn as it was now delivered.

‘ The *Treaty*, upon the King’s *Propositions* as well as upon the Commissioners, going slowly on, and their *Instructions* being strict, and such as they could not shew to the King when he desired it, he thought fit, *April* 12, to send a *Message* to the Parliament during the *Treaty*.

[*Here follow the Heads of this Message, which we have already given at Length, p. 221.*]

‘ This being intimated to the Commissioners, they dissuaded the sending of it, as that which they feared might break off the *Treaty*; and the Improbability that the Houses would adjourn, and leave the City of *London*, their best Friends and Strength, and put a Discontent upon them.

‘ Yet the King was prevailed with to send it; and, upon the Receipt of it by the Houses, they presently resolved to call away their Commissioners, and sent their Orders to them to return to the Parliament, which they obeyed; and so this *Treaty*, having continued from the 4th of *March* to the 15th of *April*, was now dissolved, and all their Labours and Hazards become fruitless and of no Effect; and all good *Englishmen*, Lovers of the Peace of their Country, were troubled and disappointed.

‘ When they were come to the Parliament they gave them a particular Account of all their Negotiation, wherewith they were so well satisfied, that they ordered the Thanks of the House to be given them; and, by *Vote*, approved of all their Proceedings.’

Thus much for the fruitless *Treaty* of *Oxford*: We now return to the other Proceedings of both Houses.

The



The Month of *April* begins with an *Ordinance* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. of Parliament, which, afterwards, proved the most oppressive to the Royal Party in the Kingdom, of any thing yet done by them. This was the *Ordinance* for seizing and sequestering the real and personal Estates of Delinquents. The whole is in *Rushworth*, except the Names of the Sequestrators, which, probably, were omitted in those *Collections* to prevent giving Offence to particular Persons at that Time : But these we have supplied from the Original Edition of this *Ordinance*, published by the Authority of both Houses. By this List the Reader will see who were the Persons the Parliament then nominated to be *Sequestrators* throughout the whole Kingdom ; though some of them, there named, had too much Regard for their Character, or their Safety, to put the Office in Execution ; and others of them, afterwards, declared in favour of the King. The List runs thus :

BEDFORDSHIRE.

**S**IR *Beauchamp St. John*, and Sir *John Burgoyne*, Names of the Barons ; Sir *Thomas Alston*, Knt. and Bart. Persons appointed to sequester the Estates of such as adher'd to the King.  
Sir *Roger Burgoyne*, Sir *Oliver Luke*, and Sir *Samuel Luke*, Knights ; *Thomas Rolt*, *Thomas Sadler*, *James Beverley*, *Humphry Monoux*, *Edward Osborn*, *Robert Stanton*, and *Samuel Brown*, Esquires.

*BEDFORD Town*. The Mayor for the Time being.

BERKSHIRE.

Sir *Francis Pile*, Bart. Sir *Francis Knollis*, jun. Knt. *Peregrine Hobby*, *Henry Martin*, *Roger Knight*, *Henry Powle*, *Thomas Fettiplace*, and *Tanfield Vachell*, Esquires.

BUCKINGHAMSHIRE.

Sir *Richard Ingoldsby*, Knt. *Henry Bulstrode*, *Thomas Tyrrel*, and *Richard Grenville*, Esquires ; Sir *Peter Temple*, Bart. Sir *Thomas Sanders*, Knt. *Anthony Ratcliffe*, and *Thomas Westall*, Esquires ; Sir *William Andrews*, Knt. *Bulstrode Whitlocke*,

## 226 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
April.

and doubting it would tend to such an Issue of the *Treaty* as they did not wish, they being rather for the Continuance of the War, never left pressing and persuading of the King, till they prevailed with him to change his former Resolutions, and to give Order for his *Answer* to be drawn as it was now delivered.

‘The *Treaty*, upon the King’s *Propositions* as well as upon the Commissioners, going slowly on, and their *Instructions* being strict, and such as they could not shew to the King when he desired it, he thought fit, *April* 12, to send a *Message* to the Parliament during the *Treaty*.

[*Here follow the Heads of this Message, which we have already given at Length, p. 221.*]

‘This being intimated to the Commissioners, they dissuaded the sending of it, as that which they feared might break off the *Treaty*; and the Improbability that the Houses would adjourn, and leave the City of *London*, their best Friends and Strength, and put a Discontent upon them.

‘Yet the King was prevailed with to send it; and, upon the Receipt of it by the Houses, they presently-resolved to call away their Commissioners, and sent their Orders to them to return to the Parliament, which they obeyed; and so this *Treaty*, having continued from the 4th of *March* to the 15th of *April*, was now dissolved, and all their Labours and Hazards become fruitless and of no Effect; and all good *Englishmen*, Lovers of the Peace of their Country, were troubled and disappointed.

‘When they were come to the Parliament they gave them a particular Account of all their Negotiation, wherewith they were so well satisfied, that they ordered the Thanks of the House to be given them; and, by *Vote*, approved of all their Proceedings.’

Thus much for the fruitless *Treaty* of *Oxford*: We now return to the other Proceedings of both Houses.

The



The Month of *April* begins with an *Ordinance* An. 19. Car. I. of Parliament, which, afterwards, proved the most oppressive to the Royal Party in the Kingdom, of any thing yet done by them. This was the *Ordinance* for seizing and sequestring the real and personal Estates of Delinquents. The whole is in *Rushworth*, except the Names of the Sequestrators, which, probably, were omitted in those *Collections* to prevent giving Offence to particular Persons at that Time: But these we have supplied from the Original Edition of this *Ordinance*, published by the Authority of both Houses. By this List the Reader will see who were the Persons the Parliament then nominated to be *Sequestrators* throughout the whole Kingdom; though some of them, there named, had too much Regard for their Character, or their Safety, to put the Office in Execution; and others of them, afterwards, declared in favour of the King. The List runs thus:

1643.

April.

BEDFORDSHIRE.

SIR *Beauchamp St. John*, and Sir *John Burgoyne*, Names of the Barons; Sir *Thomas Alston*, Knt. and Bart. Persons appointed to sequester the Estates of such as adher'd to the King. Sir *Roger Burgoyne*, Sir *Oliver Luke*, and Sir *Samuel Luke*, Knights; *Thomas Rolt*, *Thomas Sadler*, *James Beverley*, *Humphry Monoux*, *Edward Osborn*, *Robert Stanton*, and *Samuel Brown*, Esquires.

BEDFORD Town. The Mayor for the Time being.

BERKSHIRE.

Sir *Francis Pile*, Bart. Sir *Francis Knollis*, jun. Knt. *Peregrine Hobby*, *Henry Martin*, *Roger Knight*, *Henry Powle*, *Thomas Fettiplace*, and *Tanfield Vachell*, Esquires.

BUCKINGHAMSHIRE.

Sir *Richard Ingoldsby*, Knt. *Henry Bulstrode*, *Thomas Tyrrel*, and *Richard Grenville*, Esquires; Sir *Peter Temple*, Bart. Sir *Thomas Sanders*, Knt. *Anthony Ratcliffe*, and *Thomas Westall*, Esquires; Sir *William Andrews*, Knt. *Bulstrode Whitlocke*,



## 228 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. *John Hampden, Arthur Goodwyn, and Richard Winwood, Esquires.*

April.

### CAMBRIDGESHIRE.

Sir *Dudley North*, Sir *John Cuts*, and Sir *Thomas Martin*, Knights; Capt. *Symonds*; *Dudley Pope*, Esq; Sir *Miles Sandys*, Knt. *Francis Russell*, *Oliver Cromwell*, *William Fisher*, *Thomas Thompson*, *Thomas Becket*, *Walter Clopton*, *Robert Castle*, *Thomas Bendish*, *John Welbore*, *Robert Clark*, *Michael Dalton*, jun. *Thomas Parker*, *Thomas Duckett*, *John Hobart*, *Thomas Castle*, *George Claphorn*, *John Towers*, *Edward Leeds*, and *William Marsh*, Esquires.

CAMBRIDGE Town and University. The Mayor for the Time being; *Oliver Cromwell*, *John Lowry*, *William Welbore*, *Talbot Pepys* Recorder, *John Sherwood*, *Samuel Spaulden*, *Thomas French*, and *Robert Robson*, Esquires.

### CHESHIRE.

Sir *George Booth*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *William Brereton*, Bart. *Thomas Stanley*, *Henry Manwaring*, *Henry Brook*, *John Bradshaw*, *Robert Duckenfield*, *Henry Vernon*, *John Crewe*, and *William Marbury*, Esquires.

CHESTER City. *William Jaunce*, Mayor; *John Aldersey*, *Peter Leigh*, and *William Edwards*, Merchants.

### CORNWALL.

Sir *Richard Carew*, Bart. *Francis Buller*, *Alexander Carew*, *John Trefusis*, *John St. Aubin*, *Richard Erisey*, *John Moyle*, *Francis Godolphin of Tremonegue*, *Thomas Gawen*, *John Carter*, and *Thomas Arundell*, Esquires.

### CUMBERLAND.

*William Lawson*, *William Briscoe*, *Thomas Lamplugh*, *Richard Barwis*, and *John Barwis*, sen. Esquires.

### DEVONSHIRE.

Sir *George Chudleigh*, Sir *John Pool*, and Sir *John Northcote*, Baronets; Sir *Edmund Fowell*, Sir *Samuel Rolle*, Sir *Shilston Calmady*, and Sir *Nicholas Martin*, Knights; Sir *Francis Drake*, Bart.

Bart. *Robert Savery, Henry Walrond, Francis Rous, Edmund Prideaux, Henry Wroth, Hugh Fortescue, Arthur Upton, John Yeo, William Frye, and George Trobridge*, Esquires; the Mayor of Plymouth for the Time being.

EXON City. *Christopher Clark*, Mayor; *Richard Sanders, Thomas Crossing, Walter White, and John Hakewill*, Aldermen; *James Gould*, Sheriff.

DERBYSHIRE.

Sir *John Curzon*, and Sir *John Gell*, Baronets; Sir *John Coke*, Knt. *Francis Revitt, Nathaniel Hallowes, and James Abney*, Esquires.

DORSETSHIRE.

*Denzil Holles*, Esq; Sir *Thomas Trenchard* and Sir *Walter Erle*, Knights; *John Brown, Thomas Tregonall, John Bingham, John Hanham, John Trenchard, Dennis Bond, Richard Broderope, William Savage, Robert Butler, and William Sydenham, jun. Richard Rose, John Henley, Thomas Ceely, and Thomas Erle*, Esquires.

POOL Town and County. *Henry Martin*, Mayor; *George Skut, William Skut, Anthony Wait, William Williams, Aaron Durell, Richard Mayer, and Haviland Healy*, Aldermen.

DORCHESTER Town. The Mayor for the Time being; Mr. *John Hill* and Mr. *Richard Bury*.

DURHAM.

*Henry Warmouth, George Lilbourn, Thomas Mitford, Robert Hutton, Thomas Shadforth, Clement Falthrop, Richard Lilbourn, Francis Wren, John Blakiston, Henry Draper, and John Brackenbury*, Esquires.

ESSEX.

Sir *Thomas Barrington*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Henry Mildmay* of Wanstead; Sir *Martin Lumley*, and Sir *Harbottle Grimston*, Knights and Baronets; Sir *Richard Everard*, and Sir *William Hicks*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Check, Sir Henry Halcroft, Sir William Rowe, Sir Thomas Honeywood, Sir William Martin, and Sir John Barrington*, Knights; Sir *William Masham*, Bart. *William Masham, John Wright,*



## 230 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

*Wright, Oliver Raymond, Harbottle Grimston, John Sayer, John Burket, Anthony Luther, Timothy Middleton, Thomas Coke, Deane Tyndal, James Herne, William Goldingham, John Atwood, John Sorrell, Richard Harbackenden, Henry Wiseman, Robert Smith, Robert Browne, William Atwood, Nathaniel Bacon, John Meade, Robert Wiseman of Mayland, Isaac Allen, — Haseley, Samuel Friborne, Peter Whitcombe, Robert Young, Jeremy Aylet, William Collard, Robert Crane, Robert Calthrop, and Arthur Barnardiston, Esquires.*

**COLCHESTER Town.** The Mayor for the Time being; *Harbottle Grimston and Henry Barrington, Esquires.*

**GLOUCESTERSHIRE,** with the City of Gloucester and County thereof.

*Sir Robert Cooke, Knt. Nathaniel Stephens, John George, Edward Stephens, and John Stephens, Esquires; Thomas Pury, Alderman; Sir John Seymour, Knt. Thomas Hodges and John Coddington, Esquires.*

### **HEREFORDSHIRE.**

*Sir Robert Harley, Knight of the Bath; Sir Richard Hopton, Knt. Walter Kirle, Edward Broughton, and Henry Vaughan, Esquires.*

**HEREFORD City.** *Sir Robert Harley, Knight of the Bath; Walter Kirle, Richard Hobson, John Flacket, and Henry Vaughan, Esquires.*

### **HERTFORDSHIRE.**

*Charles Lord Viscount Cranborne; Robert Cecil, Esq; Sir John Garrat, and Sir John Reade, Barons; Sir Thomas Dacres, Sir William Litton, and Sir John Witterong, Knights; Richard Jennings, Ralph Freeman, William Lemon, William Priestley, John Heydon, Alexander Wild, Richard Porter, and Adam Washington, Esquires.*

**ST, ALBANS.** The Mayor for the Time being; *John Robotham, Ralph Pemberton, and Graveley Norton, Esquires.*

### **HUNTINGDONSHIRE.**

*Sir Thomas Cotton, Bart. Sir John Hewit, Knt. Onslow Winch, Terril Jacelyne, Thomas Temple, John*



# OF ENGLAND. 231

*John Castle, Oliver Cromwell, Abraham Burwell, An. 19. Car. 1*  
*Edward Montague, and John Bulkley, Esquires.* 1643.

April.

## KENT.

Sir *Thomas Walsingham* and Sir *Anthony Weldon*, Knights; Sir *John Sidley*, Sir *Edward Hales*, Sir *Humphry Tuston*, and Sir *Henry Heyman*, Knights and Baronets; Sir *Michael Livesey*, Bart. Sir *Henry Vane*, jun. Sir *Edward Scot*, Sir *Edward Bois*, Sir *William Brook*, Sir *Peter Wroth*, Sir *George Sandys*, Sir *John Honeywood*, Sir *James Oxenden*, and Sir *Richard Hardresse*, Knights; *Augustine Skinner*, *Richard Lee*, *Thomas Selliard*, *John Bois*, sen. *Thomas Blunt*, and *Samuel Short*, Esquires.

CANTERBURY City. The Mayor for the Time being; Sir *William Man*, Knt. Sir *Edward Master*, Knt. *John Nutt* and *Thomas Courtborpe*, Esquires; *Avery Savine*, Alderman.

ROCHESTER City. The Mayor for the Time being; Sir *Anthony Weldon*, Sir *William Brooke*, and Sir *Thomas Walsingham*; *Richard Lee*, Esq; the Mayor of *Tenterden* for the Time being; *William Bois*, *William James*, *Mark Dixwell*, and *Henry Samford*, Esquires.

## LANCASHIRE.

Sir *Ralph Ashton* and Sir *Thomas Stanley*, Barons; *Ralph Ashton* of *Downham*, *Ralph Ashton* of *Middleton*, *Richard Shuttleworth*, *Alexander Rigby*, *John Moore*, *Richard Holland*, *Edward Butterworth*, *John Bradshaw*, *William Ashurst*, *Peter Egerton*, *George Dodding*, *Nicholas Cunliff*, *John Starkey*, *Thomas Birch*, and *Thomas Fell*, Esquires; *Robert Cunliff*, *Robert Curwen*, and *John Nowell*, Gentlemen.

## LEICESTERSHIRE.

*Henry Lord Grey* of *Ruthyn*, *Thomas Lord Grey* of *Groby*; Sir *Arthur Haslerig*, Bart. Sir *Edward Hartop* and Sir *Thomas Hartop*, Knights; *William Hewet*, *John Bembridge*, *Peter Temple*, *George Ashby*, *William Roberts*, *Richard Bent*, *Arthur Stanley*, *William Danvers*, and *John Goodman*, Esquires.

LEI-

## 232 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

LEICESTER Town. Richard Ludlam, Mayor;  
William Stanley, Alderman.

April.

### LINCOLNSHIRE.

*For the Parts of Lindsey.* Sir John Wray, Knt. and Bart. Sir Edward Ascough and Sir Samuel Oldfield, Knights; John Wray, Willoughby Hickman, Edward Whichcot, Edmond Anderson, Edward Rofiter, and John Broxholme, Esquires; Sir William Armyn, Bart. Sir Hamond Whichcot, Knt. Sir John Brownlow and Sir Thomas Trollop, Baronets; Thomas Hatcher; Sir Christopher Wray; Thomas Grantham, Thomas Lister, and John Archer, Esquires; Sir William Brownlow.

*For the Parts of Holland.* Sir Anthony Irb; William Ellis and John Harrington, Esquires; the Mayor of Boston for the Time being; Thomas Hall, Thomas Welby, and — Willeby, Esquires.

LINCOLN City and the Close. The Mayor for the Time being; Thomas Grantham, and John Broxholme, Esquires; Robert Moorecroft, William Watson, and Stephen Dawson, Aldermen.

### MIDDLESEX.

Sir Gilbert Gerrard, Bart. Sir Edward Barkham, Knt. and Bart. Sir Richard Sprignal, Bart. Sir John Franklyn, Sir John Hippesley, Sir William Roberts, Sir James Harrington, and Sir Robert Wood, Knights; Lawrence Whitacre, Justinian Paget, William Swallow, John Hucksley, Thomas Wilcox, John Morris, Richard Dutton, and John Smith, Esquires.

LONDON City, and Jurisdiction of the Lord Mayor. The Lord Mayor and the Aldermen, Aldermens Deputies, and Common Councilmen of the said City.

WESTMINSTER City and Liberties. Sir Robert Pye, Sir William Ashton, and Sir John Corbet, Knights; John Glyn, John Trenchard, and William Wheeler, Esquires; John Brigham, George Beverhasset, Anthony Withers, and William Barns, Gentlemen; Josias Fendall, William Bell, — Tuckey,



key, ——— Colchester, and Stephen Higgons, An. 19. Car. I.  
Esquires. 1643.

NORFOLK County, and City of Norwich with the  
County thereof.

April.

Sir Thomas Woodhouse, Sir John Holland, Sir John Potts, and Sir John Hobart, Baronets; Sir Miles Hobart and Sir Thomas Huggen, Knights; John Cook, John Spelman, Philip Beddingfield and Samuel Smith, Esquires; the Sheriffs of Norwich; the Bailiffs of Yarmouth; Thomas Toll and John Percival of Lynn; Thomas Windham, Francis Jeremy, Robert Wood, Gregory Causell, John Haughton, Thomas Weld, Martin Sedley, and Thomas Sotherton, Esquires; Sir Edmond Mountford, Knt. William Heveningham, William Cook, and Robert Rich, Esquires; Sir Richard Berney, Sir Isaac Astley, and Sir John Palgrave, Knights; Brigg Fountayn and John Tooly, Esquires.

NORTHAMPTONSHIRE.

Sir Rowland St. John, Knight of the Bath; Sir John Norwich, Knt. Sir Gilbert Pickering, Bart. Sir Richard Samuel, Knt. John Crew, John Barnard, Edward Harvey, Edward Farmer, John Norton, and John Chappoole, Esquires; Sir John Dryden, Bart. Richard Knightley, Esq; Sir Christopher Yelverton, Knt. and Bart. Zouch Tate, Philip Holeman, and Thomas Pentlow, Esquires.

NORTHAMPTON Town. The Mayor for the Time being; Thomas Martin and John Fisher, Aldermen.

NORTHUMBERLAND..

Sir John Fenwick, Bart. Sir Jo. Delaval, Knt. Thomas Middleton, William Shaftoe, Michael Wel- den, and Henry Ogle, Esquires.

NEWCASTLE Town. John Blakiston, Esq;

For the Town of BERWICK upon TWEED. John Sleigh, Mayor; Sir Robert Jackson, Knt. Ralph Salkeld, Esq;

NOTTINGHAMSHIRE.

Francis Pierpoint, Esq; Sir Francis Thornehaugh and Sir Thomas Hutchinson, Knights; Francis Thorne.



## 234 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. *Thornebaugh, Joseph Widmerpoole, Robert Reynes, Gilbert Millington, and John Hutchinson, Esquires; Sir Francis Molineux, Knt. Charles White and Henry Ireton, Esquires.*

1643.  
April.

NOTTINGHAM *Town and County thereof.* The Mayor for the Time being; *James Chadwick, Esq; Huntington Plumtre, M. D. John James, Alderman, and John Gregory, Gent.*

### OXFORDSHIRE. \*

#### RUTLANDSHIRE.

*Sir Edward Harrington, Knt. Evers Army, Robert Horsman, John Osborne, Christopher Browne, Robert Horsman, jun. and Thomas Wait, Esquires.*

#### SOMERSETSHIRE.

*Sir John Horner, Sir Thomas Wroth, and Sir George Farwell, Knights; Clement Walker, Alexander Popham, William Strode, Richard Cole, John Harrington, John Hippsley, William Long, John Preston, Henry Henley, Henry Stamford, John Pym, James Asb, and John Asb, Esquires; Roger Hill, George Serle, and Jasper Chaplyn, Gentlemen; Richard Capell, William Bull, Robert Harbin, John Hunt, and Robert Blake, Esquires; the Mayor of Bridgewater that now is.*

BRISTOL *City.* *Richard Aldworth, Mayor; Joseph Jackson, Hugh Browne, Sheriffs; Richard Allworthy, Alderman; Luke Hodges and Henry Gibbs.*

SOUTHAMPTON *County, the Town and County thereof, and the Isle of Wight.*

*Sir Henry Worsley and Sir William Lewis, Barons; Sir Thomas Jervois, Sir William Lisle, Sir John Leigh, Sir Henry Clerke, Sir John Compton, and Sir Richard King smill, Knights; Robert Dillington, Robert Wallop, Richard Whitehead, Richard Norton, John Doddington, Richard Jervois, John Lisle, John Button, Edward Hooper, John Bulkley, Thomas Clerke, John Kemp, Richard Major, Francis St. Barbe, Nicholas Love, John Fielder, Wil-*

\* There are no Sequestrators nominated for this County: — As the King at this Time kept his Court at Oxford surrounded with his Army, we presume the Parliament thought it to no Purpose to appoint any.

*William Withers, Thomas Chandler, James Tutt, John Pitman, and John Hooke, Esquires; George Gallop and Edward Exon, Aldermen of Southampton; and the Mayor of Winchester for the Time being.*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

SUFFOLK.

Sir *William Playters*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Nathaniel Barnardiston*, Knt. Sir *William Spring*, Bart. Sir *Roger North*, Sir *Thomas Barnardiston*, Sir *William Soame*, Sir *John Wentworth*, and Sir *Philip Parker*, Knights; *William Heveningham*, *Nathaniel Bacon of Froston*, *Nicholas Bacon*, *Maurice Barrow*, *William Blois*, *Henry North*, *Robert Brewster*, *Brampton Gourdon*, *Francis Bacon*, *Theophilus Vaughan of Beckles*, *William Cage*, *William Rivet of Bilson*, *Edmund Harvey*, *John Gourdon*, and *Thomas Coale*, Esquires; *John Basse* and *Francis Brewster*, Gentlemen; the Bailiffs of the Town of *Ipswich* that now are; *John Sicklemmer*, *Richard Puplet*, and *John Aldus*, Gentlemen; *Nathaniel Bacon*, of *Ipswich*.

ST. EDMUNDS BURY. *Samuel Moody*, *Thomas Cole*, — Chaplin; the Bailiffs of the Town of *Aldborough* for the Time being; *Thomas Gibbs*, *Alderman*, and *Thomas Johnson*.

SURREY.

Sir *Richard Onslow*, Sir *William Elliot*, and Sir *Robert Parkhurst*, Knights; *Nicholas Stoughton*, *George Evelin of Wotton*, *Henry Weston*, and *Arthur Onslow*, Esquires; Sir *Ambrose Browne*, Bart. Sir *Anthony Vincent*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *John Dignley* and Sir *Matthew Brand*, Knights; *Edward Sanders*, *Robert Holman*, *Robert Houghton*, *George Evelin*, *Francis Drake*, *Thomas Sandys*, *George Myn*, and *William Muscamp*, Esquires; Sir *John Howland* and Sir *John Evelin*, Knights; *Robert Goodwin*, *George Fairwell*, and *John Goodwyn*, Esquires; *Richard Wright* and *Cornelius Cooke*, Gentlemen.

SUSSEX.

Sir *Thomas Pelham*, Bart. *Anthony Stapley*, *Herbert Morley*, *Thomas Whitfield*, *John Baker*, and *Her-*



## 236 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

*Herbert Hay, Esquires; Herbert Springate of the Broyle, Ralph Cooper, Hall Ravenscroft, Edward Apfley, John Downes, William Cawley, Edward Higgons, Thomas Chute, George Oglander, George Simpson, John Busbridge, Thomas Middleton, and James Temple, Esquires; Captains, Thomas, Collins, Carleton, and Everton.*

### SALOP.

*Sir John Corbet, Knt. William Pierpoint, Richard Moore, Thomas Witton, Thomas Nichols, Humphry Mackworth, Andrew Lloyd of Aston, Lancelot Lee, Thomas Hunt, and John Corbet, Esquires.*

### STAFFORDSHIRE.

*Sir Richard Skeffington, Knt. Richard Pyott, Michael Rydolph, Edward Manwaring, Matthew Morton, John Birch, Ralph Rudyard, Michael Lowe, Michael Noble, and Edward Leigh, Esquires; Sir Walter Wrotesley, Sir Edward Littleton, and Sir Edward Brereton, Baronets.*

*LITCHFIELD City. The Bailiffs and the Sheriff of the said City for the Time being; Michael Noble, Richard Draffgate, Richard Baxter, and Thomas Burnes, Gentlemen.*

### WARWICKSHIRE.

*The now Mayor of the City of Coventry; Sir Peter Wentworth, Knight of the Bath; Sir Edward Peyto, Knt. John Hales, Godfrey Boswell, John Barker, William Purefoy, Anthony Staughton, George Abbot, Thomas Boughton, William Colemore, Thomas Basnet, William Jesson, Gamaliel Purefoy, and Thomas Willoughby, Esquires.*

*COVENTRY City and County thereof. John Barker, Isaac Bromich, and Robert Philips, Esquires.*

### WILTSHIRE.

*Denzil Holles, Esq; Sir Edward Hungerford, Sir Edward Baynton, Sir Nevil Poole, and Sir John Evelyn, Knights; Edward Baynton, Edward Tucker, William Wheeler, Edward Goddard, Alexander Thistlethwait, jun. John White, Edward Poole, Thomas Moore, John Ash, and Robert Jennour, Esquires.*

WEST.



# Of ENGLAND. 237

## WESTMORELAND.

Sir *Henry Bellingham*, Knt. and Bart. *George Gilpin*, *Edward Wilson*, *Nicholas Fisher*, *Thomas Sleddall*, *Rowland Dawson*, and *Allan Bellingham*, Esquires; *Roger Bateman*, *Richard Brantwaite*, *Robert Phillipson*, and *Gervase Benson*, Gentlemen.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

## WORCESTERSHIRE.

*John Wilde* and *Richard Creswell*, Serjeants at Law; *Humphry Sallway*, *Edward Dignley*, *Edward Pit*, *Thomas Greves*, and *William Jeffries*, Esquires.

## YORKSHIRE.

East-Riding. *Ferdinando Lord Fairfax*; Sir *John Hotham*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *William Strickland*, Bart. Sir *Philip Stapylton* and Sir *Thomas Rymington*, Knights; *Richard Rymington*, *John Hotham*, *John Anlaby*, *Richard Darley*, *Henry Darley*, and *John Allured*, Esquires.

North-Riding. *Ferdinando Lord Fairfax*; Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, Sir *Henry Foulis*, Sir *Thomas Norcliffe*, and Sir *Matthew Boynton*, Barts. Sir *William Sheffield*, Knt. *John Hotham*, *Bryan Stapylton*, *Henry Darley*, *Henry Anderson*, *John Wastell*, *Christopher Percy*, *George Trotter*, *Matthew Smelt*, *John Legard de Malton*, *Francis Lascelles*, *Geoffrey Gate*, *John Dent*, *Thomas Robinson*, *Francis Boynton*, and *Christopher Waters*, Esquires.

West-Riding. *Ferdinando Lord Fairfax*; Sir *Thomas Maleverer*, Bart. Sir *William Lister*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, Sir *William Fairfax*, Sir *John Savill*, and Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, Knights; *John Hotham*, *Charles Fairfax*, *Henry Arthington*, *John Farrer*, *William White*, *Thomas Maleverer*, *George Marwood*, *John Robinson*, *Thomas Stockdale*, *Thomas Westby*, *John Bright*, *Thomas Boseville*, *Godfrey Boseville*, and *John Ellis*, Esquires; and Capt. *Edward Briggs*.

YORK City. Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and Sir *Thomas Widdrington*, Knights; *Thomas Hodgson*, *James Hutchinson* and *John Vaux*, Aldermen; Sir *William Allanson*, and *Thomas Hoyles*.

Town

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

*Town of KINGSTON upon HULL and C thereof.* Sir *John Hotham*, Knt. and Bart. *The Raikes*, Mayor; *John Hotham* and *Peregrine bam*, Esquires; *Lancelot Roper*, *John Bern Joshua Hall*, *Nicholas Denman*, and *William ple*, Gentlemen.

Sir Hugh Cholmley defects the Parliament.

April 3. A Letter to the House of Commons from Sir *John Hotham* was read, intimating, Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, Governor of *Scarborough Castle* had deserted the Parliament; but that, by his rections, the Castle was regained by Capt. *Burton* on which the House immediately expelled Sir *Hugh* and disabled him from ever sitting as a Member thereof and ordered that he should be impeached of High Treason, for falsely and perfidiously betraying the Trust reposed in him by the Parliament, falsifying his *Protestation*, and revolting to the Popish Army raised against the Parliament.

The Earl of Northumberland having caned Mr. Martin for opening a Letter of his,

Nothing else occurring in the *Journals* from Time worth Notice, except the foregoing, shall pass on to the 18th of this Month; when the Parliament's Commissioners being all returned the Earl of *Northumberland* had the public Thanks of the House of Lords given him for his prudent Management in that Business. Lord *Clarendon* in his Account of the *Treaty* before given, has related, that this Nobleman was one of the Suspect amongst the Commissioners, as too much favouring the Royal Cause; and that Mr. *Martin*, of the Committee of Safety at *Westminster*, opened a Letter from the Earl, at *Oxford*, to the Lady. We find, by the *Journals*, that this A was highly resenting by his Lordship; who, at a Return, meeting Mr. *Martin* at a Conference in the *Painted-Chamber*, took him aside and questioned him upon it; but Mr. *Martin* justifying what he had done, the Earl caned him in the Presence of several Persons. Mr. *Martin* complained of this to the House of Commons; which produced the following



following *Message* to the Lords, brought up by Mr. *Glynne*, who said,

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

April.

‘He was commanded by the House of Commons to tell their Lordships, that they had always been very tender of their Lordships Privileges, and very desirous of the Continuance of a fair Agreement between both Houses; and they were very confident that their Lordships would be as tender of the Privileges of the House of Commons. That they were informed, That, this Day, Mr. *Martin*, a Member of the House of Commons, appointed by them to be one of the Managers at a Conference, as he was returning from it, (as the Members ought to do without any Hindrance or Violence) was assaulted in the *Painted-Chamber* by a Peer of great Worth, the Earl of *Northumberland*; which they held to be a Breach of the Privilege of Parliament: And for this, he said, he was commanded by the House of Commons to desire Reparation.’

The Earl being then in the House, stood up and said, ‘That he submitted himself to their Lordships Judgment in this Business; but desired them to take his Case first into Consideration, and to get Reparation for the great Breach of Privilege done to the House of Lords, and the Injury to himself, by Mr. *Martin*, in opening his Lordship’s Letter sent from *Oxford*, without any Authority; he being a Peer of that House, and then employed by it as one of the Committee to treat with his Majesty about the Affairs of the Kingdom.’

This occasions a  
Conference on  
Breach of Privi-  
lege.

All the Answer the Lords gave to this *Message* from the Commons, at first, was, That they would send one by Messengers of their own. They then took into Consideration the Fact done by Mr. *Martin*, in opening the Earl’s Letter without any Authority: And considering the Earl of *Northumberland* as a Member of the House of Lords, and as a Person of that Capacity he was in when the Fact was committed, being employed by their House to treat with his Majesty about the great Affairs of the

King-



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
April.

Kingdom, they conceived the Matter to be a great Breach and Violation of the Privileges of their House; and it was resolved to have a Conference with the Commons, the next Morning, concerning their Privileges, and to give them a Narration of the whole Business; and a Message was sent down accordingly. But though we are told, by the *Lords Journals*, that a Conference was held the next Day, and a Narration of the Fact made by their Lordships; yet it is not enter'd in either *Journal*, nor is there any more said about this Business. It is probable the Affair was privately made up, and that Mr. *Martin* was prevail'd upon to give Satisfaction to the Earl, rather than disoblige a Man of such Consequence to the whole Party.

*April 21.* Mr. *Martin* had dropp'd some Expressions, at a Conference, the Day before, which the Lords resented: It seems that House was not so forward in passing *Ordinances* for seizing the Estates of Delinquents, as the other; and, this Day, the Lords making some Objections to an *Ordinance* of that Sort, they recollected that Mr. *Martin* said,

'I have something to deliver to your Lordships, in the Behalf of the House of Commons. It is true, my Lords, there are some Privileges belonging to the House of Peers, and others to the House of Commons; and this of raising Monies you have ever, solely, attributed to them; so as your Lordships have never refused to join with them, when they have brought up any thing that concerns the raising of Money: And, therefore, they expect you would not now refuse to pass this *Ordinance*, without giving them some very good Reasons for it.'

The Lords debated this Matter for some Time, and afterwards appointed a Committee of ten Lords to consider of a fit Way how to vindicate the Privilege of their House, in this Particular: But it is probable this Matter was dropp'd as the former, for we find nothing more of it in the *Journals*.

This

The Civil War now breaking out again, with fresh Fury, in most Parts of the Nation, there are few Proceedings in the *Journals* of either House worth Notice, in this Month, which are not relative thereto. We shall not enter into a Description of the Battles, Sieges, Skirmishes, or other Military Transactions of these Times; any further than giving the Letters of Intelligence, which both Houses received from their Generals in different Parts. These being most unquestionably authentic, and very few of them ever printed, highly deserve the Public Attention; as either confirming, or setting aside, the Accounts given by later Historians.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
April,

*April 25.* A Letter from the Earl of *Essex*, who then lay before *Reading* with his whole Army, was read, in the House of Lords, addressed to their Speaker, in these Words:

My Lord,

*I* Hold it my Duty to acquaint the Parliament with some Passages, that happened Yesterday Morning and this last Night. In the Morning, about two of the Clock, Captain Kerr, that commands Sir William Balfour's Troop, with two Troops more, being upon the Guard at Caversham, to take Care that no Provisions should be put into the Town, the General Ruthen, with about 1500 Horse and Dragoons, namely seven Regiments of Horse and two or three hundred Dragoons, surprized two Centinels; but, having the Alarm, our Troops charged with forty Horse, and so retreated to Colonel Berkeley's Regiment that was drawn over the Bridge. The Enemy charging, the Musqueteers gave Fire, and attack'd Colonel Holborn with his Musqueteers so resolutely, that they wheeled about and went away, our few Horse following them three Miles. Their Intention was to put forty Barrells of Powder into the Town.

The Earl of Essex's Letter from before Reading.

That Evening I sent out Col. Middleton and Col. Meldrum with their Horse, and Col. Milne with four Troops of his Dragoons, to find out the Enemy. They fell in with them about Eleven at Night, at Dorchester, where the Life-Guard of Foot lay,

VOL. XII.

Q

and



An. 19. Car. I. and the King's Standard, which they knew not of till afterwards.

1643.

April.

If the Soldiers could have been kept from Plundering, they might have done much more; but there being four Troops of Horse there besides a Regiment of Foot, and being in Danger of having the Communication with Wallingford cut off between them and us, they only routed most of that Regiment, took the Captain and Lieutenant of the Life-Guard, another Lieutenant, two of the King's Harbingers, one Cornet, which they say was Sir Thomas Alston's, and 40 other Prisoners, with 150 Horse.

The King draws together all his Forces, Prince Maurice being come, and Prince Rupert hourly expected at Brill, and is marching this Way; so that we expect this Night, or Tuesday Night which we rather conjecture, all their Forces to fall upon us: Besides, Proclamations are sent out to raise all the Country from sixteen to sixty; which, if the Parliament had sent out in that Kind, it would well have strengthened their Army.

We doubt not but that God, which hath shewed us so many Blessings hitherto, will protect us out of these Storms that threaten us. We, that serve you, are in a hard Condition, losing all our Fortunes; and those that are violentest against the Parliament, have their Estates protected; if the Army be well paid, it is no Matter; if not, it must break; which I think, for the Number, is the bravest Army in Christendom. I believe that the Time is thought long that Reading holds yet out. I assure you it is a very strong fortified Town, all pallisadoed, and strong in Out-Works.

I am very loth to venture the Soldiers upon such Work, it being probable that many may be lost in storming; and, now especially, it were our great Hazard, the Enemy being so near, and we must be in a Posture to fight. But I doubt not, by God's Blessing, I shall give a good Account of this great Business. Sir William Waller doth not come to me according to my Expectation and Order, though Prince Maurice be come from him, and turned upon me;



*me ; so that I have now all the King's Forces to deal with, both without and within the Town, without the Assistance which I had Reason to look for.*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
April.

Your Lordship's

From before Reading,  
April 24, 1643.

Humble Servant,

ESSEX.

The same Day the Commons, at a Conference, communicated a Letter, which they had drawn up to be sent to the Lord Fairfax, in the North, to which they desired their Lordships Concurrence ; which was as follows :

My Lord,

**Y**OUR Letter of the 17th of April hath been imparted to both Houses of Parliament, who have commanded us to let you know, that they do join with you in their Thanks to God, who hath hitherto preserved you and those small Forces from the Power and Violence of such a Multitude of malicious and devouring Enemies ; and, by your Means, hath kept some Part of that Country from their Fury and Rapine.

A Letter of Encouragement from both Houses to Lord Fairfax.

They would have you rest assured, that they do very much value your Merit, Industry, and Courage expressed in so many great Services ; and that they cannot manifest it in so plentiful Supplies of Money, Men, and Ammunition, as they would, and as the Danger, Necessity, and Importance of those Parts do require ; which they desire you to believe not to proceed from any Neglect of that County, which they acknowledge to have contributed as much to the Support of the Common Cause as any County in the Kingdom, and have borne as great Burden of the Public Miseries.

The true Reason is, That, in this general Combustion of the Kingdom, the Contribution of most Counties are consumed in their own Defence ; and the City hath been so extremely exhausted, that it can

## 244. *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

*hardly support the Lord-General's Army, unto which a great Arrear remains unpaid, both for Pay and Supply of the Magazine: Yet, in this great Difficulty, they have taken Care to assist you both with Men, Money, and Munition; and have, especially, recommended it to the Committee of Lords and Commons, both to procure such a Proportion of all, as the Affairs and Necessity of the State can afford, and to dispatch them to you with as much Expedition as may be.*

*Your Lordship is desired to tell Sir Thomas Fairfax your Son, and the rest of your Commanders, that their Courage and Constancy are very much approved by both Houses; and that they will endeavour to find some Opportunity of a more real and advantageous Expression of the Esteem they have of their Service; and likewise to publish to all the Soldiers, that the Lords and Commons will not forget what they have done and endured for the Public Defence of Religion, and of the Kingdom; or omit any Occasion of giving them all due Encouragement to continue their Faithfulness in this Service for the future, and a just Recompence for that which is past. Other Particulars shall be communicated to you by your Agent, Mr. White.*

*This is all we have now received in Command, we shall add nothing of our own, but our hearty Prayers for the Continuance of God's Protection and Blessing to you, and the affectionate Respects of*

Your Lordship's

Westminster, April 25,  
1643.

Friends and Servants,

MANCHESTER,  
Speaker of the House of Peers  
*pro Tempore,*

WILLIAM LENTHALL,  
Speaker of the House of Commons in Parliament.

*The Palatine Family has been long laid aside in these Memoirs, the Parliament, during these Troubles,*



Troubles, taking very little Notice of them : And An. 19. Car. I.  
 the two Princes of that House, *Rupert* and *Maurice*, acting at this Time as principal Commanders  
 1643.  
 in the King's Army, the Commons were much en-  
 raged against them. Some Letters had also been  
 intercepted by the Parliament from the Queen of  
*Bohemia* to the King her Brother, and to her Sons ;  
 which that Princess was afraid would have so far ex-  
 asperated them against her, as to deprive her of that  
 small Allowance, for a Crown'd Head, which the  
 Parliament had made her, and was then almost her  
 only Support. To take off therefore any evil No-  
 tions they might have inculcated against her by  
 these Letters, the Queen wrote the following art-  
 ful one to the House of Commons ; which, being  
 a Singularity in its Kind, well deserves our Notice.  
 It was directed to the Speaker, and was in these  
 Words :

S I R,

**H**AVING understood, by imperfect Reports, of the The Queen of  
 Interception of some Letters, which I wrote Bohemia's Letter  
 occasionally to the King and my Sons, whereat the to the Speaker of  
 Parliament had taken Offence ; I cannot be at Rest the House of  
 Commons.  
 'till I have endeavoured to remove all such Impres-  
 sions, as might deprive me of their good Opinion,  
 which I so truly value, and have ever found fa-  
 vourable in my Behalf. I would therefore intreat  
 you to acquaint the Honourable House of Commons,  
 whereof you are Speaker, that albeit I cannot at  
 present remember what I then particularly wrote, yet  
 if any Thing did, perchance, slip from my Pen, in  
 the private Relation between a Mother and a Son,  
 which might give them the least Distaste, I intreat  
 them to make no worse Construction of it, than was  
 by me intended ; having never admitted of any  
 Thought or Resolutions, which hath not been sincere  
 and constant to the Public Peace and Prosperity of the  
 Kingdom.

With this Profession I desire the Honourable House  
 to rest satisfied ; that I may stand as upright in their



## 246 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

*Judgments as I am in my own Affections ; and that thereupon, considering the Distress whereunto I am brought by the Wrongs and Oppression of mine Enemies, they would give them Occasion to rejoice by stopping those necessary Supplies, which, by the Love of the King my Father, and King my Brother, I have hitherto enjoyed, and without which I have no other Subsistence in this World.*

*I do therefore intreat the Honourable House to take my pressing Wants into their kind Consideration ; and give such speedy Order for my Relief, that I may be kept from Inconvenience in a foreign Country.*

*Sir, I crave your Favour in representing hereof, and I shall ever remain*

Your most assured Friend,

Haghe, April 13,  
1643.

ELIZABETH.

After this Letter was read, it was ordered, to be entered in the *Journals* of the House of Commons, to be considered of on *Thursday* Morning next, this Day being *Tuesday* ; and the Speaker directed to put the House in mind of it. But we find no farther Mention of it, neither on that Day, nor any succeeding.

A Conference on the Means for supplying the Earl of Essex's Army.

*April 27.* The House of Commons finding that their Armies were in great Want of Pay, they had a Conference with the Lords about it ; in which they offered the following *Propositions* :

*First*, ' On account of the Lord-General's Letter, they considered that his Estate was all sequestred and seized upon, whereby he was utterly unable to bear the Charge now laid upon him ; therefore the Commons desired the Lords to expedite the *Order*, formerly sent to them, for to put the Lord-General into Possession of the Lord *Capel's* Estate.

' In the same Letter they took Notice, that the Army was in Danger to disband, unless Care be taken to supply it with Money ; therefore the Commons desired their Lordships to join with them in sending

sending a select Committee of both Houses to the City of *London*, this Morning, to communicate the Lord-General's Letter to them, except that Part of it concerning Sir *William Waller* and Delinquents Estates; and to offer to them Personal Security, of the Members of both Houses, to raise a considerable Sum of Money for the Relief of the Army: Likewise to return the Common Council Thanks for the procuring of the late Sum of 44,000*l.* Also

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
April.

‘To let them know, that the King is now drawing his Forces into the Field, and has made Proclamation for all, from sixteen to sixty, to come in to his Assistance; therefore to desire the City to get their Forces in Readiness to defend it, the adjacent Counties, and the Lord-General, if there be Occasion. And

‘To desire the City to collect, speedily, the Money that is behind on the Weekly Assessment; and, since the Burdens of voluntary Contributions are very great, and divers rich Men have done nothing in the Counties, the House of Commons desired their Lordships to pass the *Ordinance* for seizing the Twentieth Part of the Malignants Estates in the Country, which would speedily bring in a considerable Sum.’

The Lords agreed to send a Committee of both Houses into the City, upon the Particulars aforementioned; but they objected against enjoining any Lords to give their Personal Securities for the procuring of Money, and left every Lord to do therein as he pleased. And as to the *Ordinance* for sequestrating all the Lord *Capels*, and that for the Twentieth Part of Malignants Estates, the Lords would take them into their Consideration. The Earls of *Bolingbroke*, *Manchester*, and *Rutland*, were nominated, by the Lords, to visit the City.

*April 29.* Many Judgments of Sequestration against Clergymen from their Livings, with the Addition



## 248 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May,

A Thanksgiving  
for the Taking of  
Reading.

Addition of Imprisonment to their Persons, for preaching against the Proceedings of the Parliament, are entered in both *Journals* about this Time. And,

This Day, a Message was brought up from the Commons, importing, That whereas it had pleased God to give the Lord-General good Success in the Taking of *Reading* with so little Blood, the Commons had voted to have public Thanks given in all Churches and Chapels in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Suburbs, the next Day, for so great a Mercy which God had vouchsafed them.—Agreed to by the Lords.

*May 2.* We now first meet with the Name of Mr. *Oliver Cromwell*, as an Officer of Rank in the Parliament's Army; a particular *Ordinance* being made concerning him and some more Officers, as *Charles Fleetwood*, *Edward Whalley*, and *John Desborough*: Names which will occur more frequently in the Sequel. The said *Ordinance* appoints, 'That whereas Authority was given, by a former, to Col. *Oliver Cromwell* and others, for the seizing of the Persons, Horses, Arms, Money, and Plate of Malignants and ill-affected Persons in the County of *Cambridge*, the Isle of *Ely*, &c.' It was now further *ordained*, That the said Col. *Cromwell*, &c. shall have Authority to seize their Corn and Cattle, as well as other Goods, under the Protection of both Houses of Parliament.

The *Dutch* had been, of late, much courted by the *English* Parliament, to prevent any Supplies of Men, Arms, or Money being sent over to the King's Assistance; but their Agent, Mr. *Strickland*, at the *Hague*, could not hinder them from selling Arms, or taking Pawns of the Queen's, or Crown Jewels, for that Purpose. At this Time the Parliament was alarmed with the Report of a naval Armament, then getting ready at *Dunkirk*, which was to act against theirs at Sea; to prevent which, the



the following Letter was agreed upon, by both Houses, to be sent to their High Mightinesses with all Speed.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
May.

High and Mighty Lords,

*WE* are commanded, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, to make known to your Lordships, that several Advertisements have been given to the Committee of the Lords and Commons, appointed by both Houses to take Care of the Safety of the Kingdom on all Occasions that concern the same, both at home and abroad, That the King hath hired divers Ships and Frigats of Dunkirk, to the Number of 24, or thereabouts; and that he intended to employ them against the Fleet appointed by the Parliament for the Defence of this Kingdom. It was further informed, That two of these Ships, or Frigats, were permitted to pass, out of Dunkirk, by the Admiral of your Lordships Fleet, by Warrant or some Command from his Highness the Prince of Orange; which Information that Committee ordered should be communicated to Mr. Strickland, now resident in the Hague by Authority and Instructions from both Houses; which Direction of that Committee of both Houses was likewise seconded by an Order of the Commons House, and Mr. Strickland commanded to present it to your Lordships, as he hath done.

*We* are to intreat your Lordships to believe, that the two Houses have such an Opinion of the Wisdom and Justice of your State, that they cannot easily conceive you would do any Thing so much to the Prejudice of the Interest of yourselves, as well as of the Kingdom; and the high Esteem and Value which they set upon your Friendship and Correspondency is such, that they would not suffer any Report of that Nature to be spread in the World, but speedily present it to your Lordships, as an Information only commonly spoken of, to the great Prejudice and Disreputation of that near Union and Concurrence between this Kingdom and your State, which they most earnestly desire

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

May 8. The Lords were still much occupied in trying and condemning to Sequestration, Imprisonment, &c. many more of the Clergy, whom the Commons had accused of Disaffection to their Cause, and Superstition in Religion, as bowing to the Altar, and the like: To prevent which, the King put out a *Proclamation* against oppressing the Clergy, and intruding of factious and schismatical Persons into their Cures; and inverting or detaining their Tythes and Possessions, by Order of one or both Houses of Parliament, contrary to all Law and Justice. But this had no Effect, for they still went on to sequester Numbers of the Clergy; though, this Day, they were interrupted by a *Message* from the King, occasioned by a Bill lately sent down to his Majesty, for his Royal Assent to it. This *Message* was introduced, as usual, by a Letter to the Speaker of the House of Lords, from the Lord Falkland, and was as follows:

## CHARLES R.

The King's Message concerning the Subscriptions for the Relief of Ireland,

**H**IS Majesty hath, with great Deliberation, considered and weighed a Bill, lately presented to him by Sir Robert King, Knt. William Jephson and Arthur Hill, Esquires, from both Houses of Parliament, intituled, *An Act for the speedy Payment of Monies subscribed towards the reducing of the Rebels in Ireland, which yet remained unpaid.* And though, in these miserable Times of Distraction, where there are Armies, pretended to be levied by Order of both Houses, almost in every County of the Kingdom, and the good old Laws (the Observation whereof would preserve the Public Peace) violated and suppressed; when the *Treaty*, hopefully begun towards a happy Peace, is broken, and the Committee recalled by both Houses, as if they intended no farther Overture for laying down Arms, but to decide all Differences by the Sword; the World will easily judge, whether his Majesty might not well



‘ well deny to consent to any new Act of Parliament; An. 19. Car. I.  
 ‘ the much Major Part of both Houses being by 1643.  
 ‘ Force and Violence driven and kept from those  
 ‘ Councils, and his Majesty himself not suffered  
 ‘ to be present: Yet such is his Compassion of  
 ‘ Soul towards his poor Protestant Subjects of  
 ‘ that his Kingdom of *Ireland*, that he would wil-  
 ‘ lingly entertain any Expedient whereby it might  
 ‘ be evident the Condition of that Kingdom might  
 ‘ be relieved, and the Distractions of this in no  
 ‘ Danger of being increased: And therefore his  
 ‘ Majesty desires to be satisfied in these Particulars:

I. ‘ How the great and vast Sums of Money al-  
 ‘ ready raised by the several Acts of Parliament for  
 ‘ the Relief of *Ireland*, and which, by those Acts,  
 ‘ ought not to be employed to any other Purpose  
 ‘ than reducing the Rebels, untill they shall be de-  
 ‘ clared to be subdued, have been expended? His  
 ‘ Majesty having been informed, that no less than  
 ‘ 100,000*l.* of that Money was, by one *Order* of  
 ‘ one or both Houses, issued for the Maintenance  
 ‘ of the Army, which hath given him Battle, un-  
 ‘ der the Command of the Earl of *Essex*.

II. ‘ How his Majesty shall be secured, that the  
 ‘ Money, which, by his Majesty’s Consent, shall  
 ‘ be raised for the Support of his Army in *Ireland*,  
 ‘ shall not, for the future, be diverted from that  
 ‘ Use, and employed against him in this Kingdom.

III. ‘ Whether it be just to compel his good  
 ‘ Subjects, who have subscribed, to pay those Sub-  
 ‘ scriptions, when as, at the Time they did sub-  
 ‘ scribe, they conceived themselves absolved from  
 ‘ their Undertaking, if at any Time they were con-  
 ‘ tent to forfeit the Sum mentioned in that Act:  
 ‘ For his Majesty doth not conceive, that, by that  
 ‘ Act, they are liable to pay the whole Subscrip-  
 ‘ tions, but to submit to the Penalty enjoined:  
 ‘ And then his Majesty is not satisfied, that, by a  
 ‘ new Law, it can be just to compel them to what,  
 ‘ at the first, they undertook voluntarily; and, it  
 ‘ may be, would not have undertaken but upon  
 ‘ the Liberty they conceived to be then left them?

IV.



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

IV. ' Whether the Power given by this new  
' Bill to *Warner, Towse, and Andrews* (Persons of  
' whose Integrity and Affections to the Public  
' Peace, his Majesty is in no Degree satisfied) be  
' not too great; any Certificate of theirs being  
' Ground enough to extend the Estate of any Sub-  
' ject in *England*, whether he ever under-writ or  
' not?

V. ' Whether all Lands, extended by Virtue of  
' this Act, being to continue in Extent till all For-  
' feitures be satisfied, it may not be very prejudi-  
' cial to Creditors to whom those Lands are liable;  
' and so the common Justice may be disturbed?

VI. ' Whether, by this Act, the Extents being  
' not to be avoided, or delayed, for Omission of any  
' Lands, the same may not be prejudicial to all  
' Purchasers; and whether it be not against the  
' known Course of the Law?

' His Majesty desires to receive Satisfaction from  
' both Houses of Parliament in these Particulars  
' with all possible Expedition; and then he shall  
' give all the World an Account how sensible he is  
' of the Misery of *Ireland*, and how desirous he  
' is to find or embrace any Way for their Relief;  
' the best, if not the only Way to which, his Ma-  
' jesty conceives, would be by a good and blessed  
' Accommodation of the lamentable Distractions  
' of this Kingdom; which, if the Matter of his  
' Majesty's last *Message* were so entertained, as his  
' Majesty hoped and expected, might, by the Bless-  
' ing of God, in a short Time be effected.'

*May 12.* On the Petition of a Clergyman to the  
Lords, complaining, That the Archbishop of *Can-*  
*terbury* refused to institute and collate him to a Par-  
sonage, it was *resolved*, That an *Ordinance* of Par-  
liament should be passed, by both Houses, for se-  
questering all his Jurisdiction and Power of bestow-  
ing Livings, and to place them in the Power and  
Disposal of Parliament: That the King's Counsel  
should draw up an *Ordinance* to this Purpose, and  
when it came to be sent down to the Commons,

to desire that House to think of proceeding against the said Archbishop, upon their Charge of High Treason.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

The same Day the Lord-General, being in the House of Lords, represented the State and Condition of the Army, and the great Want of Money; which was the Reason why they could not march and take the Advantages which occurred to them: He likewise made a short Narrative of the Taking of *Reading*. Upon which it was *resolved* to return Thanks to his Excellency for his good Conduct, and also to have a Conference with the other House, in order to quicken them to consider of a certain Way of supplying the Army with Money; that it might not be again in the Straits it had been before, and lose the Opportunities that are offered; which might discourage the Lord General's Forces, and encourage the other Side.

The Lord-General further signified, that he gave Command to the Lord *Grey*, Colonel *Cromwell*, and other Forces in the *North*, to draw themselves into a Body, which had not been done according to his Directions; by which Neglect Convoys of Waggons and Ammunition were come to the King without any Interruption. On this the Lords thought fit to recommend the Examination of this Affair to the Lord-General, why his Commands were not obeyed, and where he found the Disobedience and Neglect, to recall his Commissions.

The next Day the Effect of this Conference was reported, That the House of Commons agreed with their Lordships in giving public Thanks to the Lord-General, and desired that the Speakers of both Houses might go to his Lordship for that Purpose: Also that they agreed in settling some certain Way of raising Money for the Supply of the Army; and desired that a Committee of both Houses might be sent into the City, to declare to them the Necessity of it. A Committee was sent accordingly.

A Committee ordered to go into the City, to solicit Money for the Army.

It



## 256 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

May.

It is necessary to be remembered in this Place, that a Committee of Lords and Commons had, for some Days past, sat constantly at *Haberdashers-Hall*, appointed purely for Advance of Monies; and, to all that would freely lend, the Parliament allowed 8*l. per Cent.* But, to those that would neither give nor lend, nor pay the Weekly Assessment, a Power was given to their Collectors to distrain, by Force, and publickly sell the Goods for the speedier Payment of it; for which Service Threepence in the Pound, and all other incident Charges, were allowed them for it: And this was practised, where they had the Power, all over *England*, as well as at *London*. Twelpence in the Pound was also ordered to be paid to any Persons who could inform where such Goods were secreted or hid.

Order of the Commons, for punishing such Commissioners of Sequestration, &c. as refused to act.

We have already taken Notice that several Gentlemen, nominated by the Parliament as Sequestrators of Delinquents Estates, had forborn, for different Reasons, to execute that Office; and there appearing the same Backwardness in executing the *Ordinances* for raising Money by Assessments, the Commons found it necessary to make an *Order*, whereby such Commissioners as should refuse to join, or sign any Warrants, or to meet the rest of the Commissioners, not being detained by Sickness, or other inevitable Impediments, should be reputed Persons ill affected to the Parliament; and that their Names should be returned to the House of Commons, in order that their Estates might be seized and sequestred in the same Manner as those of Papists and Delinquents.—But it does not appear that the Consent of the Lords was ever asked, or given, to this *Order*.

May 15. The Parliament's *Declaration* concerning the late *Treaty* was this Day agreed to by both Houses, and ordered to be printed and published. The King's came out some Time before.  
Both



Both these, which are too prolix for our Purpose, An. 19. Car. I.  
may be found in the Collections of these Times†.

The Lord-General delivered to the Lords divers Copies of Examinations, taken at *Bristol*, concerning a late Conspiracy there to give up that City to the King. This Affair is also fully discussed by *Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, and other Historians.

1643.  
May.

On the 9th of this Month there had been a Message sent up from the Commons to the other House desiring them to nominate and appoint a Committee of Lords, to join with a proportionable Number of the Commons, to be sent into *Scotland*, to intreat the *Scots* to give Aid and Assistance to this Kingdom, according to the Act of *Pacification*. This Day the said Request was again renewed by the Commons, but not yet agreed to by the other House.

At the same Time a Letter was brought up, ready drawn, with an Intent to send it into *Scotland*, as a Complaint against some *Scots* Lords, for assisting the King against the Parliament; which was agreed to by the Lords. This Letter was directed to the Privy Council of *Scotland*, and to the Commissioners for the Preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, and was as follows :

Our very good Lords,

**T**HE Lords and Commons of England, now assembled in Parliament, in Pursuance of that Amity and Correspondency which they desire should ever continue between the two Nations, have commanded us to remonstrate unto your Lordships, That divers great Officers and Peers of the Realm of Scotland, namely, the Earl of Roxburgh, Earl of Morton, Earl of Annandale, Earl of Kinnoul, Earl of Carnwath, and Earl of Lanerk, have, during the Time of their Continuance here, made themselves Incendiaries between the King and his People; and have advised Acts of Hostility against the Subjects of this Realm, to their great Harm and Wrong; contrary to the Laws of the Realm,

VOL. XII.

R

and

† *Husbands*, Fol. Edit. from p. 91, to p. 117.

# 258 The Parliamentary History

An. 19. Car. I. 1643.   
 May.   
 and contrary to the Act of Pacification, as appears by a Letter under their own Hands, a Copy whereof they send here inclosed \*.

They do earnestly, therefore, desire your Lordships, That Order may be taken for speedy Proceedings to be had against them, and against such, within the said Realm of Scotland, that shall assist, receive, and harbour them, or any of them; that so they may receive such Punishment for their said Offence, as by the said Act of Pacification is provided. Herewith we take our Leaves, and rest

Your Lordships

Westminster, May 15, 1643.

Friends and Servants,

M A N C H E S T E R,   
 Speaker of the House of Peers   
 pro Tempore.

WILLIAM LENTHALL,   
 Speaker of the House of Commons.

May 16. An Order was made by the Commons, directed to all Justices of Peace, &c. all over England and Wales, to put the Statute, 1mo Jacobi, in Execution, That no strong Beer or Ale should be sold at above one Penny the Quart; and, of all other Beer, two Quarts for the Penny.

An Excise was also laid on at this Time as follows.

An Excise laid on lows :   
 Ale, Cyder, Perry, &c. s. d.   
 For each Barrel of strong Beer or Ale, of 8 s. the Barrel, } 1 0

For a Hoghead of Cyder or Perry } 1 0   
 To be paid by the first Buyer. The same

Tax was laid on the House-keeper, for Beer, Ale, Cyder or Perry, brewed or made for his own Spending.

All Alehouse-keepers, or Inn-holders, that brew and sell strong Beer and Ale of their own, each Barrel, } 2 0

For

\* This Letter was intercepted, in the North, by the Lord Fairfax, and by him sent to the Parliament: But it is not enter'd in the Journals.



For all Sorts of retailed Wines, over and above the Customs due for the same, to be paid by the first Retailer, a Quart,	s. d. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May,
On all Sorts of Wines bought here, besides Customs, to be paid by the first Buyer, for all he shall use in his own House, for a Quart,	0 2
The same to be paid by the Merchant for all the Wine he shall use in his own House, besides the due Customs.	0 1
For a Barrel of six Shillings Beer sold, to be spent, as well in private as in victualling-Houses, to be paid by the common Brewer, or those that brew or sell the same Beer,	0 6
On all Tobacco, not of <i>English</i> Plantation, the Pound Value, not Weight,	4 0
For the <i>English</i> Plantation Tobacco, the same Value; both over and above all other Customs,	2 0

The Committee, who brought in these Rates, were ordered to proceed in raising of Money, by laying a Charge on other Commodities\*.

May 18. At a Conference, this Day, the Commons communicated the following Letter they had received out of *Buckinghamshire*, containing an Account of divers Murders, Burnings, and Plunderings, committed by the King's Forces in that County. It was directed, *For our much honoured Friend Colonel Hampden, or, in his Absence, to Colonel Goodwyn, or Bulstrode Whitlocke, Esq;*

S I R, Aylebury, May 16, 1643.

WE cannot but acquaint you, that you may make it known to the House of Commons, if you please, in what miserable Condition this County is at this Time. The King hath sent into these Parts about 12 or 1400 Troops.

\* This is the first Instance we meet with of an *Excise*. The Plan (which is printed at large in *Husband's Collections*, p. 267, &c.) was vigorously pursued in the Protectorship of *Cromwell*, and established by Act of Parliament soon after the Restoration. How far it has since been extended every Body knows.



# 260 The Parliamentary HISTORY

AN. 19. CAR. I.  
1643.  
May.

1400 of his Forces, commanded, as we are informed, by the Earl of Cleveland, who is accompanied with the Lord Chandois, Lord Crawford, Sir John Byron, and others of Note; who, contrary to the known Laws of the Land, pillage and plunder all the Towns where they come. They murder our Neighbours that make any Defence to preserve their Goods, one Woman, among the rest, big with Child, who could make no Resistance; they cut in Pieces what Household Goods they cannot carry away; they sweep clean divers of our Pastures, leaving no Cattle behind them; and that no Cruelty might be left unexercised by them, they have, this Day, fired a Country Village, called Swanburne, in seven Places of the Town, for no other Reason but because they were not willing to be plundered of all they had; and guarded the Fire so carefully, with all their Forces divided into several Parts, that no Neighbour durst adventure to come to quench it all the while it burned.

Our Forces in this Garrison consisting only of Foot, saving one Troop of Horse, we were not able to encounter with the Enemy, nor relieve our Neighbours thus despoiled; but yet, to interrupt that which to them is a Sport, we drew out some Forces in their Sight, as far as with Safety we could; whereby they have not acted this Day all the Mischief they intended to execute before Night: But what they have left undone To-day, we expect, e'er they leave us, they will make up; for they are now so strong that they quarter at Buckingham, and where they please in these Parts, without Resistance.

We wish the Parliament's Army were so accommodated that this County, which hath hitherto been, and yet is, most ready to serve and obey the Orders of the Houses, might not be destroyed, and made utterly unable to contribute unto it, before we can be relieved by it; but relying upon God's Providence, and the best Means which may be afforded to preserve it, we rest

Your loving Friends

JOHN WITTEWRONG.

THOMAS TYRREL.

Upon

Upon this Letter the House of Commons pass'd some *Votes*, to which they desired their Lordships Concurrence, and that the said Letter might be speedily printed and published.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
May.

I. 'That this House shall invite the several Counties under the Power of the Parliament, at the Moving of my Lord-General, to rise and join with his Excellency with all their Force and Strength, in the Maintenance of this Cause of Religion, for the Preservation of the *Protestant* Religion, and to prevent the setting up of *Papery* in *England* and *Ireland*; and to redeem themselves from the Rapines, Cruelties, Spoils, and Murders committed upon them by the King's Forces; and that Letters be sent from both Houses for this Purpose.'

The Lords agreed to this *Vote*.

Next it was desired by the House of Commons, That Mr. *Jephson* might make a Narrative to the Lords of some Passages that came to his Knowledge at *Oxford* when he was there, viz.

'That when he was at *Oxford* he did see the Lord *Dillon* and the Lord *Taaffe* near about his Majesty, being great Papists, and keeping Correspondency with the Rebels in *Ireland*; and he calling to Mind what Letters he had seen in *Munster*, in *Ireland*, written to the Earl of *Muskerry*, a chief Rebel, under their Hand-writing, which was to this Effect: 'To exhort him to encourage the Rebels there to go on; and though the King's Affairs were now such that he could not be seen in it, yet, in the End, he would thank them for it.' Upon this Mr. *Jephson* said, he went to the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, to acquaint him therewith, and told him of this particular Business, and what dangerous Persons they were to be near the King. His Lordship said, *He that writ this deserved to be hang'd*; nevertheless nothing is yet done to remove them from the King's Council; but the Lord *Taaffe* is since sent into *Ireland* about the Affairs there.'



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

The House of Commons taking these Particulars into Consideration, and seeing the same Spirit here against the Protestant Religion, and the rooting out of Protestants, as is in *Ireland*, have made another *Vote*, wherein they desire their Lordships Concurrence, *viz.*

2. 'That Proceedings shall be had against all Papists whatsoever, as Traitors, that have been in Arms or actual War against the Parliament, or have furnished the King with Horse, Arms, Ammunition, or Money, to the Maintenance of this War.'

The Lords agreed with the Commons in this *Vote*, leaving out the Word *whatsoever*.

*May 20.* Another Conference was held between the two Houses, the Effect of which was, That the Commons presented to the Lords certain *Votes* they had lately passed, and left them to their Lordships Consideration.

Resolutions of  
the Commons  
relating to the  
Great Seal,

1. 'That the Great Seal of *England* ought, by the Law of the Land, to attend the Parliament.

2. 'That the Great Seal of *England* doth not attend the Parliament, as, by the Laws of the Land, it ought to do.

3. 'That, by reason of this, the Commonwealth hath suffered many grievous Mischiefs, tending to the Destruction of King, Parliament, and Kingdom.

4. 'That it is the Duty of both Houses of Parliament to provide a speedy Remedy for these Mischiefs.

5. 'That a Great Seal of *England* shall be forthwith made, to attend the Parliament for the Dispatch of the Affairs of Parliament and Kingdom.'

This last *Vote* occasioned a Division in the House, when the Numbers were 86 for making a new Seal, and 74 against it; in all 160 Members present: The most that have divided on any Question for a long Time.

The Commons also added some Reasons, upon which these *Votes* were grounded; which are not enter'd



enter'd. The Lords deferred debating on all these Matters till another Day.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

May.

May 22. A *Message* from the King was this Day read in the House of Lords. It was directed to their Speaker, and was as follows :

CHARLES R.

‘ Since his Majesty’s *Message* of the 12th of *The King re-*  
‘ *April*, in which he conceived he had made quires an Answer  
‘ such an Overture for the immediate Disbanding to his *Message* of  
‘ of all Armies, and Composure of these present pril. the 12th of A-  
‘ miserable Distractions, by a full and free Con-  
‘ vention in Parliament, that a perfect and settled  
‘ *Peace* would have ensued, he hath, in all this  
‘ Time, (above a full Month) procured no *Answer*  
‘ from both Houses; his Majesty might well believe  
‘ himself absolved, before God and Man, from the  
‘ least possible Charge of not having used his utmost  
‘ Endeavours for Peace; yet when he considers  
‘ that the Scene of all the Calamity is in the Bow-  
‘ els of his own Kingdoms; that all the Blood  
‘ which is spilt is of his own Subjects; and what  
‘ Victory soever it shall please God to give him, it  
‘ must be over those who ought not to have lifted  
‘ up their Hands against him: When he considers  
‘ these desperate civil Dissentions may encourage  
‘ and invite a foreign Enemy to make a Prey of  
‘ the whole Nation; that *Ireland* is in present Dan-  
‘ ger of being totally lost; that the heavy Judg-  
‘ ment of God’s Plague, Pestilence, and Famine  
‘ will be inevitable Attendants of this unnatural  
‘ Contention; and that, in a short Time, there  
‘ will be so general a Habit of Uncharitableness  
‘ and Cruelty contracted throughout the Kingdom,  
‘ that even Peace itself will not restore his People  
‘ to their old Temper and Security: His Majesty  
‘ cannot but again call for an *Answer* to that his  
‘ *Message*, which gives so fair a Rise to end these  
‘ unnatural Distractions. And his Majesty doth  
‘ this with the most Earnestness, because he doubts  
‘ not

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

not but the Condition of his Armies in several Parts; his Strength of Horse, Foot, and Artillery; his Plenty of Ammunition (which some Men lately conceived he might have wanted) is so well known and understood; that it must be confess'd, that nothing but the Tenderness and Love to his People, and those Christian Impressions which always have dwelt, and, he hopes, always shall dwell, in his Heart, could move him, once more, to hazard a Refusal: And he requires them, as they will answer to God, to himself, and all the World, that they will no longer suffer their Fellow-Subjects to welter in each other's Blood; that they will remember by whose Authority, and to what End, they met in that Council; and send such an *Answer* to his Majesty, as may open a Door to let in a firm Peace and Security to the whole Kingdom.

If his Majesty shall again be disappointed of his Intention herein, the Blood, Rapine, and Distractions which must follow in *England* and *Ireland*, will be cast upon the Account of those who are deaf to the Motion of *Peace* and *Accommodation*.

*Ordered*, That this *Message* should be communicated to the House of Commons; and some Lords being appointed to draw up what was fit to be delivered to them besides, at this Conference, as the Sense of this House about it, they soon after brought in the following:

That the Lords conceive it necessary to send the Reasons to the King, why the two Houses of Parliament could not agree to the *Propositions* offered in his Majesty's *Message* of the 12th of *April* last. To express, in that *Answer* to be made to his Majesty, That their Endeavours had been, and ever shall be, to put an End to these unhappy Differences; so as their Religion, Laws, and Liberties might be secured. To desire the Commons to appoint a Committee to meet one from



# Of ENGLAND. 265

from the House of Lords, to consider of this whole *Message*, and to prepare such an *Answer* as they think fit to offer to the two Houses.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
May.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* having now lain a very long Time in the *Tower*, and no Process, as yet, brought against him by the Commons, his Accusers, tho' often urged to it by the Lords; an humble Petition was, this Day, (*May 23.*) presented to that House, from this fallen Prelate in these Words:

THE HUMBLE PETITION of WILLIAM Archbishop of *Canterbury*,

Shewing,

**T**HAT he hath neither Lands, Lease, nor Money; Abp Laud's Petition for Relief. that the small Store of Plate he had is long since melted down for his necessary Support and Expences, caused by his present Troubles: That his Rents and Profits are sequestered, and now all his Goods taken from him, and no Maintenance at all allowed him; insomuch that, if some Friends of his had not Compassion on his Wants, and sent him some little Supply, he had not been able to subsist till this present; and now this Supply is at the last.

He humbly prays that your Lordships would take his sad Condition into your Considerations, that somewhat may be allowed him out of his Estate to supply the Necessities of Life; assuring himself that your Lordships will not, in Honour and Justice, suffer him either to beg or starve.

And your Petitioner, &c.

The Lords seem to have been touch'd with Compassion on the hearing of this Petition, and immediately resolved to allow the Archbishop some Maintenance, out of Charity, to supply his Necessities; and further ordered, That the Petition should be recommended from that House to the Commons. The Commons returned for Answer, That they would send one by Messengers of their own;



An. 19. Car. I. own; but we hear no more of it from that Quar-  
 1643. ter.

May.

A Message being sent up from the Lower House, to desire the Lords to sit a while, for they had a Matter of great Importance to communicate to them: Soon after came up Mr. *Pym* to acquaint their Lordships, that the Commons had discharged their Consciences by the following *Vote* which they had passed:

The Commons  
 accuse the Queen  
 of High Treason.

‘ That the Queen had levied War against the Parliament and Kingdom; and, having discharged their Consciences, they think it fit to discharge their Duty too; and said, He was commanded by the House of Commons assembled in Parliament, in the Name of themselves, and of all the Commons of *England*, to accuse and impeach, and he did accordingly now accuse and impeach, *Henrietta Maria*, Queen of *England*, of High Treason. And they desired their Lordships to issue forth Proclamations to summon her to appear before them, and receive a Trial and due Sentence for the same. It is observable that these *Votes* were carried in the House of Commons *Nemine contradicente*. The Queen had just before met the King at *Edg-hill*, with a Reinforcement of 3000 Foot, 30 Troops of Horse and Dragoons, and six Pieces of Cannon, besides great Store of other Warlike Ammunition, which made the House of Commons so exasperated against her.

All that is entered in the *Lords Journals* on this extraordinary Impeachment is, *This to be considered of*; but we hear no more of it for some Time. There is a remarkable Letter of this Queen’s, published in Duke *Hamilton’s* Memoirs, wherein she mentions this Impeachment in these Words: After giving the Duke an Account of the good State the King’s Army was then in, she adds,

*You will give a Share of these News to all our Friends, if any dare own themselves such after the House of Commons have declared me Traitor,*  
 and

and carried up their Charge against me to the Lords. An. 19. Car. I.  
 This, I assure you, is true; but I know not yet what the House of Lords have done upon it. God forgive them for their Rebellion, as, I assure you, I forgive them from my Heart for what they do against me.

1643.

May.

May 27. The Committee for the Excise brought into the House of Commons a Charge of one Penny in the Pound on all Manner of Currants imported; upon Raisins of the Sun, one Halfpenny; Malaga Raisins, and all Figs imported, one Farthing; to be paid by the first Buyer, over and above all other Duties and Customs. Next an Excise was laid on all the different Sorts of Sugars, imported and refined here; likewise so much a Yard on all imported Silks, Sattins, &c. &c. by Name, a long List of which is enter'd in the *Commons Journals*; by which may be seen that they did not even then want a Taste for foreign Fineries.

An Excise laid upon Currants, Raisins, Sugars, Silks, &c.

This Day the Lords entered into a long Debate, concerning the *Votes* lately brought up from the House of Commons, about making a new Great Seal: And, the first *Vote* being debated, these Questions were put, Whether the Use of the Great Seal of *England* ought to be applied to the Commands of the Parliament, by the Laws of the Land? It passed in the Affirmative. The next, Whether the Great Seal ought to attend the Commands of the Parliament, according to Law? Resolved Negatively.

The Lords agree only to some of the Commons Votes relating to the Great Seal.

The second *Vote*, 'That the Great Seal doth not attend the Parliament, as by the Laws of the Land it ought to do,' being read, the Lords *resolved* to have a Conference, to be informed by the Commons wherein the Great Seal hath not been applied to the Commands of the Parliament. They likewise resolved to defer giving any Resolution as to the third *Vote* till the second was cleared.

The House then proceeded to the fourth *Vote*, 'That it is the Duty of both Houses of Parliament to



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

to provide a speedy Remedy to these Mischiefs; and, after Debate hereof, the Lords came to this *Resolution*, somewhat different from the other, that it is the Duty of both Houses of Parliament to use their best Endeavours to provide a fitting and speedy Remedy.

The fifth *Vote*, 'That a Great Seal of *England* shall be forthwith made to attend the Parliament, for Dispatch of the Affairs of Parliament and Kingdom,' was put to the Question, and pass'd in the Negative.

To palliate these *Resolutions* to the Commons, the Lords appointed a considerable Committee to consider what was fit to be delivered to them, on this Subject, at the ensuing Conference.

The same Day another Conference was held between the two Houses; in which the Commons communicated to the Lords some Letters which they had received from their General in the *North*, the Lord *Fairfax*, and other Officers, concerning the taking of *Wakefield*, &c. and that they had voted a publick Thanksgiving for the same; which the Lords agreed to. These Letters, which were address'd to the Speaker of the House of Commons, were ordered to be printed and published\*.

## Lord FAIRFAX's Letter.

S I R,

A Letter from the Lord Fairfax to the Speaker, about his taking of Wakefield.

UPON the 6th of this Month I writ to you by a special Messenger, which I hope is come to your Hand: Presently after the Dispatch of that Letter, the News was brought me, that the Earl of Newcastle

\* From the original Edition, published by Edward Hylland, May 27, 1643. In the Title Page it is called *Amiraculous Victory obtained by the Right Honourable Ferdinando Lord Fairfax, against the Army under the Command of the Earl of Newcastle, at Wakefield*; and has the following remarkable Introduction:

'Whereas it has too often been seen that, in a great Appearance of outward Means, we are over confident; and that, in the Smallness or Diminution of the same, we are too low and distrustful; so walking by Sight, and not by Faith: The Divine Goodness and Wisdom, to wean us from this Corruption, and to teach us the contrary



castle had possessed himself both of Rotheram and Sheffield: The Forces in Rotheram held out two Days Siege, and yielded up the Town upon Treaty; wherein it was agreed, that the Town should not be plundered, and that all the Gentlemen, Commanders, and Soldiers, (six only excepted, that were specially named) leaving their Arms, should have free Liberty to go whither they pleased: But, when the Enemy entered, they not only, contrary to their Articles, plundered the Town, but have also made all the Commanders and Soldiers Prisoners, and do endeavour to constrain them to take up Arms on their Party.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
May.

The

trary Lesson, to walk by Faith and not by Sight, hath often wrought and given great Victories, by little Means, and unexpected Ways.

A notable Pattern and Proof whereof is now seen in the Victory given at Wakefield; wherein God gave a happy Success upon great Disadvantage and Inequality, a far lesser Number, even less by half, overcoming a greater in a fortified Town, and the Persons taken far exceeding in Number those that took them; and all this not with the Loss of ten Persons. As this calls for the Eye of Faith, spiritually to discern the great Power and Goodness of God, which gives the Advantage of Victory on the Side of the Disadvantage in outward Force; so it calls upon us to maintain and continue a Course of Faith for the Time to come; and, by continually looking up to God, and Dependence on him, to expect from his Goodness and Bounty the like Blessing in other Times of Inequality and Disadvantage. And as this ought to confirm our Expectations for the future, so both now and hereafter, when God's Strength doth so visibly appear in our Weakness, we ought to give the whole Glory and Praise to his Strength, and none to our own Weakness.

Thankfulness for Blessings past being an Invitation of Blessings to come; and God not failing to supply that, which he knows will certainly turn to his own Glory. Neither ought our Thanksgiving only to bound itself in Words, or in short Thoughts and Intentions; but it should especially be expressed in a hearty and real Conversion and Conformity of Soul and Life to him, whose Will ought to be the Rule of our Life, and whose Service is the End of our Being.

Let it also be further observed, That both this and other Victories have been given on that Day, which hath been so much opposed by dissolute and Popish Persons, even to a Confutation of it by set Discourses and practical Profanations.

And having given all the Glory to God, it is next just and commendable to take Notice of those whom God hath vouchsafed to use in his Service, as to encourage them in God's Work, and that Cause which God doth maintain by his own mighty and outstretched Arm, thus made good in this extraordinary both Deliverance and Victory.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
May.

*The Commanders at Sheffield hearing of the Loss of Rotheram, and seeing some of the Enemy's Forces advanced in View of the Town, they all presently deserted the Place, as not tenable with so few against so potent an Army; and fled away with their Arms, some to Chesterfield, and some to Manchester.*

*The Loss of these two Places hath much elated the Enemy, and cast down the Spirits of the People in these Parts, who daily see the Enemy increase in Power, and to gain Ground; and no Succours come to them from any Part: The Earl of Newcastle's Army do now range over all the South-West Part of this County, \* [pillaging and cruelly using the well-affected Party;] and the last Week there was a Garrison of Horse and Foot laid at Knaresborough, where they begin to fortify the Town, [and pillage and utterly ruin all the religious People in those Parts, and round about them.]*

*On Friday Se'nnight last three Troops and some other Forces, of which many were French, came from that Garrison and pillaged Otley, [and there barbarously used some honest Women of that Town;] and, in their Retreat to Knaresborough, upon the Forest they took a Man and a Woman; the Man they wounded and beat cruelly, and before his Face ravished the Woman.*

*These Particulars I repeat, that you may the more clearly discern the Miseries which this Country groans under; and here, about Leeds, Bradford, and Halifax, being a mountainous barren Country, the People now begin to be sensible of Want; their last Year's Provisions being spent, and the Enemy's Garrisons stopping all Provisions both of Corn and Flesh, and other Necessaries that were wont to come from the more fruitful Countries to them; their Trade utterly taken away, their Poor grow innumerable, and great Scarcity of Means to relieve them. And this Army, which now lies amongst them to defend them from*

\*This and the following Letter is printed in *Rushworth*; but the Introduction before given, and the Passages between Crotchets are omitted; as is likewise the Postscript in Mr. *Stockdell's* Letter, relating to the King's Commission for plundering.



from the Enemy, cannot defend them from Want, *An. 19. Car. I.*  
 which causeth much Murnur and Lamentation a-  
 mongst the People. And for the Army itself, it is  
 so far in Arrear, and no Way appearing how they  
 shall either be supplied with Money nor Succours, as  
 they grow very mutinous.

1643.

May.

Yet, upon Saturday last, in the Night, I caused  
 to be drawn out of the Garrisons in Leeds, Bradford,  
 Halifax, and Howley, some Horse, Foot, and Dra-  
 gooners, in all about 1500 Men, and sent them a-  
 gainst Wakefield, commanded by my Son, and as-  
 sisted by Major-General Gifford, Sir Henry Foulis,  
 and Sir William Fairfax, with divers other Com-  
 manders: They appeared before Wakefield about  
 Four o'Clock on Sunday in the Morning, where they  
 found the Enemy, who had Intelligence of their De-  
 sign, ready to receive them; there was in the Town  
 General Goring, Serjeant-Major-General Mack-  
 worth, the Lord Goring, with many other princi-  
 pal Commanders and eminent Persons, about seven  
 Troops of Horse, and six Regiments containing 3000  
 Foot; the Town well fortified with Works, and  
 four Pieces of Ordnance; yet our Men, both Com-  
 manders and common Soldiers, went on with un-  
 daunted Courage; and, notwithstanding the thick  
 Vollies of small and great Shot from the Enemies,  
 charged up to their Works, which they entered,  
 seized upon their Ordnance, and turned them upon  
 themselves; and pursued the Enemy so close as they  
 beat quite out of the Town the most Part of the  
 Horse, and a great Number of the Foot, and made  
 all the rest Prisoners; with them they took four  
 Pieces of Ordnance and all the Ammunition then in  
 the Town, and a great Number of Arms; and, a-  
 mongst the Prisoners, General Goring himself, with  
 divers other Commanders and other common Soldiers,  
 in all about 1500 Men, 27 Colours of Foot, and  
 three Cornets of Horse; of which I send a more par-  
 ticular Account inclosed. The more exact and parti-  
 cular Relation of this Service, as it is testified to me  
 under the Hands of the principal Commanders em-  
 ployed



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

*ployed in that Design, I send you inclosed for your better Information; and truly, for my Part, I do rather account it a Miracle than a Victory; and the Glory and Praise be ascribed to God that wrought it; in which I hope I derogate nothing from the Merits of the Commanders and Soldiers, who every Man, in his Place and Duty, shewed as much Courage and Resolution as could be expected from Men. When the Town was thus taken, they found their Number and Strength too weak to keep it and their Prisoners, so left the Place and marched away with their Booty.*

*In taking the Town we lost no Man of Note, and only seven Men in all; of which one was the Clerk of the Stores, an Ensign of Foot, and one Quartermaster of Horse, the rest common Soldiers; but many of our Men were shot and wounded. This Overthrow hath much enrag'd the Enemy, who threaten a present Revenge, and are drawing all their Forces this Way to effect it.*

*I perceive there are Succours sent to Lincolnshire and other adjacent Counties, which, if they were here, might be employed to as much Advantage for the Public Safety, as in any Place. I desire our Condition may be seriously thought on by the House, and the Aids, often promised, may presently march away to us; and that Col. Cromwell, with his Horse and Foot, may also be ordered to march to me; that, being joined together, I may be able to draw this Army into the Field, and gain fresh Quarters for the Soldiers, and furnish ourselves with Powder, Arms, and Ammunition; which is now grown very scarce, and cannot be supplied untill the Passage to Hull be forced open, which now is possessed by the Enemy. If such Succours come not timely to us, we cannot long subsist, but must be forced to accept of dishonourable Conditions; which, besides the Loss and Ruin of this Country, will be a great Disadvantage to the general Safety; and, withall, some Course must be thought on to furnish some large Proportion of Money to defray the Soldiers Arrears,*  
which

Of ENGLAND. 273

which I beseech you to endeavour for them and me, who am,

Leeds, May 23,  
1643.

Your most affectionate  
Friend and Servant,

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
May.

FER. FAIRFAX.

P. S. I send you a Letter inclosed from the Lord Goring to his Son General Goring, found in his Chamber at Wakefield, which will let the House see the Enemies great Desire to have this Army ruined; that they might, with their whole Force, march Southwards.

Lord GORING's LETTER to his SON.

George,

I Saw what you wrote to H. Jermin, and find that the Business will be put on that Way: But I am of Opinion that your General will never consent to it, the latter Way of dividing his Force, unless it be in the Country where he will abide himself; this will be tried To-morrow, at his Return hither, where the Queen expects him. In the Interim, if it were possible to give the Enemy any such Knock, or considerable Disturbance to the Country round about them, which hath not yet felt the Misery of their Neighbours, I would not doubt the Treaty might be resumed again; by which Means, and by no other, your Army may be set at Liberty to change your Stations, and do something that may be of Consequence indeed. I pray you think seriously hereof, and once in your Life follow the Advice of

Your best Friend,

April 17, 1643.

and dearly loving Father,

G O R I N G.

After I had sealed my Letter I was advised to advertise you, that the Lord Fairfax never believed you would look into the Parts where now

VOL. XII.

S

you



## 274 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

‘ you are, but intended to draw back to the Place  
‘ from whence you came, which made him so lofty  
‘ in his Conditions ; wherefore if you can (as my  
‘ Authors propose) get between *Bradford* and *Leeds*,  
‘ you will so annoy, divert, and separate them in  
‘ all their Designs, as you may be sure to carry  
‘ *Halifax* and *Bradford* on that Hand, or *Leeds* on  
‘ the other. Take this to Heart, and let General  
‘ *King*, with my humble Service, know thus much,  
‘ not as new to him and the rest of you, but as that  
‘ which all the wisest and most knowing Men in  
‘ the Country advise and hope ; this will so hure  
‘ them, and satisfy this Country, and will give such  
‘ other Advantages as will render you happy and  
‘ glorious too ; whereas, on the contrary, all will  
‘ fall flat, both in Power and Reputation, past  
‘ Expression ; her Majesty will be either unprovided  
‘ of such a Convoy from thence as is fit for her  
‘ and the King’s present Occasions, or else leave  
‘ this Country naked to the Tyranny of the mer-  
‘ ciless Enemy, contrary to Contract and all due  
‘ Justice. This is the Opinion of others far bet-  
‘ ter able to advise than he that so heartily prays  
‘ for you, and is

*Yours,*

*York, April 17,*

1643.

*G O R I N G.*

*P. S.* ‘ Cudgel them to a Treaty, and then let  
‘ us alone for the rest.’

A LETTER from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and other  
Officers.

ON Saturday Night, the 20th of May, the Lord-  
General gave Order for a Party of 1000 Foot,  
three Companies of Dragoons, and eight Troops  
of Horse, to march from the Garrisons of *Leeds*,  
*Bradford*, *Halifax*, and *Howley*. Sir *Thomas Fair-*  
*fax* commanded in Chief ; the Foot were commanded  
by Serjeant-Major-General *Gifford* and Sir *Wil-*  
*liam Fairfax* ; the Horse were divided into two  
Bodies, four Troops commanded by Sir *Thomas*  
*Fairfax*, and the other four Troops by Sir *Henry*  
*Foulis*.



Foulis. Howley was the Rendezvous, where they all met on Saturday last, about Twelve o'Clock at Night; about Two next Morning they marched away, and coming to Stanley, where two of the Enemy's Troops lay with some Dragoons, that Quarter was beaten up, and about twenty-one Prisoners taken. About Four o'Clock in the Morning we came before Wakefield; where, after some of their Horse were beaten into the Town, the Foot, with unspeakable Courage, beat the Enemies from the Hedges, which they had lined with Musqueteers, into the Town, and assaulted it in two Places, Wren-gate and Northgate. After an Hour and a Half's Fight, we recovered one of their Pieces, and turned it upon them, and entered the Town at both Places, at one and the same Time: When the Barricadoes were opened, Sir Thomas Fairfax, with the Horse, fell into the Town, and cleared the Street; where Col. Goring was taken by Lieutenant Alured, Brother to Captain Alured, a Member of the House; yet in the Market Place there stood three Troops of Horse, and Col. Lambton's Regiment, to whom Major-General Gifford sent a Trumpet with Offer of Quarter, if they would lay down their Arms; they answered, They scorned the Motion; then he fired a Piece of their own Ordnance upon them, and the Horse fell in upon them, beat them out of Town, and took all these Officers hereafter mentioned, also, Twenty-seven Colours of Foot, three Cornets of Horse, and about 1500 common Soldiers. The Enemy had in Wakefield 3000 Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, besides Col. Lambton's Regiment, which came into the Town after we had entered it. The Enemy left behind them four Pieces of Ordnance, with Ammunition, which we brought away; and made the following Commanders Prisoners, viz. General Goring; Sir Thomas Bland, Lieutenant-Colonel to Sir George Wentworth; Lieutenant-Colonels Saint George and Macmoyler; Serjeant-Major Carr; Captains, Carr, Knight, Wildbore, Rudston, Pemberton, Croft, Legard, Lashley, Kayley and Nutall; Captain-Lieutenant Benson;

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

May.

## 274 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

‘ you are, but intended to draw back to the Place  
‘ from whence you came, which made him so lofty  
‘ in his Conditions ; wherefore if you can (as my  
‘ Authors propose) get between *Bradford* and *Leeds*,  
‘ you will so annoy, divert, and separate them in  
‘ all their Designs, as you may be sure to carry  
‘ *Halifax* and *Bradford* on that Hand, or *Leeds* on  
‘ the other. Take this to Heart, and let General  
‘ *King*, with my humble Service, know thus much,  
‘ not as new to him and the rest of you, but as that  
‘ which all the wisest and most knowing Men in  
‘ the Country advise and hope ; this will so hure  
‘ them, and satisfy this Country, and will give such  
‘ other Advantages as will render you happy and  
‘ glorious too ; whereas, on the contrary, all will  
‘ fall flat, both in Power and Reputation, past  
‘ Expression ; her Majesty will be either unprovided  
‘ of such a Convoy from thence as is fit for her  
‘ and the King’s present Occasions, or else leave  
‘ this Country naked to the Tyranny of the mer-  
‘ ciless Enemy, contrary to Contract and all due  
‘ Justice. This is the Opinion of others far bet-  
‘ ter able to advise than he that so heartily prays  
‘ for you, and is

*Yours,*

*York, April 17,*  
1643.

*G O R I N G.*

*P. S.* ‘ Cudgel them to a Treaty, and then let  
‘ us alone for the rest.’

A LETTER from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and other  
Officers.

ON Saturday Night, the 20th of May, the Lord-  
General gave Order for a Party of 1000 Foot,  
three Companies of Dragoons, and eight Troops  
of Horse, to march from the Garrisons of *Leeds*,  
*Bradford*, *Halifax*, and *Howley*. Sir *Thomas Fair-*  
*fax* commanded in Chief ; the Foot were commanded  
by Serjeant-Major-General *Gifford* and Sir *Wil-*  
*liam Fairfax* ; the Horse were divided into two  
Bodies, four Troops commanded by Sir *Thomas*  
*Fairfax*, and the other four Troops by Sir *Henry*  
*Foulis*.



Foulis. Howley was the Rendezvous, where they all met on Saturday last, about Twelve o'Clock at Night; about Two next Morning they marched away, and coming to Stanley, where two of the Enemy's Troops lay with some Dragoons, that Quarter was beaten up, and about twenty-one Prisoners taken. About Four o'Clock in the Morning we came before Wakefield; where, after some of their Horse were beaten into the Town, the Foot, with unspeakable Courage, beat the Enemies from the Hedges, which they had lined with Musqueteers, into the Town, and assaulted it in two Places, Wren-gate and Northgate. After an Hour and a Half's Fight, we recovered one of their Pieces, and turned it upon them, and entered the Town at both Places, at one and the same Time: When the Barricadoes were opened, Sir Thomas Fairfax, with the Horse, fell into the Town, and cleared the Street; where Col. Goring was taken by Lieutenant Alured, Brother to Captain Alured, a Member of the House; yet in the Market Place there stood three Troops of Horse, and Col. Lambton's Regiment, to whom Major-General Gifford sent a Trumpet with Offer of Quarter, if they would lay down their Arms; they answered, They scorned the Motion; then he fired a Piece of their own Ordnance upon them, and the Horse fell in upon them, beat them out of Town, and took all these Officers hereafter mentioned, also, Twenty-seven Colours of Foot, three Cornets of Horse, and about 1500 common Soldiers. The Enemy had in Wakefield 3000 Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, besides Col. Lambton's Regiment, which came into the Town after we had entered it. The Enemy left behind them four Pieces of Ordnance, with Ammunition, which we brought away; and made the following Commanders Prisoners, viz. General Goring; Sir Thomas Bland, Lieutenant-Colonel to Sir George Wentworth; Lieutenant-Colonels Saint George and Macmoyler; Serjeant-Major Carr; Captains, Carr, Knight, Wildbore, Rudston, Pemberton, Croft, Legard, Lashley, Kayley and Nutall; Captain-Lieutenant Benfon;

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.



## 276 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

June.

*Serjeant-Major Carnabie, and Captain Nuttall left wounded in Wakefield, upon their Engagements to be true Prisoners; Lieutenants, Monckton, Thomas, Wheatley, Kent, and Nicholson; Ensigns, Squire, Vavasor, Maskew, Lambton, Duckett, Stockeld, Baldwinson, Davis, Carr, Gibson, Smathweight, Ballinson, Watfson, Smelt, and Haliburton; Cornet Wyvill.*

THOMAS FAIRFAX,	JOHN HOLMAN,
HENRY FOULIS,	ROBERT FOWLIS,
JOHN GIFFORD,	TITUS LEIGHTON,
WILLIAM FAIRFAX,	FRANCIS TALBOT.

Annexed to the foregoing Letter we find Part of a Postscript wrote by another Hand.

*I had forgotten, in the Letter to the Speaker, to mention the new Commissions granted by the King; wherein his Majesty, according to the known Laws of the Land (as all Things are said to be done) gives Liberty to the Parties to whom the Commissions are directed, to plunder and take Men's Estates, so as they account for the Moiety of the Profit to his Majesty: This is confessed by the Captains now Prisoners here.*

Your Servant,

From Leeds, May 23,  
1643.

THOMAS STOCKDELL.

*It is now about three Weeks since we had any Letter from you, or any Advertisement from the South.*

An Order relating to the Regalia in Westminster Abbey.

*June 2. On a Motion in the House of Commons, That the Dean, Sub-Dean, and Prebendaries of Westminster Abbey, should be required to deliver up the Keys of the Treasury there, where the Regalia were kept, that the Place might be searched, and a Report of it made to the House, the Question was put, Whether, upon Refusal of the Keys, the Door of that Place should be broke open? It passed in the Negative, 58 against*

gainst 37: But the next Day, the same Question being again put, with the Addition of an Inventory of the Things there to be taken, new Locks put on the Doors, and nothing removed till upon further Order of the House, it was carried by so small a Majority, as 42 against 41, for breaking open the Doors.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
June.

The important Town of *Newcastle* upon *Tyne* had been, for some Time past, in the Hands of the King's Forces; by which the City of *London* was much straitened for Coals, the Works and Mines for digging this useful Commodity being all engrossed by the Royalists, as well as the several Ports from which it was shipp'd off and conveyed to *London*. To remedy this great Inconvenience to the City, after many Consultations and Conferences, a Scheme was published, put on the Footing of the Adventurers for *Ireland*; by which Means those *Northern* Parts of *England* were to be as much a conquer'd Country as the other; and the Lands and Estates of many great Families shar'd out amongst those who would venture to advance Money for this Expedition. An Ordinance to that Purpose was passed by both Houses, about this Time, and ordered to be printed and published.

June 5. A Petition, from the University of *Cambridge*, was presented to the Lords: That of *Oxford*, was, at this Time, protected from the Parliament's Resentment, by the King's Residence there with his Army; but what her Sister suffered is best expressed in her own Words:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS now assembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the University of *Cambridge*

*H*umbly presenteth to your Honourable Consideration the sad dejected State of the University; how our Schools daily grow desolate, mourning the

Petition from the University of *Cambridge*.



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

*Absence of their Professors, and their wonted Auditories; how, in our Colleges, our Numbers grow thin and our Revenues short; and what Subsistence we have abroad is, for the most Part, involved in the common Miseries; how, frightened by the neighbouring Noise of War, our Students either quit their Gowns or abandon their Studies; how our Degrees lie disesteemed, and all Hopes of our public Commencements are blasted in the Bud; besides sundry other Inconveniences which we forbear to mention.*

*We cannot but conceive your Honourable Piety (out of a noble Zeal for Learning) will duly pity our sad Condition; and, as the present general Calamities give Way, afford us some Succour and Encouragement.*

*Your Wisdoms best know what Privileges and Immunities have been, in all good Times, afforded to the Seats of Learning and Professors of it; and, even in the Fury and Heat of War, Places of Religion and Devotion have usually, not only on both Sides, been spared from Ruin, but supported and esteemed as Sanctuaries. Hence it is that the Members of our University (by Charter confirmed by Act of Parliament) are expressly freed from all Preparations and Contributions to any War; hence it is that, in neighbouring Territories, where the Excise is most in Use, the University, with all their Students, are exempt.*

*May it, therefore, not be displeasing to your pious Wisdoms, if in all Humility we crave at your Hands a tender Consideration of our Case; that you will be pleased to exempt our poor Estates from all such Rates and Impositions; to vouchsafe such Freedom to our Persons, not giving just Offence, as may enable us the better to keep together, and daily to offer up our joint Prayers to God for a blessed Union betwixt our gracious Sovereign and you, and the Blessing of Peace upon the Land,*

After this Petition the Ordinance of the Lords and Commons, formerly made, was read, for the calling an Assembly of learned and godly Divines,  
to



to be consulted with by Parliament, for the settling the Government and Liturgy of the Church of England; and vindicating and clearing the Doctrine of the said Church from false Aspersions and Interpretations. This Ordinance was referred to the Consideration of thirteen Lords, appointed as a Committee, to report the same to the House. This Assembly of Divines soon after met, to the Number of sixty-nine, in Henry VIth's Chapel, in the Abbey of *Westminster*, where a Sermon was preached, before them and the two Houses of Parliament, by Dr. *Twiss*, their Prolocutor; and, a Day or two after, a public Fast was kept by them \*. What they did, when met together, will appear in the Sequel.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643-  
June.

Meeting of the  
Assembly of Di-  
vines at West-  
minster.

June 8. The House of Commons had been very busy, some Days, in tracing out a Plot against the Parliament, and securing the Authors and Contrivers of it. The Names of these Conspirators were, Mr. *Waller*, a Member of the House of Commons, and one of their late Commissioners at *Oxford*, Mr. *Tomkins*, Mr. *Chaloner*, and others; whose Design, being amply related by Lord *Clarendon*, *Rushworth* and other Historians; we shall confine our Account of it to what the *Journals* and the *Pamphlets* of these Times afford us. It appears from the former that

A Plot against  
the Parliament;

This Day, at a Conference, the House of Commons produced the Examinations they had taken concerning this Plot, to prove the Particulars of it, and also made some Observations thereupon. They then presented to the Lords the Form of an Oath, or Covenant, which the Members of their House, for the most Part, had already taken, except a few who desired some Days to consider of it; and this they requested the House of Lords to take also. They further brought up an Oath, or Covenant, to be taken by the whole Kingdom, for Discovery of such Designs as these, and to express a Detestation

Which gives Rise  
to a new Oath  
or Covenant.

of

\* The Ordinance for calling this Assembly is at Length in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 337, and in *Husband's*, p. 208 whereby it appears that a vast Number more were named than met at this Time.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

of all of the like Nature. Lastly, they said it was to distinguish the good and the well-affected Party from the bad, and unite the former faster together amongst themselves.

This Affair, *Whitlocke* tells us, was long debated in the House of Commons; but was, at last, carried, and those Members looked upon as disaffected who were any way backward in taking of it. And, after another long Debate, it was ordered to be taken by all Persons, in City and Country; and those who refused it had the Mark of *Malignancy* fixed upon them.

Next the Commons offered some *Votes*, which had passed their House, to the Lords, for their Concurrence; as,

1. 'That a particular short Day may be appointed, wherein both Lords and Commons, with the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, &c. may meet and give public Thanks to God, for this Discovery and great Deliverance.' Agreed; and the 13th Instant appointed for the Parliament and City, and that Day Month for the whole Kingdom.

2. 'That a free Pardon shall be granted for all such Persons that have been in this Plot, and are not yet taken, nor have fled, as shall come in voluntarily before the 15th of this Month, and discover their whole Knowledge of this Design, and shall heartily join with the Parliament in Defence of the Kingdom.'

3. 'That it be recommended to the City to have a stricter Guard kept till this Business be settled; and that some better Course may be taken for securing the Prisoners, and keeping them in close Custody.'

4. 'That Letters be sent to the Earl of *Warwick*, to inform him of this Plot; and that the said Oath may be taken by all the Officers and Mariners through the whole Fleet.'

The Lords agreed to every one of these *Votes*, without any Alteration,

The



The Commons, also, thought fit to send a Deputation of their House into the City, as this Day, to make the same Narrative to them as was made to the Lords. Mr. Pym, being chosen Orator for this Purpose, delivered himself, at a Common-Hall, in these Words : \*

An. 19, Car. I.  
1643.  
June,

*My Lord Mayor, and you worthy Citizens of this famous and magnificent City,*

WE are sent hither to you from the House of Commons, to make known to you the Discovery of a great and mischievous Design, tending not only to the Ruin and Destruction of the City and of the Kingdom ; but, in those Ruins, likewise to have buried Religion and Liberty. I might call it a strange Design (though, in these late Times, Designs of this Kind have been very frequent) because it exceeds others in divers considerable Circumstances of it ; in the Malice of the Intention, Subtily of Contrivance, Extent of Mischief, and Nearness of Execution ; all which arose from the Wickedness of the Authors. Two others may be added ; that is, the Clearness of the Discovery and Proof, and the Greatness of the Deliverance, proceeding from the great Mercies of God.

I shall, in the opening this Design, take this Course for my own Memory and yours ; and observe,

- \* *First*, What was in their Aims.
- \* *Secondly*, The Variety of Preparations.
- \* *Thirdly*, The Degrees of Proceedings. And
- \* *Fourthly*, The Maturity and Readiness for Execution.

The Parliament, the City, and the Army, seem to be the three vital Parts of this Kingdom ; wherein not only the Well-being, but the very Life and Being of it doth consist ; this Mischief would have seized upon all these at once.

\* The

\* From the Original Edition, printed for Peter Cole, in Cornhill, near the Royal-Exchange ; and said, in the Title Page, to be corrected by Mr. Pym's own Hand for the Press,



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

‘ The City should have been put into such a Combustion, as to have your Swords imbrued in one anothers Blood : The Parliament should have been corrupted, and betrayed by their own Members : The Army destroyed, if not by Force, yet for Want of Supply and Maintenance, that so they might have had an open and clearer Way to the rest which they had in Proposition ; especially to that main and supreme End, The Extirpation of Religion.

‘ I shall tell you, first, out of what Principles this did rise ; it was from the Ashes of another Design that failed ; that *mutinous Petition* which was contrived in this City ; the Actors of that *Petition* being therein disappointed, they fell presently into Consultation how they might compass their former End in another Way ; that is, under Pretence of securing themselves by Force against the *Ordinances* of Parliament, and, under Pretence of procuring Peace, they would have made themselves Masters of the City, yea of the whole Kingdom ; and they would have ruined and destroyed all those that should have interrupted them in their mischievous Intentions.

‘ The first Step in their Preparation was, To appoint a Committee that might often meet together, and consult how they might compass this wicked End.

‘ Their next was, That they might enable that Committee with Intelligence from both Armies, as well those on the King’s Side, (as they call themselves, though we be of the King’s Side indeed) as those that are raised by the Parliament ; especially they were careful to understand the Proceedings of Parliament, that so, by the Advantage of this Intelligence, they might the better effect that which they had in Project, and find the readiest and the nearest Ways to it.

‘ After they had thus provided for Intelligence, then how to procure Power and Countenance to this Action, by some appearing Authority from  
his

his Majesty : For which Purpose they projected to get a Commission from the King, whereby many of themselves, and of those that were of their own Consort, should be established a Council of War in *London* and Parts adjacent, with Power to raise Forces, make Provisions of Ammunition, and of other Kind of Arms, and to give Authority to the leading and conducting of those Forces, and to raise Money for the Maintenance of them; and, as it is expressed in the Commission, for the Destruction of the Army under the Command of *Robert Earl of Essex*, raised by Authority from the two Houses of Parliament.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
June.

‘ Having laid these Grounds, I shall, in the next Place, discover to you those that should have been Actors and Agents in this Business, their several Qualifications and Relations.

‘ The first Sort was some Members of the City, whereof there were divers, you shall hear the Names out of the Proofs; the next was (in their Pretence, as they gave out) Members of the two Houses of Parliament; the third Sort was, two Gentlemen, *Mr. Waller* and a Brother-in-Law of his, *Mr. Tomkins*, that were to be Agents betwixt the Parliament and the City, as they pretended; a fourth Sort was, those that were to be Messengers to convey Intelligence from this Place to the Court at *Oxford*, and to other Places where there should be occasion; and the fifth and last consisted but in one Man, that we yet discover, and that was the Lord of *Falkland*, that kept Correspondency with them from the Court: These were to be the Actors in this mischievous Design.

‘ They began then to think upon some other Courses of very great Advantage to themselves.

‘ The first was of Combination; how they might be more closely conjoined one to another, and how they might be more secure from all others that were not of the same Party; and, for this Purpose there was devised a Protestation of Secrecy, whereby, as they were Christians, they did bind them-



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

themselves to keep one anothers Counsel, not to reveal that which they had Knowledge of, which they were trusted with : And the second was, a Wariness in discovering the Business to any of those who were to be brought into the Plot, for tho' they came in amongst them to be of them, they would not trust all of their own Body ; but they took this wary and subtile Course, that no one Man should acquaint above two in this Business, that so, if it came to Examination, it should never go farther than three, by the same Party that discovered it ; and then those two had the like Power, that any one of them might discover it to two others, that so still it might be confined within the Number of three : Then there was a special Obligation, as was pretended by Mr. *Waller*, which he had made to those that he said were Members of both Houses of Parliament, and consenting to this Plot ; but that is yet but a Pretence, no Names or Parties are known.

After they had provided thus for their Combination, and for their Security, then, in the next Place, they thought of some Means of Augmentation, how they might increase their Numbers, and draw in others to come to be of their Party ; and for this they did resolve to use all the Art and Subtilty to irritate Men's Minds against the Parliament ; they found out those that thought themselves most heavily burdened with these Taxes ; they did cherish all that had any Discontents about the Assessment, advising them to repair to the Committee for Ease, which they knew would be difficult to obtain ; and that they, being disappointed, would be more enraged, and the apter to join with them in this Plot.

From this Care of Augmentation, they went, in the next Place, to find out some Means of Discovery ; that they might know how far their Party did extend, who were of their Side, and who were against them ; and, for this Purpose, they did devise that there should be a Survey of all the Wards,



Wards, nay of all the Parishes, within the City of *London*, the Suburbs and Places adjoining in every Parish, to observe those that were for them, whom they called Right Men ; and others that were against them, whom they called Averse Men ; and then a third Sort, whom they called Neutrals and Indifferent Men ; and they appointed several Persons, that were trusted with this Survey and Enquiry, to find out these several Degrees and Sorts in every Parish.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

June.

‘ Thus far this Design seems to be but a Work of the Brain, to consist only in Invention and Subtilty of Design ; but the other Steps and Degrees, which I shall now observe to you, will make it to be a Work of the Hand, to bring it somewhat nearer to Execution.

‘ The first Step that came into Action and Execution was, That they procured this Commission, which they had before designed and endeavoured to obtain : Now they had obtained a Commission, as I told you before, to establish certain Men, seventeen in Number ; their Names are there expressed ; you shall hear them read to you ; they were to be a Council of War here within the City ; these seventeen Men had Power to name others to themselves, to the Number of twenty-one ; and they should be enabled both to appoint, not only Colonels and Captains, and other inferior Officers of an Army, but to appoint and nominate a General ; they had Power to raise Men, to raise Arms and Ammunition, and to do all those other Things that I told you before ; and to lay Taxes and Impositions, to raise Money, and to execute Martial Law.

‘ When they had gone thus far, in the next Place, they did obtain a Warrant from the King ; and this was to Mr. *Chaloner*, that he might receive Money and Plate of all those, that, either by voluntary Contribution or Loan, would furnish the King, in this Necessity of his, as they called it ; and thereby the King was obliged to the Repayment of it : This was obtained.

‘ By

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

June.

‘ By this cometh in the List; and what was before Part of the Design, cometh now into Act; the Citizens that were trusted with framing of this List, brought it in, except in some few Parishes, under those Heads of Discovery that I formerly told you of; that is, in every Parish who were Right, who were Indifferent and Neutral, and who were Averse; and those were brought to Mr. *Waller's* House. After they had delivered that List, the Citizens then declared themselves that now they had done their Part; as they had discovered to them a Foundation of Strength, they did expect from them again a Foundation of Countenance and Authority, that was from both Houses of Parliament; and they did declare, that they would proceed no farther till they knew the Names of those Members of both Houses that should join with them, and should undertake to countenance this Business. Mr. *Waller* made this Answer, that he did assure them that they should have Members of both Houses, both Lords and Commons, to join with them; that he himself was but their Mouth; that he spoke not his own Words, but their Words; that he was but their Agent, and did their Work; that they should have of the ablest, of the best, and of the greatest Lords, and the greatest Number; nay, that they should pick and chuse; that they could not wish for a Lord, whom he doubted not but to procure them: This was the Vanity of his Boasting to them to draw them on, and to encourage them in this Plot. This being now done, and propounded by the Citizens on their Part, Mr. *Waller* propounded from the Lords divers Quæries and Questions which had been framed, as he said, by the Lords and Commons; and, in their Name, he did present them that were for the Removal of Difficulties, of some Obstructions, that might hinder this Work; those Quæries were delivered upon Friday was Se'nnight to some of the Citizens, and, upon the Saturday Morning, (that was Saturday was Se'nnight) they were returned back again with Answers.



‘ I shall now relate to you both the Quæries An. 19. Car. 1. and the Answers that were returned by those of the City. 1643.

‘ The first Quære was, What Number of Men there were armed ?

‘ The Answer to this was, That there was a third Part well armed, a third Part with Halberts, and another third Part with what they could get ; with what came to hand.

‘ The second Quære was, In what Places the Magazines were laid ?

‘ The Answer to that was, At Alderman Fowk’s House, at *Leadenhall*, and at *Guildhall*.

‘ The third Quære was, Where the Rendezvous should be ?

‘ The Answer was, At all the Gates, the Places of the Magazines, in *Cheapside*, in the *Exchange*, and at what other Places the Lords should think fit.

‘ The fourth Quære was, Where was the Place of Retreat, if there should be Occasion ?

‘ The Answer was, That they had *Banstead Downs*, they had *Blackheath*, in Proposition ; but they did refer the Conclusion of the Place to the Lords.

‘ The fifth was, What Colours there should be ?

‘ To this it was answered, That at every Rendezvous there should be Colours.

‘ A sixth Consideration was, By what Marks and Tokens they should be distinguished from others, and know their Friends from their Enemies ?

‘ To this it was answered, That they should have white Ribbons or white Tape.

‘ Then, in the seventh Place, it was asked, What Strength there was within the Walls, and what Strength without the Walls ?

‘ To this it was answered, That, within the Walls, there was for one with them, three against them ; but, without the Walls, for one against them, there were five for them.

‘ The eighth was, What was to be done with the *Tower* ?

‘ The



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

‘ The Answer was, That they could conclude nothing in that Point.

‘ The ninth was, Where the chief Commanders dwelt ?

‘ To that they made this Answer, That every Parish could tell what new Commanders and Captains they had, and who of the Militia dwelt in it.

‘ The tenth and the last was, What Time this should be put in Execution ?

‘ To that the Answer was, That the Time was wholly left to the Lords.

‘ After all these Quæries, thus propounded and answered, Mr. *Waller* told them, That he would acquaint the Lords with those *Answers* that he had received from them to their Quæries ; and wished them not to be troubled, though the Lords did not yet declare themselves, for they could do them as good Service in the House.

‘ Being proceeded thus far, they came then to some Propositions which should be put in Execution, and they were these :

*First*, ‘ That they would take into their Custody the King’s Children that were here.

The *second* was, ‘ That they would lay hold of all those Persons that they thought should be able to stand in their Way, or to give them any Impediment, or at least of some considerable Number of them ; it is unlike that all were named, but some were named ; of the Lords House there was named my Lord *Say* and my Lord *Wharton* ; and besides my Lord Mayor, whom they took into their Consideration as the Head of the City, there was named of the House of Commons, Sir *Philip Stapylton*, Mr. *Hampden*, Mr. *Strode* ; and they did me the Honour and Favour to name me too.

‘ When they had taken into Consideration the Surprizal of these Members of both Houses, they did take into their further Resolution, that, with my Lord Mayor, should have been seized all your Committee of Militia ; they would not spare one of them.

‘ They

‘ They intended further, that they would release all Prisoners that had been committed by the Parliament; that they would seize upon the Magazines; that they would make a *Declaration* to satisfy the People.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
June.

‘ There are no Designs, be they never so ill, but they do put on a Mask of some Good, for betwixt that that is absolutely and apparently ill, there is no Congruity with the Will of Man; and therefore the worst of Evils are undertaken under a Shadow and a Shew of Goodness: A *Declaration* must be set out, to make the People believe that they stood up for the Preservation of Religion, for the Preservation of the King’s Prerogative, of the Liberties of the Subject, of the Privileges of Parliament; and of these 1000 Copies were to be printed; they were to be set upon Posts and Gates in the most considerable and open Places; and they were to be dispersed, as much as they could, thro’ the City against the Time it should be put in Execution: This was done upon *Saturday* last was Se’n-night, in the Morning.

‘ Then, in the next Place, they thought fit to give Intelligence to the Court of what Proceedings they had made here; and thereupon Mr. *Hazel* was sent to *Oxford*, that very *Saturday* in the Afternoon, from Mr. *Waller*’s House. There were two Messages sent by him, for this main Design they would not trust in Writing: The first Message was from Mr. *Waller*, That he should tell my Lord of *Falkland*, that he would give him a more full Notice of the great Business very speedily: The other Message was from Mr. *Tomkins*, and that was, That the Design was now come to good Maturity; that they had so strong a Party in the City, that tho’ it were discovered, yet they would be able to put it in Execution: They promised to give Notice to the King of the very Day, and, if it were possible, of the very Hour, wherein this should be put in Execution; and then they did desire, when they had seized upon the Outworks, that there might some Party of the King’s Army come



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
June.

up within fifteen Miles of the City, who, upon Knowledge of their Proceedings, must be admitted into the City. These were the four Points upon which the Message did consist, which was sent, from Mr. *Tomkins* to my Lord of *Falkland*, by Mr. *Hazel*. To both these Messages my Lord of *Falkland* returned an Answer by Word of Mouth; (they kept themselves so closely that they durst not venture to write) and he bid the Messenger tell Mr. *Waller*, Mr. *Tomkins*, and Mr. *Hambden*, (a Gentleman that was sent up with a Message from the King, and remained here in Town to agitate this Business, and made that Use of his being here in Town) That he could not well write, and did excuse himself; but prayed them that they would use all possible Haste in the main Business.

Mr. *Waller* having plotted it, and brought it on thus far, now he began to think of pushing it further; and, the *Tuesday* following this *Saturday*, which was *Tuesday* was Se'nnight in the Evening, after he came home to his Lodging, Mr. *Tomkins* and he being together, he told him, That the very next Morning, that was *Wednesday*, the Fast-Day, he should go to my Lord of *Holland*, and acquaint him with this Plot, and discover so much to him as he thought fit; that he himself would go to some other Lords, and do the like. This was the *Tuesday* Night, in which Conference they put on that Confidence in Expectation of Success in this Plot, that Mr. *Waller* broke out with a great Oath to affirm, That if they did carry this throughout, then they would have any thing. This he spake to Mr. *Tomkins* with a very great deal of Earnestness and Assurance. So far they went on in Hope and Expectation, but here they were cut short: That very Night there were Warrants issued upon some Discoveries that were made of this Plot, to the Lord Mayor, and to the Sheriffs here; which they did execute with so much Diligence and Care of the Good of the City, that the next Morning, when Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Waller* should have gone about their Business, they were

ap-



apprehended, and the rest of the Citizens, divers An. 19. Car. I.  
of them, but some escaped.

‘ Thus far I have discovered to you the Materials and the Lineaments of this mischievous Design; you shall now be pleased to hear the Proofs and the Confessions out of which this Narration doth arise, and that will make all this good to you that I have said. And, after those are read, I shall then tell you what hath been done since in the House of Commons, somewhat in the House of Lords, and what else is in Proposition to be offered to you from the House of Commons; but I shall desire you first, that you may be fully convinced of the great Goodness of God in Discovery of this Plot, and the Truth of these Things that I have spoken to you, that you will hear the Evidence of the Proofs; and then we shall go on to those other Things which we have in Charge.

1643.  
June.

The Proofs being read, Mr. *Pym* proceeded thus:

‘ Gentlemen, we have held you long, you are now almost come to the End of your Trouble; I am to deliver to you some short Observations upon the whole Matter, and then to acquaint you with the Resolutions thereupon, taken in the House of Commons; and to conclude with a few Desires from them to you.

‘ The Observations are these:

*First*, ‘ I am to observe to you the Contrariety betwixt the Pretences, with which this Design hath been masked, and the Truth: One of the Pretences was Peace; the Truth was Blood and Violence: Another of the Pretences was, the Preserving of Property; the Truth was, the Introducing of Tyranny and Slavery, which leaves no Man Master of any Thing he hath.

‘ A *second* Observation is this: The unnatural Way by which they meant to compass this wicked Design, that was, To destroy the Parliament by the Members of Parliament; and then, by the Carcass and Shadow of a Parliament, to destroy the Kingdom: What is a Parliament but a Carcass

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

when the Freedom of it is suppressed? When those shall be taken away by Violence, that can, or will, oppose and stand in the Way of their Intentions? The High Court of Parliament is the most certain and constant Guardian of Liberty; but if it be deprived of its own Liberty, it is left without Life or Power to keep the Liberty of others. If they should bring a Parliament to be subject to the King's Pleasure, to be correspondent, as they call it, to his Will, in the midst of such evil Councils which now are predominant, there would little or no Cure be left; but then all Things that are most mischievous would seem to be done by Law and Authority.

‘The *third* Observation is this: With what an evil Conscience these Men undertook this Work: They that pretended to take Arms to defend their own Property, obtained a Commission to violate the Property of others: They would take the Assertion of the Laws of the Land, but assumed to themselves such a Power as was most contrary to that Law; to seize upon their Persons without due Process; to impose upon their Estates without Consent; to take away some Lives by the Law Martial; and, besides all this, without any Commission, they intended to alter the Government of the City, which is now governed by your own Council, by a Magistrate chosen by yourselves, then to be governed by Violence.

The *fourth* Observation is this: That the mischievous Effect of this Design would not have ceased in the first Night's Work; all the godly Part in the Kingdom, all faithful Ministers especially, would have been left not only to the Scorn and Reproach, but to the Hatred, Malice, and Cruelty of the Papists and Malignants.

‘The *fifth* and last Observation I shall make to you, is this, That this Matter was prosecuted in Part, and agitated and promoted by those that were sent from the King, and seemed to be Messengers of Peace; and while we should be amused with the Pretences of gracious *Messages* to propose Peace, this villainous Project, which should have set you  
all



all in Blood, was promoted by those Messengers, and should have been put in Execution very shortly after. This is all I shall trouble you with by way of Observation.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
June.

‘ The Matters resolved on in the House of Commons are these Things :

‘ *First*, That there may be public Thanksgiving to God, both in the City and throughout the Kingdom, for this great Deliverance; that a near Day be appointed for the City, the Parliament, and the Parts adjacent, and a convenient Day for other Parts of the Kingdom.

‘ The *next* Thing resolved on was, That the House of Peers should be made acquainted with these Proofs, and with all this Discovery; which hath been done accordingly.

‘ It was likewise *resolved*, That there should be a *Covenant* made, whereby we should both testify our Detestation of this mischievous Plot, and join ourselves more closely in the Maintenance of the common Interest of the Church and Commonwealth, in Religion and Liberty, which are still in great Danger, and would have been utterly subverted, if this Project had taken Effect.

‘ It was resolved in the *fourth* Place, which is now partly executed; That this should be communicated to you of the City; that so as you have a great Part in the Blessing, you may do your Part in the Duty of Thankfulness, together with us.

‘ It is further *resolved*, That it shall be communicated to the Army, that they likewise take Notice of this great Mercy of God, and join with us, both in the Thanksgiving and in the Protestation and Covenant, as we shall likewise desire you of the City to do.

‘ Then we are commanded to give Thanks to my Lord Mayor, to the Sheriffs, and to the rest of the Officers of the City, for their great Care in the apprehending of these Persons, in guarding the Peace and Quiet of the City.

‘ We are likewise to give Thanks to those Gentlemen, that have had the Custody of these Prisoners.



An. 19. Car. 1. ners.

1643.

June.

We know it cannot but be a Trouble to them; but there was no Means to keep them safe from Messages one to another, and from Speeches, but by such a Way of putting them in honest Mens Hands; therefore the House of Commons have commanded us to give them special Thanks for their undertaking this Care, and to assure them that they will see them fully recompensed for all the Trouble and Charge they shall undergo by it.

‘ And we are to give you Thanks, which are the Citizens of this City, for your good Affections to the Public Cause, and for your continual Bounty for the Support of it.

‘ Thus far we are enjoin’d by the *Resolution* of the House: Now we are further to entreat you to hear both the *Covenants*; you shall thereby know to what we have bound ourselves, and to what we desire you should be bound. There are two *Covenants*; that is, one proper for the Houses of Parliament, which hath been taken in the House of Commons by all the Members, even by those Gentlemen that are named in the Examinations to have been privy to this Plot, which they all have disavowed; and the other *Covenant* is to be taken by all the other Part of the Kingdom; by the Citizens, by the Army, and the rest of the People generally in all Places.

‘ The Draught of these two *Covenants* we shall communicate to you; the House of Lords they have had them already, and have taken them into Consideration; and we hear they do resolve, That what is appointed for them shall be taken by the Members of that House.

‘ We are further to desire you, That you would co-operate with the Divine Providence, in God’s great Mercy to this City, and the whole Kingdom: God doth not only do Good, but thereby gives Assurance that he will do Good; his Mercies they are Comforts for the present, they are Pledges for the future; but yet our Care must not cease.

‘ We are to desire that you would keep your Guards, and look well to your City; and that you would

would find out these evil Members that are among you, as near as may be; that so, for the Time to come, this Plot may be prevented, as hitherto it hath been stopped; for out of doubt all the Malignity is not drawn out of them, though the Opportunity is hindered for the present putting it in Execution.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
June.

‘ I am to tell you further, That, in Desire to win those that shall be taken with Remorse for this wicked Design and Conspiracy, it is *resolved*, That if any Man shall come in before the 15th Day of this present *June*, and freely confess his Fault, and what he knows of this Conspiracy, that he shall have a full, free, and plenary Pardon for the Time to come, except those that are already taken or fled; I say, those that come in voluntarily shall be pardoned.

‘ Your Care, and our Care, they will be all little enough; we hope God’s Blessing will be so upon them both, that you shall be restored to a full Peace; and that, in the mean Time, you shall enjoy such a Degree of Safety and Prosperity, as may make Way to it.’

To return to the Proceedings at *Westminster*: —

*June 9.* The Lords having considered of the *Vow* and *Covenant*, brought up by the Commons, judged it a voluntary *Oath*, and proper to be given to every Member of their House, in a solemn and serious Manner. Accordingly, every Lord, beginning at the Youngest Baron, and going upwards according to their Degrees, held the Paper in their Hands and read it distinctly as follows:

‘ **W**Hereas there hath been, and now is, in this Kingdom, a Popish and traiterous Plot, for the Subversion of the true Protestant Reformed Religion, and the Liberty of the Subject: And, in pursuance thereof, a Popish Army hath been raised, and is now on Foot in divers Parts of this Kingdom. And whereas there hath been a treacherous and horrid Design lately discovered

The Covenant,  
taken by the  
Lords on that  
Occasion.



# 296 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June,

‘ discovered by the great Blessing and special Pro-  
 ‘ vidence of God, of divers Persons, to join them-  
 ‘ selves with the Armies raised by the King, and  
 ‘ to destroy the Forces raised by the Lords and  
 ‘ Commons in Parliament; to surprize the Cities  
 ‘ of *London* and *Westminster*, with the Suburbs,  
 ‘ and, by Arms, to force the Parliament; and find-  
 ‘ ing, by constant Experience, that many Ways of  
 ‘ Force and Treachery are continually attempted  
 ‘ to bring to utter Ruin and Destruction the Par-  
 ‘ liament and Kingdom, and, that which is dearest,  
 ‘ the true Protestant Religion; and that, for the  
 ‘ preventing and withstanding the same, it is fit  
 ‘ that all, who are true-hearted and Lovers of their  
 ‘ Country, should bind themselves each to other  
 ‘ in a sacred *Vow* and *Covenant*:

*I A B, in Humility and Reverence of the Di-  
 vine Majesty, declare my hearty Sorrow for my own  
 Sins, and the Sins of this Nation, which have de-  
 served the Calamities and Judgments that now lie  
 upon it: And my true Intention is, by God's Grace,  
 to endeavour the Amendment of my own Ways. And  
 I do further, in the Presence of Almighty God, de-  
 clare, vow, and covenant, That, in order to the Se-  
 curity and Preservation of the true Reformed Pro-  
 testant Religion, and Liberty of the Subject, I will  
 not consent to the laying down of Arms, so long as  
 the Papists, now in open War against the Parlia-  
 ment, shall, by Force of Arms, be protected from the  
 Justice thereof: And that I do abhor and detest  
 the said wicked and treacherous Design lately dis-  
 covered; and that I never gave nor will give my As-  
 sent to the Execution thereof; but will, according to  
 my Power and Vocation, oppose and resist the same,  
 and all others of the like Nature: And in case any  
 other like Design shall hereafter come to my Know-  
 ledge, I will make such timely Discovery as I shall  
 conceive may best conduce to the preventing thereof.  
 And whereas I do in my Conscience believe, That the  
 Forces raised by the two Houses of Parliament, are  
 raised and continued for their just Defence, and for  
 the*



*the Defence of the true Protestant Religion and Liberty of the Subject, against the Forces raised by the King; that I will, according to my Power and Vocation, assist the Forces raised and continued by both Houses of Parliament, against the Forces raised by the King without their Consent: And will likewise assist all other Persons that shall take this Oath, in what they shall do in pursuance thereof; and will not, directly or indirectly, adhere unto, nor willingly assist, the Forces raised by the King, without the Consent of both Houses of Parliament. And this Vow and Covenant I make in the Presence of Almighty God, the Searcher of all Hearts, with a true Intention to perform the same, as I shall answer at the Great Day, when the Secrets of all Hearts shall be disclosed.*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

At the same Time, however, it was moved and agreed to by the Lords, That a short *Declaration* might be drawn up, and taken by them, the House of Commons, and the whole Kingdom, declaring their Loyalty to the King's Person, his Crown and Dignity; and a Committee of eleven Lords were ordered to draw it up and report it to the House.

*June 11.* The Earl of *Portland* and the Lord Viscount *Conway* being accused, by the House of Commons, of being concerned in Mr. *Waller's* Plot, they were sequestred from the Lords House and committed; the one to the Custody of the Lord Mayor of *London*, and the other to one of the Sheriffs; but their Lands and Goods not to be seized on, till, upon Trial, it appeared they were guilty of the Charge against them.

The Liberty of the Press having, of late, been very grievous to the Parliament, they passed an *Ordinance* to restrain it, and to strengthen some former *Orders* made for that Purpose. This extraordinary Stretch into *English* Liberty, by those who pretended to be the Preservers of it, deserves our Notice.

The

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

June.

An Ordinance  
for restraining  
the Liberty of  
the Press.

The Preamble to this *Ordinance* sets forth

‘ **T**HAT whereas divers good *Orders* have  
‘ been lately made, by both Houses of Par-  
‘ liament, for suppressing the great Abuses and fre-  
‘ quent Disorders in printing many false, forged,  
‘ scandalous, seditious, libellous, and unlicenced  
‘ Papers, Pamphlets, and Books to the great De-  
‘ famation of Religion and Government; which  
‘ have taken little or no Effect, by reason the Bill  
‘ in Preparation, for Redress of the said Disorders,  
‘ hath hitherto been retarded: And that through  
‘ the present Distractions, very many Persons,  
‘ as well Stationers and Printers, as others of sun-  
‘ dry other Professions, have taken upon them to  
‘ set up private Printing Presses in Corners; and to  
‘ print, vend, publish, and disperse Books, Pam-  
‘ phlets and Papers, in such Multitudes, that no  
‘ Industry could be sufficient to discover or bring to  
‘ Punishment all the several abounding Delin-  
‘ quents: Therefore, &c.

The most material Clauses are these;

‘ That no *Order* or *Declaration* of either House  
‘ of Parliament shall be printed without Order  
‘ of one or both the said Houses; nor any other  
‘ Book, Pamphlet, Paper, nor Part of any such  
‘ Book, Pamphlet, or Paper, shall from hence-  
‘ forth be printed, bound, stitched, or put out to  
‘ Sale, by any Person or Persons whatsoever, unless  
‘ the same be first approved and licenced under the  
‘ Hands of such Persons as both, or either, of the  
‘ said Houses shall appoint for licencing of the  
‘ same; and be entered in the Register Book of the  
‘ Company of Stationers, according to antient  
‘ Custom, and the Printer thereof to put his Name  
‘ thereto.

‘ The Master and Wardens of the said Company,  
‘ the Gentleman-Usher of the House of Peers, the  
‘ Serjeant of the Commons House, and their Depu-  
‘ ties, together with the Persons formerly appoint-  
‘ ed by the Committee of the House of Commons  
‘ for Examinations, are authorized and required  
‘ to



‘ to make diligent Search in all Places, where they  
 ‘ shall think meet, for all unlicenced Printing Pre-  
 ‘ ses, and all Presses any way employed in the  
 ‘ Printing of scandalous or unlicenced Papers,  
 ‘ Pamphlets or Books; and to seize and carry a-  
 ‘ way such Printing Presses, Letters and other Ma-  
 ‘ terials, of every such irregular Printer, which  
 ‘ they find so misemployed, unto the Common-  
 ‘ Hall of the said Company, there to be defaced  
 ‘ and made unserviceable, according to antient  
 ‘ Custom; and likewise to make diligent Search  
 ‘ in all suspected Printing Houses, Ware-Houses,  
 ‘ Shops and other Places, for such scandalous and  
 ‘ unlicenced Books, Papers, Pamphlets, and all  
 ‘ other Books, not entered, nor signed with the  
 ‘ Printer’s Name as aforesaid, being printed, con-  
 ‘ trary to this *Order*; and the same to seize and  
 ‘ carry away to the said Common-Hall, there to  
 ‘ remain till both or either House of Parliament  
 ‘ shall dispose thereof; and likewise to apprehend  
 ‘ all Authors, Printers, and other Persons whatso-  
 ‘ ever employed in compiling, printing, stitching,  
 ‘ binding, publishing and dispersing of the said  
 ‘ scandalous, unlicenced, and unwarrantable Papers,  
 ‘ Books, and Pamphlets as aforesaid; and all  
 ‘ those who shall resist the said Parties in searching  
 ‘ after them, and bringing them before either of  
 ‘ the Houses or the Committee of Examinations,  
 ‘ that so they may receive such further Punishments  
 ‘ as their Offences shall merit; and not to be re-  
 ‘ leased untill they have given Satisfaction to the  
 ‘ Parties employed in their Apprehension for their  
 ‘ Pains and Charges, and sufficient Caution not to  
 ‘ offend in like Sort for the future.

‘ All Justices of the Peace, Captains, Constables  
 ‘ and other Officers, are ordered and required to  
 ‘ be aiding and assisting to the aforesaid Persons in  
 ‘ the due Execution of all and singular the Pre-  
 ‘ mises, and in the Apprehension of all Offenders  
 ‘ against the same; and, in case of Opposition, to  
 ‘ break open Doors and Locks, &c.

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 June.

June



An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

June.

*June 14.* The Affair of the Great Seal came on again in the House of Lords, when the Earl of *Holland*, from the Committee appointed to prepare Heads for a Conference on this Affair, reported, That the Sense of the Committee was, That the *Votes* of this House should be first read, and then to add, That the Parliament having, in all their Actions and Resolutions, gone upon the Power of their *Ordinances*, the Lords conceive it will be proper to continue upon that Ground. That the making of a new Great Seal will not hinder the Use and Power of the King's Great Seal; but, if they found the Sealing of Original *Writs of Error* be denied, they would join with the Commons in their Care to do what will be necessary and advantageous to the Parliament, the free Course of Justice, and the Laws of the Kingdom.

*June 16.* The Earl of *Northumberland* reported from the Committee a Draught of what they thought proper to be taken, to declare the Loyalty of the Lords to the King's Person, his Crown and Dignity; which was read:

A Declaration  
made by the  
Lords, of their  
Loyalty to the  
King's Person.

*We the Lords and Commons do further declare, That our Intentions have been, and still are, to our Power, to maintain, preserve, and defend his Majesty's Person and just Rights of the Crown; together with the Persons of his Royal Issue; and that we shall use our utmost Endeavours in pursuance of the same.*

*Ordered,* To communicate this to the House of Commons the next Morning, at a Conference: And, at the same Time, to offer somewhat to them for composing the present Distractions and settling Peace between the King and Parliament.

*June 17.* A Committee of Lords were appointed to consider of this last Article; and, after some Time, the Lord *Say* and *Sele* brought in a Draught  
of

of what they had to offer for that Purpose ; which An. 19. Car. I.  
was as follows : 1643.

*May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,*

June.

WE your loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, having a deep Sense of the present Miseries of this your Kingdom, and of the Christian Blood, the Blood of your Subjects, that hath been spilt in this unnatural War : To prevent the Desolation and Ruin of this Kingdom, the Destruction of your People, and the Danger of your own Royal Person and Children, do again, in all Humility, petition your Majesty, that you will be pleased, before the Armies be engaged in Battle, they being now drawn near together, to accept of our humble *Answer to your Majesty's first Proposition*, and agree unto the *first Proposition* presented unto you by the Hands of our Commissioners, for the Disbanding of all Armies ; whereby your Kingdom will be restored to the former happy Condition of Peace, and the sad Accidents and Consequences of a Civil War be prevented ; and that, as the most likely Means to compose and settle these unhappy Differences between you and your People, you will please to return to your Parliament, your great and most faithful Council, whose Advice your Majesty will find more conducing to your Greatness, Honour, and Safety, than the Counsel of some few about you ; whose Counsels if they may prevail, we find all our Petitions and Endeavours for the Peace of this Kingdom, to be fruitless.

If God shall make us so happy as to incline your Majesty's Heart to this our humble Petition, which your Parliament and Kingdom may expect from your Justice and Goodness ; our Endeavours and Counsels shall all be directed to settle the true Protestant Religion, your Majesty's just Rights, the Preservation and Safety of your Royal Person and Children, and the Laws  
of

And a Draught  
of a Petition to  
the King for  
Peace.



An. 19. Car. I. 1643. 'of the Kingdom, the Liberties of the Subject,  
'and the Privileges of Parliament.'

June.

*Ordered*, That this *Petition* be communicated to the House of Commons at a Conference; and to be delivered to the King in the same Manner as one was at *Shrewsbury*.

The Reasons of-  
ferred to the  
Commons for  
their Concur-  
rence therein.

June 21. Nothing else, memorable, interven-  
ing, the Committee for managing this Conference,  
reported what they thought fit to be offered at it,  
to the Commons, along with the *Petition*; which  
was as follows:

'The Lords looking, with much Compassion,  
upon the divided and distracted Condition of this  
Kingdom; and that, in all Probability, the Con-  
tinuance of the War in *Christendom* will only re-  
main amongst ourselves, in these our sad and ci-  
vil Divisions: They have been moved, from the  
Tenderness they owe to the Preservation of this  
Kingdom, to make a further Trial of his Maje-  
sty's Inclinations to the Peace of it, and consequent-  
ly to the Peace of his other Kingdoms; which,  
in all human Reason, doth depend upon the Peace  
and Safety of this; and likewise to shew to his  
Majesty and all the World, that we are still, upon  
our first Grounds and Principles, to petition him  
for Peace; thereby to make it visible to his Ma-  
jesty and the whole Kingdom, that we still pur-  
sue the Ways of Peace; which will either pro-  
cure us that Happiness, or make the Miseries that  
we and the Kingdom must expect, by a Battle be-  
tween these near approached Armies, the more  
supportable by the Unavoidableness of it; and this  
we desire may no way weaken, or contradict, the  
*Covenant* and *Vow* we have united ourselves in,  
but rather pursue the same; in that we do desire  
the Force, whereby Papists are protected against  
the Justice of Parliament, may be laid down be-  
fore we lay down our Arms; neither is it intend-  
ed to draw on any *Treaty*, but alone to receive the  
King's present and positive *Answer*.'

June



June 22. The Lords sent down to acquaint the other House, That they had added two more of their Body to the Committee of *Sequestration*, and had given them Power to compound and regulate that *Ordinance*, by making some Allowance to Widows and Children for their Maintenance; desiring the Commons to add a proportionable Number of their House, and, also, to give the like Power to them. But this merciful Disposition of the Lords was not complied with, at this Time, by the Lower House.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
June.

A Committee of Commons had been busy some Time, in framing Articles of Impeachment against the Queen, in order to support the Charge they had exhibited to the Lords. And, this Day, they had proceeded so far as to appoint Mr. *Stroud* to go up, and desire a Conference with them concerning these Articles. Whether this *Message* was sent or not, we cannot learn, for there is no Entry, in the *Lords Journals*, relating to it.

June 24. The Assembly of Divines being now ready to sit to do Business, the Lords thought proper to order, That all Ministers employed in the next publick Monthly Fast, should, in their Prayers, particularly and earnestly desire the Assistance and Blessing of Almighty God upon that Assembly, for carrying on the great Work. : And that the said Assembly should meet in *Henry* the Seventh's Chapel, on the 30th Instant, at Nine in the Morning. Agreed to by the Commons.

June 26. This Day the Lord *Say* and *Sele* acquainted the Lords, That he had received a *Letter* from the King, in which was inclosed a *Proclamation* from his Majesty, which was read :

‘ **W** Hereas we have been long since driven by The King's Proclamation forbidding Obedience to the Parliament, and for calling the Members to him at  
 ‘ Force and Violence from our Palace at *Westminster*, (the Place of Sitting for us and our two Houses of this Parliament) so that we could not, with Safety of our Life, be present with our  
 ‘ Great Oxford.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643

June.

Great Council; and much the greater Part of the Members of both Houses of Parliament have been likewise driven by Tumults and Force, for their Safety, from their Attendance upon that Council, the said Members having been threatned and assaulted for delivering their Opinions freely in the Houses; or have, out of Conscience and Duty, withdrawn themselves from being present at the Debates and Resolutions, which they have well known to be so contrary to their Duty and Allegiance; or for so withdrawing, or for freely speaking in the Houses, have been expelled or suspended from being Members of that Council, contrary to the antient Practice and just Privileges of Parliament. Since which Time, and by which Means, a great and rebellious Army hath been raised against us, under the Command of *Robert Earl of Essex*; which Army hath not only endeavoured to take away our Life from us in a set Battle, but the same, and other Forces raised by the like Means, have committed all the Acts of Outrage, Robbery, and Murder, upon our good Subjects throughout the Kingdom, and still continue to do the same.

And though, in Truth, a very small Part of that Great Council remain there together; yet, under Pretence of having the Countenance of our two Houses of Parliament, some seditious Persons assume to themselves (with the Assistance of those rebellious Armies, and of divers mutinous and desperate *Brownists*, *Anabaptists*, and other ill-affected Persons in our City of *London*, by whose Means they awe such Members of both Houses who yet continue amongst them) a Power to do Things absolutely contrary to the Laws of the Land, and destructive to our Rights, and to the Liberty and Property of the Subject, and to alter the whole Frame and Government of this Kingdom; disposing of the Lives and Fortunes of us and our good Subjects, according to their Discretion; subjecting both to their own unlimited Arbitrary Power and Government.

We



‘ We have only accused some particular Persons, An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
‘ whom we well know to be the Authors and Con-  
‘ trivers of these desperate Counsels and Actions;  
‘ and have forborne to censure, or charge, the  
‘ whole Number of the Members remaining, by  
‘ whose Orders and Authority the Evils have been  
‘ pretended to be done; hoping that the Sense of  
‘ the miserable Divisions of the Kingdom would,  
‘ at length, have brought them to discern where  
‘ they had erred; and our often *Messages* and Com-  
‘ plaints of the Violence offered to us, and to the  
‘ Members of both Houses, would have procured  
‘ Justice and Redress: And that the Power and  
‘ Reputation of such amongst them, who wished  
‘ well to the Peace of the Kingdom, and Honour  
‘ and Dignity of Parliaments, would have at last  
‘ so far prevailed, that a right Understanding might  
‘ have been begotten betwixt us and our People;  
‘ and all Shew of Force and Violence so taken a-  
‘ way and suppressed, that we might, in a full and  
‘ peaceable Convention of Parliament, with the  
‘ Advice of that our Great Council, have so settled  
‘ the present Distempers, that there might be no  
‘ Fear left of the like for the future.

‘ But finding, to our great Grief, that the Power  
‘ of those seditious Persons, who first contrived  
‘ these desperate and bloody Divisions, conti-  
‘ nues so great; that as they have driven, and now  
‘ keep us, and the much greater Part of both Hou-  
‘ ses, from being present at that Council; so they  
‘ so far awe those who remain there, that they  
‘ cannot, with Freedom, give their Votes and Re-  
‘ solutions according to their Consciences, and the  
‘ Laws and Constitutions of the Kingdom: That  
‘ the Members of both Houses have been compel-  
‘ led to make *Protestations* to live and die with the  
‘ Earl of *Essex*, the General of the rebellious Ar-  
‘ my, and other unlawful and treasonable *Protes-*  
‘ *tations*; and that such who have refused to take  
‘ the said *Protestations*, have been expelled and  
‘ imprisoned for such their Refusal: That the great  
‘ Affairs of the Kingdom are managed and con-



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June,

' cluded by a private Committee, without being  
 ' ever reported to the Houses, contrary to the  
 ' Laws and Rules of Parliament: That the Com-  
 ' mon Council of *London*, most of them being Per-  
 ' sons factiously chosen out of *Brownists*, *Anabap-*  
 ' *tists*, and such who oppose the regular wholesome  
 ' Government of that City, and have promised  
 ' themselves the Destruction of the Church, are  
 ' grown the Superintendents over both Houses, and  
 ' obtrude upon them what Conclusions and Reso-  
 ' lutions they please: That they take upon them-  
 ' selves to justify this Rebellion against us, and have pre-  
 ' sumed, under Pretence of the *Order* of both  
 ' Houses, to invite foreign Forces to invade this  
 ' Kingdom: To send Agents to foreign Princes,  
 ' to negotiate and treat with them in their own  
 ' Names: To imprison our good Subjects contrary  
 ' to Law, prohibiting our Judges to grant *Habeas*  
 ' *Corpus* according to Law: To introduce a new  
 ' Clergy throughout the Kingdom, by displacing  
 ' godly learned Divines, without the least Colour  
 ' of Law or judicial Proceedings, and putting ig-  
 ' norant and seditious Preachers in their Places,  
 ' to poison the Hearts of the People: To counte-  
 ' nance the Vilifying of the Book of the Common-  
 ' Prayer, established by the Law of the Land: To  
 ' seize, levy, and take away what they please of  
 ' the Estates and Fortunes of our Subjects, by dis-  
 ' posing of the twentieth Part of their Estates, by  
 ' exhausting them with unupportable Weekly  
 ' Taxes for the Maintenance of their rebellious  
 ' Army, and by endeavouring to lay odious Ex-  
 ' cises upon Victuals, Goods, and Merchandize of  
 ' our People for the same Purpose; while they suf-  
 ' fer our poor Protestant Subjects of our Kingdom  
 ' of *Ireland*, whose Defence was undertaken by  
 ' our two Houses, and that Army raised for the  
 ' Suppressing of that horrid Rebellion to be star-  
 ' ved and in Danger of disbanding, or necessitated  
 ' to desert that Kingdom for Want of Money, Vic-  
 ' tuals, and such other Necessaries as were to be  
 ' provided for them by Act of Parliament, out of  
 ' those

those Monies which they have spent to destroy us and this Kingdom: By exacting from Merchants Tunnage and Poundage, and other Impositions upon Merchandizes, as well Native as Foreign, contrary to an Act made this present Parliament, with a Penalty of *Premunire* on those who shall pay or receive it: And, lastly, That they have (after the breaking off the late Treaty, by a peremptory recalling their Committee, who, in Truth, during their Abode with us, had no Power to treat by reason of their strict Limitation) so far rejected all possible Means and Overtures of Treaty and Accommodation, that, instead of answering our gracious Messages, the House of Commons hath imprisoned our Messenger sent by us to them, to invite both Houses to an Accommodation; and especially to move them to take such a Course for the Freedom of Parliament, that we might safely advise with that our Great Council for the settling those miserable Distractions and Distempers: And hath maliciously, and in Contempt of us, (after an Attempt to murder our Royal Consort in *Bridlington Road*, the Place of her Landing) impeached her of High Treason, for assisting us with Arms and Ammunition to defend us from this Rebellion: 'Tis Time now to let our good Subjects know, that they may no longer look upon the Votes and Actions of the Persons now remaining, as upon our two Houses of Parliament; Freedom and Liberty to be present, and of Opinion and Debate there, being essential to a Parliament; which Freedom and Liberty all Men must confess to be taken away from this Assembly, when they remember the great Tumults brought down to awe and terrify both Houses; and that they were then brought down when any great Debate was in either House, and not like to be so carried as some seditious Persons, who governed those Tumults, did desire; that, in the greatest Heat and Fury of those Tumults, the principal Go-

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

vernors amongst them directed the unruly People  
 to go to *Whitehall*, where our own Person then  
 was; and designed, by Force, to have surprized the  
 Person of our Son the Prince; that, when it was  
 desired that a *Declaration* might be made against  
 such Tumults, instead of consenting thereunto,  
 the Tumults themselves were justified; and  
 when a legal Course was prescribed by the Lords,  
 and taken by the proper Ministers of Justice, to  
 suppress and prevent such Tumults and Riots,  
 that legal Course was superseded by those who  
 were then present of the House of Commons,  
 and the Ministers of Justice punished and im-  
 prisoned for executing the Law. When they  
 remember that several Members of either House  
 have been threatened and assaulted in those Tu-  
 mults, and their own Names proscribed as Per-  
 sons disaffected, because they freely used to speak  
 their Consciences in both Houses: That the  
 House of Peers have been so far threatened and  
 menaced, that the Names of those have been,  
 with Threats, demanded by the House of Com-  
 mons at the Bar of the Lords House, who re-  
 fused to consent to this or that Proposition which  
 had been in Debate before them; and tumultu-  
 ous Petitions countenanced, which have been  
 presented to that same Purpose: That the Mem-  
 bers of both Houses have been imprisoned, and  
 forbid to be present at those Councils, for no  
 Reasons but because their Opinion hath not been  
 liked: That our Negative Voice (our greatest  
 and most Sovereign Privilege) is boldly denied:  
 That a presumptuous Attempt hath been made  
 by the major Part of the remaining Part of the  
 House of Commons to make our Great Seal of  
*England*; the making of which, by the express  
 Letter of the Law, is High Treason, and would  
 subvert the antient and fundamental Admini-  
 stration of Justice: That, at this Time, we  
 and the major Part of both Houses are kept, by  
 a strong and rebellious Army, from being present  
 at



‘ at that Council ; and that those who are present  
 ‘ are, by the same Army, awed and forced to  
 ‘ take unlawful and treasonable *Protestations* to en-  
 ‘ gage their Votes : And that such Resolutions  
 ‘ and Directions, which concern the Property and  
 ‘ Liberty of the Subjects, are transacted and con-  
 ‘ cluded by a few Persons, (under the Name of  
 ‘ a Close Committee, consisting of the Earl of  
 ‘ *Manchester*, the Lord *Say*, Mr. *Pym*, Mr.  
 ‘ *Hampden*, Mr. *Stroud*, Mr. *Martin* and others,  
 ‘ the whole Number not exceeding the Number  
 ‘ of seventeen Persons) without reporting the same  
 ‘ to the Houses, or having the same confirmed by  
 ‘ the Houses, contrary to the express Law and  
 ‘ Customs of Parliament :

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 June.

‘ All these, for the Matter of Fact, we are  
 ‘ ready to make Proof of, and desire nothing but  
 ‘ to bring the Contrivers of all the aforesaid Mis-  
 ‘ chiefs to their Trial by Law ; and, till that be  
 ‘ submitted to, we must pursue them by Arms or  
 ‘ any other Way, in which our good Subjects  
 ‘ ought to give us Assistance to that Purpose :  
 ‘ The imagining the Death of Us, our Royal  
 ‘ Consort, or our eldest Son ; the levying War  
 ‘ against us in our Realm, giving to them Aid or  
 ‘ Comfort ; the Counterfeiting our Great Seal or  
 ‘ Money, being by the express Words of the  
 ‘ Statute of the 25th Year of *Edward III. Cap. 2.*  
 ‘ High Treason : And how applicable this is to  
 ‘ those who have borne Arms against us, and to  
 ‘ those who have consented that such Arms be  
 ‘ borne ; to those who have promised to live and  
 ‘ die with the Earl of *Essex*, and to those who  
 ‘ every Day consent to some Act for the Support  
 ‘ and Increase of that Army, we shall leave to all  
 ‘ the World to judge ; and hope that this gra-  
 ‘ cious Warning and Information, now given by  
 ‘ us, will make that Impression in the Hearts of  
 ‘ our People, that they will no longer suffer  
 ‘ themselves to be misled from their Duty and  
 ‘ Allegiance upon any Pretences whatsoever ; and  
 ‘ we do declare, That we shall proceed with all

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

Junc.

‘ Severity against all Persons whatsoever, who  
 ‘ shall henceforward, assist, vote, or concur in  
 ‘ any Kind toward the Maintenance and Coun-  
 ‘ tenancing such Actions and Resolutions, which,  
 ‘ by the known and exprefs Laws of the Land,  
 ‘ are High Treason; and against all those who  
 ‘ shall adhere to them, who are in Rebellion a-  
 ‘ gainst us, as against Rebels and Traitors, in such  
 ‘ Manner as by the Laws and Statutes of the  
 ‘ Realm is directed and appointed.

‘ And since by the Power of seditious Persons,  
 ‘ we and both Houses are kept from being secured  
 ‘ against tumultuous Assemblies, and both Houses  
 ‘ from Adjournment to some Place of Safety;  
 ‘ which, being done, might quickly make an  
 ‘ End of these miserable Distractions, whereby  
 ‘ we are debarred from the Benefit and Advice  
 ‘ we expected from that our Great Council, the  
 ‘ Members thereof being scattered into several  
 ‘ Places: Therefore, that the whole Kingdom  
 ‘ may see that we are willing to receive Advice  
 ‘ from those who are trusted by them, though  
 ‘ we cannot receive the same in the Place to  
 ‘ which they were called, for the Reasons afore-  
 ‘ said, nor intend to receive Advice from them  
 ‘ elsewhere in the Capacity of Houses of Parlia-  
 ‘ ment: We do hereby declare, That such of  
 ‘ the Members of both Houses, as well those  
 ‘ who have been by the Faction of the Malig-  
 ‘ nant Party expelled for performing their Duties  
 ‘ to us, and into whose Rooms no Persons have  
 ‘ been since chosen by their Countries, as the rest  
 ‘ who shall desire our Protection, shall be wel-  
 ‘ come to us at our City of *Oxford*; untill, by  
 ‘ the Adjournment of the Houses to some fit and  
 ‘ free Place, or otherwise, due Course be taken  
 ‘ for the full and free Convention in Parliament of  
 ‘ us and all the Members of both Houses: And  
 ‘ for their better Encouragement to resort to us,  
 ‘ we hereby will and command all the Officers  
 ‘ and Soldiers of our Army to suffer all such Per-  
 ‘ sons who are Members of either House, with  
 ‘ their



‘ their Attendants and Servants, to come to us to An. 19. Car. I.  
‘ this our City of *Oxford*. 1643.

‘ And that none of our good Subjects may be-  
‘ lieve that, by this our necessary *Declaration* a-  
‘ gainst the Freedom and Liberty of that present  
‘ Assembly, we may have the least Intention to  
‘ violate or to avoid any Act or Acts passed by us  
‘ for the Good and Benefit of our People this Par-  
‘ liament; we do hereby declare to all the World,  
‘ That we shall, as we have often promised, as in-  
‘ violably observe all those Acts, as if no such un-  
‘ happy Interruption had happened in the Freedom  
‘ and Liberty of that Council: And desire nothing  
‘ more than to have such a free Convention in Par-  
‘ liament, that we may add such further Acts of  
‘ Grace as shall be thought necessary for the Ad-  
‘ vancement of the true Protestant Religion, for  
‘ the Maintenance of the Liberty and Property of  
‘ the Subjects, and the Preservation of the Liberty,  
‘ Freedom, and Privileges of Parliament.

‘ And that all the World may see how willing  
‘ and desirous we are to forget all the Injuries and  
‘ Indignities offered to us by such who have been  
‘ misled through Weakness or Fear, or who have  
‘ not been the principal Contrivers of the present  
‘ Miseries; we do offer a free and general Pardon  
‘ to all the Members of either House (except Ro-  
‘ bert Earl of *Effex*, Robert Earl of *Warwick*,  
‘ Edward Earl of *Manchester*, Henry Earl of *Stam-*  
‘ *ford*, William Viscount *Say* and *Sele*, Sir John  
‘ *Hotham*, Knt. and Bart. Sir Arthur *Haslerig*, Bart.  
‘ Sir Henry *Ludlow*, Sir Edward *Hungerford*, and  
‘ Sir Francis *Popham*, Knights; Nathaniel *Fiennes*,  
‘ John *Hampden*, John *Pym*, William *Stroud*, Henry  
‘ *Martyn*, and Alexander *Popham*, Esquires; Isaac  
‘ *Pennington* Alderman of *London*, and Capt. *Ven*;  
‘ who, being the principal Authors of these present  
‘ Calamities, have sacrificed the Peace and Prospe-  
‘ rity of their Country to their own Pride, Malice,  
‘ and Ambition; and against whom we shall pro-  
‘ ceed as against Persons guilty of High Treason  
‘ by

1643.

June.



### 312 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

June.

‘ by the known Laws of the Land; and shall, in  
‘ the Proceeding, be most careful to preserve to  
‘ them all Privileges in the fullest Manner that, by  
‘ the Law or the Usage of former Times, is due  
‘ to them) if they shall, within ten Days after the  
‘ publishing of this our *Proclamation*, return to  
‘ their Duty and Allegiance to us.

‘ And, lastly, we further command and enjoin  
‘ all our Subjects, upon their Allegiance to us, as  
‘ they will answer the contrary to Almighty God,  
‘ and as they desire that they and their Posterity  
‘ should be freed from the foul Taint of High  
‘ Treason, and as they tender the Peace of this  
‘ Kingdom, That they presume not to give any  
‘ Assistance to the before-mentioned rebellious Ar-  
‘ mies, in their Persons or Estates in any Sort  
‘ whatsoever; but join with us, according to their  
‘ Duty and the Laws of the Land, to suppress this  
‘ horrid Rebellion.

‘ And our Pleasure and Command is, That this  
‘ our *Proclamation* be read in all Churches and  
‘ Chapels within this our Kingdom.’

*Given at our Court at Oxford the 20th Day of  
June, in the nineteenth Year of our Reign.*

Resolutions of  
the Lords on the  
foregoing Pro-  
clamation.

After reading this *Proclamation* the Lords agreed, That it declared this Parliament to be no true Parliament; and that the King would not receive whatsoever came to him from them; thereupon they *resolved* to communicate this to the Commons, at a Conference, and appointed a Committee of four Lords to consider of the Sense of this House, to be delivered on this Occasion; as, also, to draw up a proper *Answer* to the *Proclamation*. Soon after the Lord Say and Sele, from this Committee, brought in the following:

‘ The Lords do apprehend that the foregoing *Proclamation*, whereby this Parliament is declared to be no free Parliament, and the People are required not to look upon the Votes or Actions of  
the

the Persons now remaining as upon the two Houses of Parliament, is destructive as to the present Parliament and all Acts therein, so also to the established Government of this Kingdom; which *Declaration* being maintained and pursued by Force, the Lords do conceive themselves bound to defend this present Parliament, and to maintain the Freedom thereof, with their Lives and Fortunes, and are resolved so to do. They think it fit, also, that a *Declaration* be made to that Purpose to all the Kingdom, and to invite therein all *Englishmen*, both of the Nobility, Gentry, and Commons, to join with them; assuring such as shall do so that they shall be embraced and received into the Protection of the Parliament, and acknowledged as those who have done a good Service to the State; except it be such Persons who shall appear to be the Contrivers of these destructive Counsels, those to be named and excepted in the *Declaration*; and to this End to desire, that a Committee of both Houses may be named to meet to draw up the *Declaration*, their Lordships being resolved to name four Lords for that Purpose.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
June.

The Parliament had dispatched a Messenger into *Scotland*, some Time since, to bring over the *Scots* to their Interest; and, this Day, (*June 27*) they thought proper to send another on the same Business, who was to acquaint them with their present State and Condition; and that, after being long entertained with *Treaties* and *Propositions* for *Peace*, they were frustrated by the prevailing Party of Papists and other ill-affected Persons about the King: That they commended this great Cause to the Christian Wisdom and brotherly Affection of the *Scots* Nation and State, to consider how, by their concurrent Advice and Assistance, the Faction of Papists, Bishops, and other Malignants of this Kingdom, might be suppress'd; the Ruin of Religion and Liberty here prevented, and thereby their own better preserved and established. With these,  
and



An. 19. Car. I. and many more Instructions, Mr. Corbet set out,  
 1643.  
 June.

This Day, also, the Effect of a Conference, on the King's last *Proclamation*, was reported to the Lords by their Speaker, which was,

Proposals from  
 the Commons at  
 a Conference  
 thereupon.

‘ That the House of Commons had considered their Lordships Sense, delivered at the late Conference, touching the King's *Proclamation*, wherein they agree with their Lordships in every Particular; and as they apprehend their Lordships Intentions to be real in what they have resolved, so the House of Commons desire that their Lordships would make good their real Intentions, by real Demonstrations; that it may appear so to the Kingdom.

‘ And, to the end that their Lordships may better carry on their *Resolutions*, and have the fitter Means of Support for the same, the House of Commons have thought proper to offer some Particulars to their Lordships Consideration :

1. ‘ That their Lordships would please to join with the House of Commons in the Propositions for the making a new Great Seal, to prevent the Abuses of it; such as was the sealing the Commission for the horrid Design against the Parliament and the City of *London*; and also because, by the making a new Great Seal, Justice shall be the better administred to the Kingdom, and the People will be the more dependant upon the Parliament : Whereas now they are forced to go to *Oxford* for the Dispatch of their Affairs, which otherwise they would not; and also their Lordships will be the more enabled to do that, for the Maintenance of the Parliament, and the Freedom and Liberty thereof, which otherwise they cannot.

2. ‘ The House of Commons desire their Lordships to give Order, that *Proclamation* may issue out to summon the Queen to answer the Impeachment, according to the Articles; and the House of Commons make this Observation, That though  
 the



the King's Councils have flown very high in the Contempt of this Parliament, yet they never presumed to declare it to be None, till the Queen was impeached; therefore, the House of Commons think it fit to proceed against her, to shew their Love to Justice, and to let them see that the Parliament shrinks not from their Duty, notwithstanding this *Proclamation*; and also because the World may see what Reason they have to charge the Queen; and those that have Dependence upon the Queen's Ways, Designs, and Counsels, may be weaken'd and deterr'd from their Dependence on her, and acting her Commands.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
June.

3. 'To take off the Impression that this *Proclamation* may make in foreign Parts, the House of Commons desire their Lordships to send the Commissioners into *Scotland* speedily, and to resolve to send Agents abroad to other States, whereby the Imputations will be taken away which are laid upon the Parliament by the King's Ministers; also that the Aid expected by the King from foreign Parts may be prevented, and Trade secur'd, which they have endeavour'd to molest.

4. 'To desire their Lordships will take into Consideration the two *Ordinances* sent up to them by the House of Commons.

'The first concerning Intelligence held with *Oxford* and the King's Army; the other concerning the listing of Horses.

1. 'That the Freedom of Intercourse hath been a Means to supply the King both with Money and Arms.

2. 'That it gives Opportunity to make great Factions in the City, to corrupt the Well-affected to the Parliament, and to effect many dangerous Practices and Conspiracies, to the Hazard of the whole Kingdom.

3. 'It acquaints the Enemy with all our Designs, Preparations, and Convoys.

4. 'It is contrary to all Rules and Grounds of War.

'Con-

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

June,

316 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

‘ Concerning Lifting of Horses ; it will be a Means to furnish the Parliament with a Body of Horse upon all Occasions, to preserve the City and reinforce the Army.

5. ‘ The House of Commons conceive that the King, by his *Proclamation*, as far as in him lies, hath disabled the Parliament to offer any *Petition* and present any humble Advice to him, in Quality of both Houses of Parliament, and that he will not receive any such in that Capacity ; which Consideration the House of Commons presents to their Lordships, as an *Answer* for not joining with their Lordships in that *Petition*, which their Lordships proposed to them to be delivered to the King for *Peace*, which yet depends unpassed.

6. ‘ The House of Commons desire their Lordships to join with them in an *Oath* to be drawn, to be taken by all Commanders and Officers in the Army and Fleet, and by Keepers of Forts and Castles, and by other public Officers in the Army ; whereby they shall be bound to maintain and defend the two Houses of Lords and Commons, in this present Parliament, and faithfully to discharge the Trust committed to them by both Houses of Parliament, against all Authority whatsoever.’

The Lords taking the Report of this Conference into Consideration, *ordered* That a Committee of their House should meet with the Committee of the House of Commons on *Thursday* next in the Afternoon, in the Prince’s Lodgings, to draw up a *Declaration* upon the King’s *Proclamation*, Touching the Lifting of Horses ; the Lords thought fit that the Thing should be done, but not in the Way as the *Ordinance* was then drawn ; therefore appointed another Committee to meet this Afternoon, to consider of the drawing up another *Ordinance* for that Purpose. And touching the *Ordinance* to prevent Intelligence, and sending of Letters to the King’s Army ; the Lords resolved to abide by their former *Resolution* of rejecting it ;  
and



and appointed a Committee to draw up some Reasons to be offered to the House of Commons for the same.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
June.

June 29. A Petition from the Earl of Portland to the Lords was read, shewing,

**T**HAT he was committed Prisoner in the City, the Beginning of August last, at the Desire of the House of Commons, upon some Suspicions and Jealousies they had of him; where he continued six Months, almost to the Ruin of his whole Estate.

A Petition from the Earl of Portland, imprisoned on account of the late Plot.

That he is now made a Prisoner upon the same Grounds, and at the same Request; but, as he conceives, without any Charge brought up against him: Whereby, and by what Mr. Waller hath threatened him with since he was imprisoned, he doth apprehend a very sad, long, and ruinous Restraint, all his Goods being already taken out of his Power, which were the only Means he had for the present Subsistence of his Family.

He therefore humbly prays the Lords, that he may not find the Effects of Mr. Waller's Threats, by a long and close Imprisonment; but that he may be speedily brought to a legal Trial before them; and then he is confident the Vanity and Falshood of these Informations, which have been given to the House of Commons against the Petitioner, will appear both to their Lordships and to them; and he shall have the Testimony of having ever borne a very faithful Heart to his Country.

And for this he shall ever pray, &c.

PORTLAND.

The Lords taking Notice of the Expressions in the Petition, about Mr. Waller's Threats to the Earl, ordered, That they should be both examined, Face to Face, the next Day; to which the Commons also agreed.

The



### 318 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

July.

The Commons  
desire the Earl of  
Northumberland  
may be examined  
touching that  
Affair,

The Earl of *Northumberland* was another Person the Commons accused as having some Knowledge of the late Plot; and, this Day, the Commons sent up to the Lords to have him examined forthwith. The Earl being in the House desired the same Thing, that so, as he said, his Innocency might sooner appear, and he not lie longer under a Jealousy; which was done accordingly.

July 1. The Earl of *Manchester*, from the Committee appointed to take Examinations in the above Affair, reported what Discourse the Earl of *Portland* had lately with Mr. *Waller*.

Mr. *Thinn*, the Usher of the House of Lords, deposed, 'That, on the 21st ult. whilst he staid to see whether Mr. Alderman *Atkins* would receive the Lord *Portland*, Mr. *Waller* came to speak to his Lordship, as he conceived. The Alderman carried them into an upper Room, and, when they came down again, Lord *Portland* came into the Parlour, and said these, or the like Words, *Pray do me the Favour to tell my Lord Northumberland, that Mr. Waller has extremely pressed me to save my own Life and his, by casting the Guilt or Blame upon the Lord Conway and the Earl of Northumberland.*'

The Lord *Lovelace* also testified, but not upon Oath, 'That he went to the Earl of *Portland* on Monday last; and, after he had been there a while, the Earl shewed Alderman *Atkins's* Wife a Petition; and, when she had read it, the Earl shewed it to him; and he remembers that, in the same Petition, there was this Clause, *That Mr. Waller desired him to save himself and him, by laying the Blame on the two other Lords as before.*'

These Testimonies, with the Earl of *Portland's* own Examination, which is not enter'd in the *Journals*, were ordered to be written out and delivered to Mr. *Pym*, or any of the Committee of the House of Commons, by Direction of the Lords.

The

The same Day the Speaker acquainted the Lords, that he had received a Letter from the Lord-General; which was read as follows:

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
July.

My Lord,

*Since the Coming of the Army to this Place, the Unseasonableness of the Weather, and some other Accidents, hath prevented many Things which I proposed to have attempted, had God seen it fit; and therefore I much desire that some of the Lords of your House might be sent down, together with some of the Commons, that we may debate Things of great Necessity to be considered of; which I must desire may be done with all possible Speed; that, upon a Result of what may be offered, you may receive full Satisfaction of our Condition; which I leave to the Wisdom of the House, resting*

A Letter from the Earl of Essex, desiring the Advice of Parliament.

Your Lordship's

Thame, June 30,  
1643.

Faithful Servant,

ESSEX.

A Conference being desired, and held, between the two Houses on the Subject of this Letter, the Result of it was, That the Lords named the Earl of *Holland* and the Lord *Grey of Werk* to go, with a proportionable Number of the Commons, to the General: But the next Day of Meeting, *July 3*, the said Lords being returned, reported to the House, That they set out on their Journey, and got as far as *Aylesbury*, where they met with another Letter from the Lord-General, informing them that the King's Forces were abroad that Way; and therefore advising them not to proceed any further.

*July 4.* In the House of Commons, this Day, Mr. *Waller* was brought to the Bar, in order to answer to his Charge for being concerned in the late Plot; when his Examinations and Confessions were shewn unto him, who acknowledged them all



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

all to be true. Then being told by the Speaker, if he had any thing more to say, either as to the Plot, or for himself, he had Leave to do so, he made the following Speech to the House\*.

*Mr. Speaker,*

Mr. Waller's  
Speech in his  
own Defence,  
concerning the  
late Plot.

**I** Acknowledge it a great Mercy of God, and a great Favour from you, that I am, once more, suffered to behold this Honourable Assembly.

‘ I mean not to make use of it to say any Thing in my own Defence, by Justification or Denial of what I have done. I have already confessed enough to make me appear worthy, not only to be put out of this House, but out of the World too. All my humble Request to you is that, if I seem to you as unworthy to live as I do to myself, I may have the Honour to receive my Death from your own Hands, and not to be exposed to a Trial by the Council of War : Whatever you shall think me worthy to suffer in a Parliamentary Way, is not like to find Stop any where else.

‘ This, Sir, I hope you will be pleased, for your own Sakes, to grant me ; who am already so miserable, that nothing can be added to my Calamity—but to be made the Occasion of creating a Precedent to your own Disadvantage : Besides the Right I may have to this, consider, I beseech you, that the Eyes of the World are upon you. You govern in Chief, and if you should expose your own Members to the Punishment of others, it will be thought that you either want Power, or Leisure, to chastise them yourselves ; nor let any Man despise the ill Consequence of such a Precedent, as this would be, because he seeth not presently the Inconveniences which may ensue : You have many Armies on Foot, and it is uncertain how

\* From the Original Edition printed by *G. Dexter*, and licenced by *John White*.

Lord Clarendon, after giving a very long and particular Narrative of this Affair, remarks, ‘ That Mr. Waller did as much owe the Keeping his Head to this Oration, as *Cataline* did the Loss of his to those of *Tully*.



how long you may have Occasion to use them. An. 19, Car. I, 1643.  
 Soldiers and Commanders (though I know well they of the Parliament's Army excell no less in Modesty, than they do in Courage) are generally of a Nature ready to pretend to the utmost Power of this Kind, which they conceive to be due to them; and may be too apt, upon any Occasion of Discontent, to make use of such a Precedent as this. In this very Parliament you have not been without some Taste of the Experience hereof; it is now somewhat more than two Years since you had an Army in the *North*, paid and directed by yourselves; and yet you may be pleased to remember there was a considerable Number of Officers in that Army, which joined in a *Petition*, or *Remonstrance*, to this House, taking Notice of what some of the Members had said here, as they supposed, to their Disadvantage, and did little less than require them of you. 'Tis true, there had been some Tampering with them; but what has happened, at one Time, may wisely be thought possible to fall out again at another.

'Sir, I presume but to point you out the Danger: If it be not just, I know you will not do me the Wrong to expose me to this Trial; if it be just, your Army may another Time require the same Justice of you in their own Behalf, against some other Member, whom, perhaps, you would be less willing to part with. Necessity has, of late, forced you into untrodden Paths; and in such a Case as this, where you have no Precedent of your own, you may not do amiss to look abroad upon other States and Senates, which exercise the Supreme Power, as you now do here.

'I dare confidently say you shall find none, either antient or modern, which ever exposed any of their own Order to be tried for his Life, by the Officers of their Armies abroad, for what he did while he resided among them in the Senate.

'Among the *Romans* the Practice was so contrary, that some inferior Officers in their Army, far from the City, having been sentenced by their

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

I. General or Commander in Chief, as deserving Death by their Discipline of War, have nevertheless (because they were Senators) appealed thither, and the Cause has received a new Hearing in the Senate.

‘ Not to use more Words to persuade you to take heed that you wound not yourselves, through my Sides, in violating the Privileges belonging to your own Persons, I shall humbly desire you to consider likewise the Nature of my Offence; (not but that I should be much ashamed to say any Thing in Diminution thereof: God knows ’tis horrid enough for the Evil it might have occasioned) but if you look near it, it may, perhaps, appear to be rather a civil than a martial Crime, and so to have Title to a Trial at the Common Law of the Land: There may, justly, be some Difference put between me and others in this Business.

‘ I have had nothing to do with the other Army, or any Intention to begin the Offer of Violence to any Body; it was only a civil Pretence to that which I then, foolishly, conceived to be the Right of the Subject. I humbly refer it to your Considerations, and to your Consciences. I know you will take Care not to shed that Blood by the Law of War, which hath a Right to be tried by the Law of Peace.

‘ For so much as concerns myself and my Part in this Business, (if I were worthy to have any Thing spoken, or patiently heard, in my Behalf) this might truly be said, That I made not this Business but found it; it was in other Men’s Hands long before it was brought to me, and when it came I extended it not, but restrained it. For the Proposition of letting in Part of the King’s Army, or offering Violence to the Members of this House, I ever disallowed, and utterly rejected them.

‘ What it was that moved me to entertain Discourse of this Business, so far as I did, I will tell you ingenuously; and that rather as a Warning for



for others, than it makes any Thing for myself; it was only an Impatience of the Inconveniences of the present War, looking on Things with a carnal Eye, and not minding that which chiefly, if not only, ought to have been considered, the inestimable Value of the Cause you have in Hand, the Cause of God and of Religion; and the Necessities you are forced upon for the Maintenance of the same. As a just Punishment for this Neglect, it pleased God to desert me and suffer me, with a fatal Blindness, to be led on and engaged in such Counsels as were wholly disproportioned to the rest of my Life. This, Sir, my own Conscience tells me was the Cause of my Falling, and not Malice, or any ill Habit of Mind or Disposition toward the Common-wealth, or to the Parliament: For from whence should I have it? If you look on my Birth you will not find it in my Blood: I am of a Stock which hath borne you better Fruit. If you look on my Education, it hath been almost from my Childhood in this House, and amongst the best Sort of Men; and for the whole Practice of my Life, till this Time, if another were to speak for me, he might reasonably say, That neither my Actions out of Parliament, nor my Expressions in it, have favoured of Disaffection or Malice to the Liberties of the People or Privileges of Parliament.

Thus, Sir, I have set before your Eyes, both my Person and my Case; wherein I shall make no such Defence by denying or extenuating any Thing I have done, as ordinary Delinquents do. My Address to you, and all my Plea, shall only be such as Children use to their Parents, I have offended, I confess it. I never did any Thing like it before. It is a Passage unsuitable to the whole Course of my Life beside; and for the Time to come, as God, that can bring Light out of Darkness, hath made this Business in the Event useful to you, so also hath he to me: You have by it made an happy Discovery of your Enemies, and I of myself and the evil Principles I walked by; so that

An. 19, Car. I.  
1643.  
July.



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

if you look either on what I have been heretofore, or what I now am, and, by God's Grace assisting me, I shall always continue to be, you may perhaps think me fit to be an Example of your Compassion and Clemency.

'Sir, I shall no sooner leave you, but my Life will depend on your Breath; and not that alone, but the Subsistence of some that are more innocent. I might therefore shew you my Children, whom the Rigour of your Justice would make compleat Orphans, being already motherless. I might shew you a Family, wherein there are some unworthy to have their Share in that Mark of Infamy, which now threatens me: But something there is, which if I could shew you, would move you more than all this; it is my Heart, which abhors what I have done more, and is more severe to itself, than the severest Judge can be. A Heart, Mr. Speaker, so awakened by this Affliction, and so intirely devoted to the Cause you maintain, that I earnestly desire of God to incline you so to dispose of me, whether for Life or Death, as may most conduce to the Advancement thereof.

'Sir, not to trouble you any longer, if I die I shall die praying for you; if I live I shall live serving you; and render you back the Use and Employment of all those Days you shall add to my Life.'

The Commons  
expel him, and  
he is condemned  
by the Council  
of War.

After this Speech, Mr. *Waller* having withdrawn, he was called in again; and, being by the Speaker required thereto, gave the House an exact Account how he came first to the Knowledge of this Business; as also what Lords were acquainted therewith, or had engaged themselves therein. Notwithstanding which he was expelled the House; and so being left to the Council of War, as all the rest of the Conspirators had been, he was condemned to die. But Mr. *Whitlocke* tells us, 'That the Lord-General granted him a Reprieve; and, after a Year's Imprisonment, and paying a Fine of 10,000*l*. he was discharged, and tra-

travelled into *France*. Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Chaloner* were hanged. An. 19. Car. I. 1643.

July.

The House of Commons had received Information of some Design of betraying *Hull* to the King, in which the famous Sir *John Hotham* and his Son were concerned: And, this Day, they sent Sir *William Strickland* up to the Lords with a Message and several intercepted Letters from the aforesaid Sir *John* and his Son; in Consideration of which, he said, the Commons had come to some *Resolutions* for the better securing and preserving that Fortrefs; which were these:

Information of Sir John Hotham's intending to deliver up Hull to the King.

That Sir *William Strickland* and Mr. *Hatcher*, Members of their House, with the Mayor of the Town of *Hull* and Sir *Matthew Boynton*, should be appointed a Committee for the Government of *Hull*; and that the former two should go down forthwith to take it upon them: That Sir *Matthew Boynton* should be appointed Colonel of the Garrison in that Town, and recommended to the General for a Commission for that Purpose. Sir *Henry Vane, jun.* and *Peregrine Pelham*, Esq; Members for *Hull*, with Sir *William Allanson*, were also added; to all which the Lords agreed, with the Addition of Sir *Philip Stapylton* and Sir *William Constable* to this Commission.

In this Message also the Commons again press'd the Lords to consent to the making of a new Great Seal, because, they said, the Kingdom was not able to subsist without it; but the Lords let them know, That they adhered, in this, to their former Resolution; which, when the Commons understood, they resolved to give Orders for making a new Great Seal themselves, and appointed a Committee to see it done with all Speed: But they made no Use of it till the Lords gave their Consent the 12th of *October* following. The Form of it was, a Representation of the House of Commons, the Members sitting, on one Side; and the Arms of *England* and *Ireland*, on the other.

The Commons order a new Great Seal to be made.



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

July.

Lord Fairfax  
routed by the  
Marquis of New-  
castle ;

Whereupon the  
Lords agree to  
invite the Scots.

July 5. The Commons having had Information of the ill Success of the Lord *Fairfax* in the *North*, and that the Marquis of *Newcastle* had entirely routed his Forces at *Atherton-Moor*, near *Bradford*, were in great Consternation: And, this Day, at a Conference, the Commons communicated this bad News to the Lords ; earnestly pressing them to nominate a Committee of their House, to go forthwith into *Scotland*, and to desire the *Scots* Nation to send Aid and Assistance into *England* against the Papists and others, now in Arms to destroy the Protestant Religion and the Liberty of this Kingdom. The Lords agreed to this, and ordered the Lord *Grey of Werk* to attend the House the next Morning for that Purpose.

Little else, of moment, occurs in the *Journals*, till this Day, *July 10*, when we meet with an *Ordinance* of Indemnity for those Gentlemen that secured Sir *John Hotham*, his Son, &c. which was read, and agreed to, in these Words :

An Indemnifica-  
tion of the Per-  
sons concerned  
in securing Sir  
*John Hotham*  
and his Son,

W Hereas *Thomas Raikes*, Mayor of *Hull*,  
Sir *Matthew Boynton*, Knight and Ba-  
ronet, Sir *William St. Quintin*, Bart. Sir *Richard*  
*Darley*, Sir *John Bourchier*, and Sir *William Al-*  
*lanson*, Knights, *Lancelot Roper*, *Nicholas Den-*  
*man*, *John Barnard*, and *William Popple*, Al-  
dermen, *John Penrose*, Gent. and *Robert John-*  
*son*, Clerk, did receive Information that there  
was a Design for the betraying the Town of  
*Hull* ; which, in their Opinion, could not be  
prevented but by a speedy seizing of the Block-  
Houses, and other Places of Strength in the  
Town, and also of the Persons of Sir *John Ho-*  
*tham*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, and Capt. *Hotham* :  
And whereas accordingly they, with others, sei-  
zed on the said Places of Strength, for the Prefer-  
vation of the said Town, and also the Persons  
of the said Sir *John Hotham*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*,  
and Capt. *Hotham*, and the Treasury, Plate,  
Trunks,



‘ Trunks, Writings, and other Things of the said An. 19. Car. 1<sup>st</sup>  
 ‘ Sir *John Hotbam* and Capt. *Hotbam*, to be in 1643.  
 ‘ safe Custody till farther Directions from the Par-  
 ‘ liament : } July.

‘ And whereas the said Mayor of *Hull*, Sir  
 ‘ *Matthew Boynton*, and the rest of the Persons  
 ‘ first above named, did issue out their Warrants  
 ‘ and Directions, commanding Captain *Scarth*  
 ‘ to march from *Scarborough* with his Soldiers,  
 ‘ Arms, and Ammunition he had there, to *Bever-*  
 ‘ *ley*, for the Defence of that Place, and of the  
 ‘ Goods there of Consequence, to be preserved in  
 ‘ *Beverley* till further Directions from the Par-  
 ‘ liament :

‘ And whereas they did issue out their War-  
 ‘ rants and Directions to divers other Captains for  
 ‘ to march with their Soldiers from *Hull* to *Be-*  
 ‘ *verley*, for the Defence of that Place :

‘ The Lords and Commons do declare that it was  
 ‘ an acceptable Service to the Kingdom and Par-  
 ‘ liament, in the said Mayor of *Hull*, Sir *Matthew*  
 ‘ *Boynton*, and the rest of the Gentlemen above-  
 ‘ named, and all that others have done herein ;  
 ‘ and that the Lords and Commons will keep them,  
 ‘ and all others that have assisted them therein, in-  
 ‘ demnified and sav’d harmless.’

July 11. A Letter to the Speaker, from the  
 Lord-General, was read to the House of Lords,  
 desiring to have 500 Horse sent him, presently, to  
 recruit his Army, and 200 Horse a Month pro-  
 vided for the same Purpose ; as likewise a Maga-  
 zine of Saddles and Horse-Arms. Another Letter  
 of a later Date, from the General, was also read ;  
 which is inserted, at Length, in the *Journals*, and  
 is as follows :

My Lord,

*I* Would now have given you the true Relation of The Earl of Ef-  
 the Skirmish, on Sunday last, between some of ssex's Letter, set-  
 our Horse and the Enemy's, near Buckingham ; but ting forth the  
 Sir Philip Stapylton and Col. Goodwin being then distressed Condi-  
 tion of his Army.  
 upon

AN. 19. CAR. I.

1643.

July.

*upon the Place, I refer the Relation thereof unto them. Since when, being informed that the King had sent more Forces to Buckingham, to maintain that Place, bring those Parts into Contribution, and give us Battle there: Hereupon I advanced with the Army towards that Town; where the Enemy stayed till the Army came within two Miles of them, and then made Haste away towards Banbury; notwithstanding they had persuaded the People, that they would not quit the Place till they had beat me out of the Country. I then, understanding that they were fled, held it not fit to go to the Town with my Army, but sent Col. Middleton with some Horse to clear the Town and Coast, which he did; and then advised where to quarter with most Conveniency to our Army, and most ready for the Enemy, the Queen's Forces being like to join with them very suddenly.*

*That our Army might the better secure the Parliament and the City of London, and the Counties adjacent, and be more safely supplied with Money from London, and lie most conveniently to join with the Forces with the Lord Grey, in Northamptonshire, I did march to Great Brickhill, as the most fit Place for all Purposes.*

*The Enemy's chief Strength being in Horse, and this Army neither recruited with Horses, nor Arms, nor Saddles, it is impossible to keep the Country from being plundered; nor to fight with them, but when and where they list; we being forced, when we move, to march with the whole Army, which can be but by slow Marches; so that the Country suffers much Wrong, and the Cries of the poor People are infinite.*

*If it were thought fit to send to his Majesty to have Peace, with the settling of Religion, the Laws and Liberties of the Subject, and bringing to just Trial those chief Delinquents that have brought all these Mischiefs to both Kingdoms; and, as my Lord of Bristol \* spake in Parliament, how we may be secured to have these Things performed hereafter; or*  
*else,*

\* The Earl of Bristol's Speech for an Accommodation, here referred to, is at large in our Eleventh Volume, p. 52.



*else, if his Majesty shall please to absent himself, there may be a Day set to give a Period to all these unhappy Distractions by a Battle, (which, when and where, they shall chuse, who may be thought any way indifferent) I shall be ready to perform that Duty I owe to you; and the Propositions to be agreed upon, between his Majesty and the Parliament, may be sent to such an indifferent Place, that both Armies may be drawn near the one to the other; so that if Peace be not concluded, it might be ended with the Sword. No Officer of the Army to be of such Committee, nor no Intercourse to be between them.*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

My Lord, I am

Brickhill Magna,  
July 9, 1643.

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

ESSEX.

Both the Houses agreed to supply the Lord-General, as he desired; all the Troops then raised in the City of London, except those for the immediate Defence of it, were ordered to march forthwith; and that there should be a Course to supply him with Horse, Arms, and Saddles. There was Necessity sufficient for a general Reinforcement at this Time, the King's Troops being every where victorious; for, besides the great Victory in the North, already mentioned, Sir William Waller was defeated in the West of England, by the Lord Wilmot, Sir Ralph Hopton, &c. and his Army totally ruined. Prince Rupert had also taken Bristol; so that the King's Affairs were now in the most flourishing Condition that they ever had been throughout the whole War. This some Lords were so sensible of, that a Motion was made for petitioning the King, before he had recalled his Proclamation wherein he expressed this Parliament to be no free Parliament; and the Question being put thereupon, it passed in the Affirmative. This Disposition of the Lords towards an Accommodation was, probably, much forwarded by the King's publishing the following Declaration, addressed

The great Successes of the King's Army.

The Lords resolve to petition for Peace.



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

‘ the just Privileges of Parliament, that we call  
 ‘ that God to witness, who hath covered our Head  
 ‘ in the Day of Battle, that we desire from our  
 ‘ Soul, and shall always use our utmost Endeavour, to preserve and advance the true Reformed  
 ‘ Protestant Religion, established in the Church of  
 ‘ *England*, in which we were born, have faithfully  
 ‘ lived, and, by the Grace of God, shall resolutely  
 ‘ die: That the Preservation of the Liberty and  
 ‘ Property of the Subject, in the due Observation  
 ‘ of the known Laws of the Land, shall be  
 ‘ equally our Care, as the Maintenance of our  
 ‘ own Rights; we desiring to govern only by those  
 ‘ good Laws, which, till they were oppressed by  
 ‘ this odious Rebellion, preserved this Nation  
 ‘ happy. And we do acknowledge the just Privileges of Parliament to be an essential Part of those  
 ‘ Laws, and shall, therefore, most solemnly defend and observe them; so that, in Truth, if either Religion, Law, or Liberty, be precious to  
 ‘ our People, they will, by their Submission to us,  
 ‘ join with us in the Defence of them, and thereby establish that Peace, by which only they can  
 ‘ flourish and be enjoyed.

‘ Whether these Men that be professed Enemies  
 ‘ to the established Ecclesiastical Government; who  
 ‘ reproach and persecute the learned Orthodox  
 ‘ Ministers of the Church, and into their Places  
 ‘ put ignorant, seditious, and schismatical Preachers; who vilify the Book of Common Prayer,  
 ‘ and impiously profane God’s Worship with their  
 ‘ scurrilous and seditious Demeanor, are like to advance that Religion: Whether those Men, who  
 ‘ boldly, and without the least Shadow or Colour  
 ‘ of Law, impose insupportable Taxes and odious  
 ‘ Excises upon their Fellow-Subjects, imprison,  
 ‘ torment, and murder them, are like to preserve  
 ‘ the Liberty and Property of the Subject: And  
 ‘ whether those Men, who seize and possess themselves of our own unquestionable Revenue, and  
 ‘ our just Rights; have denied us our Negative  
 ‘ Voice; have, by Force and Violence, awed and  
 ter-

terrified the Members of both Houses; and, last-  
ly, have, as far as in them lies, dissolved the  
present Parliament, by driving away and imprison-  
ing the Members, and resolving the whole  
Power thereof, and more, into a Committee of  
a few Men, contrary to all Law, Custom, or  
Precedent, are like to vindicate and uphold the Pri-  
vileges of Parliament, all the World may judge.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

July.

‘ We do therefore, once more, conjure our good  
Subjects, by their Memory of that excellent Peace  
and firm Happiness with which it pleased God to  
reward their Duty and Loyalty in Time past; by  
their *Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy*, which  
no *Vow or Covenant*, contrived and administered  
to and by themselves, can cancel or evade; by  
whatsoever is dear and precious to them in this  
Life, or hoped or prayed for in the Life to come,  
that they will remember their Duty and consider  
their Interest; and no longer suffer themselves to  
be misled, their Prince dishonoured, and their  
Country wasted and undone, by the Malice and  
Cunning of those State Impostors; who, under  
Pretence of Reformation, would introduce what-  
soever is monstrous and unnatural both to Reli-  
gion and Policy: But that they rather chuse  
quietly to enjoy their Religion, Property, and  
Liberty, founded and provided for by the Wis-  
dom and Industry of former Times, and secured  
and enlarged by the Blessings upon the present  
Age, than to spend their Lives and Fortunes to  
purchase Confusion, and to make themselves li-  
able to the most intolerable kind of Slavery, that  
is, to be Slaves to their Fellow-Subjects; who,  
by their prodigious unheard-of Acts of Oppres-  
sion and Tyranny, have given them sufficient  
Evidence what they are to expect at their Hands.

‘ And let not our good People, who have been  
misled, or, through Want of Understanding or  
Want of Courage, submitted themselves to un-  
warrantable and disloyal Actions, be taught, by  
these Seducers, that their Safety now consists in  
Despair; and that they can only secure them-  
selves



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

‘ selves, for the Ills they have done, by a resolute and  
 ‘ peremptory Disobedience. Revenge and Blood-  
 ‘ thirstiness have never been imputed to us, even  
 ‘ by those who have not left either our Govern-  
 ‘ ment or Nature unexamined with the greatest  
 ‘ Boldness and Malice. And all those who, since  
 ‘ these bloody Distractions, out of Conscience have  
 ‘ returned from their evil Ways to us, have found  
 ‘ that it was not so easy for them to repent as for  
 ‘ us to forgive. And whosoever have been misled  
 ‘ by those whose Hearts, from the Beginning, have  
 ‘ designed all this Mischief, and shall redeem their  
 ‘ past Crimes by their present Service and Loyalty,  
 ‘ in the apprehending or opposing such who shall  
 ‘ continue to bear Arms against us, and shall use  
 ‘ their utmost Endeavours to reduce those Men to  
 ‘ their due Obedience, and to restore this King-  
 ‘ dom to its wonted Peace, shall have Cause to  
 ‘ magnify our Mercy, and to repent the Trespases  
 ‘ committed against so just and so gracious a So-  
 ‘ vereign.

‘ Lastly, we desire all our good Subjects who  
 ‘ have really assisted, or really wished us well,  
 ‘ now God hath done such wonderful Things for  
 ‘ us, vigorously to endeavour to put an End to all  
 ‘ these Miseries, by bringing in Men, Money,  
 ‘ Plate, Horses, or Arms, to our Aid; that so we,  
 ‘ being not wanting to ourselves, may, with Con-  
 ‘ fidence, expect the Continuance of God’s Fa-  
 ‘ vour, to restore us all to that blessed Harmony of  
 ‘ Affections, which may establish a firm Peace;  
 ‘ without the speedy obtaining of which, this poor  
 ‘ Kingdom will be utterly undone, though not  
 ‘ absolutely lost.’

Lord Fairfax ap-  
 pointed Governor  
 of Hull.

July 12. At the Desire of the House of Com-  
 mons, the Lord *Fairfax* was made Governor of  
*Hull*; instead of the Commissioners before-named\*.

Sir

\* The Preamble to this *Ordinance* runs thus: ‘ The Lords and  
 ‘ Commons assembled in Parliament, upon the assured Confidence  
 ‘ and Trust, which they have and do repose in the Wisdom, Valour,  
 ‘ and Fidelity of the Rt. Hon. *Ferdinando Lord Fairfax*, do ordain,  
 ‘ declare, and appoint, &c.’



Sir *John Hotham* and his Son, with other Prisoners concerned in the Design upon that Town, were now brought up to *London*; and, this Day, a Committee extraordinary was appointed by the Commons, to take their Examinations, and to do all other Acts that might tend to the Discovery of the whole Business, and all the Circumstances of it. Ordered, also, That no Member of that House, or any other Person, should visit Sir *John* or his Son, nor send any Messages to them, without Leave of the House.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
July.

The Lord *Grey of Werk* having a Post in the Parliament's Army, as Lieutenant-General under the Earl of *Essex*, his Lordship shewed very great Reluctancy to go into *Scotland*, notwithstanding the Lords had joined the Earl of *Rutland* in the Commission with him. He made many Excuses to avoid this Embassy, as leaving his Charge, which, at this Time, the Armies being so near one another, would reflect upon his Honour: He desired, also, that he might be excused, on account of an ill Disposition of Body, which would not endure a Sea Voyage, the only Way the Parliament had now to send to the *Scots* with any Safety. But, probably, it might proceed from his Dislike to go on such an Errand as inviting a foreign Army to come and invade this Kingdom, which, should the King prevail, might put him past Hopes of Pardon. Whatever it was, his Lordship, this Day, (*July 17.*) making the same Excuses to the Lords, he was ordered to withdraw; when that House, taking into Consideration the whole Progress of this Business, and that, upon his Submission to their Pleasure, they had appointed a peremptory Day for his going, and had also acquainted the House of Commons therewith, the Lords therefore insisted on their Order, that he should go; and the Earls of *Pembroke*, *Denbigh*, and *Bolingbroke*, were sent out to acquaint him with it.

Soon after the said Earls returned with this Answer, That the Lord *Grey* submitted to go, if the House

## 336 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I. House did command him; but desired them to present to their Lordships two Petitions:

1643.  
July.

1. That he might enjoy his Place of Command in the Army.

2. That when he had been in *Scotland* a-while, and settled Affairs in some Forwardness, if he found his Health so ill that he could not stay there without Prejudice to himself and the Service, that, upon his humble Suit and Information thereof to the House, he might be permitted to return home.

Lord Grey of  
Werk committed  
to the Tower,  
&c. for refusing  
to go to invite  
the Scots Army.

But the Lords not thinking it fit to have any Conditions put upon them, ordered the Lord Grey to be called in again, and the Speaker to demand his positive *Answer*: He then said, He was not able to go on account of his Health. Hereupon, that House taking this for an absolute Denial of their Commands, and considering his former *Answer*, in order to vindicate the Honour of their House, by some exemplary Punishment, *resolved*, That the Lord Grey, for his Disobedience, should forthwith, be sent Prisoner to the *Tower*. And; the next Day, his Commission in the Army was also taken from him; tho', very soon after, he was released from his Imprisonment, without any Petition, but not restored to his Command in the Army.

July 19. The following *Petition* was presented to the Lords, from the Assembly of Divines sitting at *Westminster*:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS assembled in Parliament,

THE HUMBLE PETITION of divers MINISTERS of CHRIST, in the Name of themselves and of sundry others,

Humbly sheweth,

Petition from the  
Assembly of Di-  
vines.

**T**HAT your Petitioners, upon serious Consideration, and deep Sense of God's heavy Wrath lying on us, and hanging over our Heads and the whole Nation, and manifested particularly by the two late sad and unexpected Defeats of our Forces  
in



*in the North and in the West, do apprehend it to be our Duty, as Watchmen for the Good of the Church and Kingdom, to present to your religious and prudent Consideration these ensuing Requests, in the Name of Jesus Christ, your Lord and ours :*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
July.

First, That you would be pleased to command a public and extraordinary Day of Humiliation, this Week, throughout the Cities of London, Westminster, the Suburbs of both, and Places adjacent within the weekly Bills of Mortality, that every one may bitterly bewail his own Sins, and cry mightily unto God, for Christ's Sake, to remove his Wrath, and to heal the Land; with professed and renewed Resolutions of more full Performance of the late Covenant, for the Amendment of our Ways.

Secondly, That you would vouchsafe instantly to take it into your most serious Consideration, how you may most speedily set up Christ more gloriously in all his Ordinances within this Kingdom, and reform all Things amiss throughout the Land, wherein God is more specially and more immediately dishonoured: Among which we humbly lay before you these Particulars;

1. That the brutish Ignorance and palpable Darkeness possessing the greatest Part of the People in all Places of the Kingdom, whereby they are utterly unfit to wait upon God in any holy Duty, (to the great Dishonour of the Gospel, and the everlasting Endangering of their poor Souls) may be remedied by a speedy and strict Charge to all Ministers, constantly to catechize all the Youth and ignorant People, they being commanded to be subject to it, and all Sorts to be present at it; and Information to be given of all Persons who shall withstand or neglect it.

2. That the grievous and heinous Pollution of the Lord's Supper, by those that are grossly ignorant and notoriously profane, may be henceforth, with all Christian Care and due Circumspection, prevented.

3. That the bold Venting of corrupt Doctrines, directly contrary to the sacred Law of God, and religious Humiliation for Sin, which open a wide Door to all Libertinism and Disobedience to God



## 338 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

and Man, may be speedily suppressed every where, and that in such Manner as may give Hope that the Church may be no more infected with them.

4. That the Profanation of any Part of the Lord's Day, and the Days of solemn Fasting, by buying, selling, working, sporting, travelling, or neglecting of God's Ordinances, may be remedied by appointing special Officers in every Place, for the due Execution of all good Laws and Ordinances against the same.

5. That there may be a thorough and speedy Proceeding against blind Guides and scandalous Ministers, by whose Wickedness People either lack or loath the Ordinances of the Lord, and Thousands of Souls perish; and the Removal of the Ark from among us, is, to the Trembling of our Hearts, evidently threatned: And that your Wisdoms would find out some Way to admit into the Ministry such godly and hopeful Men as have prepared themselves and are willing thereunto; without which there will suddenly be such a Scarcity of able and faithful Ministers, that it will be to little Purpose to cast out such as are unable, idle, or scandalous.

6. That the Laws may be quicken'd against Swearing and Drunkenness, with which the Land is filled and defiled, and under which it mourneth.

7. That some severe Course may be taken against Fornication, Adultery, and Incest, which do greatly abound, especially of late, by reason of Impunity.

8. That all Monuments of Idolatry and Superstition, but more especially the whole Body and Practice of Popery, may be totally abolished.

9. That Justice may be executed on all Delinquents, according to your solemn and religious Vow and Protestation to that Purpose.

10. That all possible Means may be used for the speedy Relief and Release of our miserable and extremely distressed Brethren, who are Prisoners in Oxford, York, and elsewhere, whose heavy Sufferings cry loud in the Ears of our God; and it would lie very heavy upon the Kingdom, should they miscarry, suffering as they do for the Cause of God.

That

*That so God, who is now, by the Sword, avenging the Quarrel of his Covenant, beholding your Integrity and Zeal, may turn from the Fierceness of his Wrath, hear our Prayers, go forth with our Armies, perfect the Work of Reformation, forgive our Sins, and settle Truth and Peace throughout the Kingdom.*

And the Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
July.

This *Petition* was signed by forty-seven of the Assembly; and in *Answer* to it, the Lords appointed the next *Friday* for a solemn Day of Humiliation; and for the rest, they would take the same into Consideration. The *Order* for the Fast was in these Words:

‘THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, A Fast ordered  
‘ out of the deep Sense of God’s heavy on account of the  
‘ Wrath, now upon the Kingdom, and more par Defeat of the  
‘ ticularly manifested by the late Discomfiture of Parliament’s  
‘ the Forces, both in the *North* and in the *West*; of Army in the  
‘ have, for themselves, resolved to set a-part and North and West,  
‘ keep, and do ordain and command, That *Fri-*  
‘ day the 21st of this present *July*, 1643, be set  
‘ a-part and kept, as a Day of public and extra-  
‘ ordinary Humiliation, by Prayer and Fasting,  
‘ throughout the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*,  
‘ and Suburbs, &c. that every Soul may bitterly  
‘ bewail his own Sins and the Sins of the whole  
‘ Nation; and cry mightily to God, for Christ’s  
‘ Sake, That he would be pleased to turn from  
‘ us the Fierceness of his Wrath, and heal the  
‘ Land.’

This *Order* was sent to the Lord-Mayor, &c. with a strict Command to see the due Execution of it.

The same Day a *Message* from the Lords was sent down to the Commons, importing, That, since by the Earl of *Rutland*’s Indisposition of Health, he cannot go as their Commissioner into *Scotland* so speedily as the Business requires, and that the Lord *Grey* is imprisoned for Contempt,



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

July.

Commissioners  
appointed to go  
into Scotland.

they would think of another Lord to be sent in his Stead : But, least the Affair should suffer by further Delay, the Lords desired, That the Commons would send their Commissioners away presently ; and the other should follow with all convenient Speed.

About the same Time, the Commons sent up Copies of Credential Letters for their Commissioners, directed to the Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, and the Council of State there, and another to the Earl of *Leven*, inviting him to take the Command of the Army which the *Scots* should send into *England*, as having been the *Scots* General against the Rebels in *Ireland* : Assuring him, That it would lay upon this State and them such an Obligation, as they should study to answer in a Manner proportionable, &c. Along with the former was sent, by the Commissioners, a *Declaration* of the Lords and Commons in *England* to the General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*, recommending their Commissioners to them ; as, also, Mr. *Stephen Marshall* and Mr. *Philip Nye*, both Ministers of God's Word, and Men of approved Faithfulness and Abilities in their Functions. Also a *Declaration* of the Lords and Commons in *England*, to the Kingdom and States of *Scotland* : Both which last, being printed at Length in *Rushworth*, are unnecessary here. We shall only subjoin the Parliament's particular *Instructions* to their Commissioners, as they stand in the *Lords Journals* ; these not being printed in the *Collections*.

INSTRUCTIONS, agreed upon by the LORDS and COMMONS in PARLIAMENT, for John Earl of Rutland, Sir William Armyn, Bart. Sir Henry Vane, junior, Knight, Thomas Hatcher, and Henry Darley, Esquires, appointed Commissioners to the Kingdom of Scotland.

The Parliament's  
Instructions to  
them.

‘ YOU shall forthwith repair to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, either to *Edinburgh* or other Parts as you see Cause ; and you shall  
‘ make



‘ make your Addresses to the Parliament or any <sup>An. 19. Car. I.</sup>  
 ‘ deputed by them, to the Assembly of the States <sup>1643.</sup>  
 ‘ or any Commissioners appointed by them, the <sup>July.</sup>  
 ‘ General Assembly of the Church or the Com-  
 ‘ missioners of the General Assembly, the Lords  
 ‘ of the Secret Council, Commissioners for Con-  
 ‘ servation of the Peace of the Kingdom, the  
 ‘ Commissioners of Common Burdens, and such  
 ‘ others as shall have power and Authority to treat  
 ‘ with you, upon such Matters as you have recei-  
 ‘ ved or shall receive in Charge, and to negotiate  
 ‘ in that Kingdom as Commissioners of and from  
 ‘ the Parliament of *England*.

II. ‘ You shall take all fit Ways and Oppor-  
 ‘ tunities to make known to the State and Nation  
 ‘ of *Scotland* the great Miseries, Calamities, and  
 ‘ Dangers, brought upon this Church and King-  
 ‘ dom by the Faction of Papists and Prelates, and  
 ‘ their Adherents; whereby we are disabled, for  
 ‘ the present, to make Payment of those great  
 ‘ Debts which are owing to them for the Remain-  
 ‘ der of the Brotherly-Assistance Money, and the  
 ‘ Arrear of their Army in *Ireland*.

III. ‘ You shall take Care of stating and settling  
 ‘ all Accounts, Debts and Demands, betwixt the  
 ‘ two Nations of *England* and *Scotland*; and, the  
 ‘ same being reduced to a Certainty, you shall  
 ‘ treat and compound for the Time and Manner  
 ‘ of Satisfaction for the said Debts, in such Man-  
 ‘ ner as shall stand with Justice and the Conveni-  
 ‘ ency of both Kingdoms.

IV. ‘ As touching the Remainder of the Bro-  
 ‘ therly-Assistance Money, it is conceived most  
 ‘ just and reasonable (because the War upon the  
 ‘ Subjects and People of *Scotland*, begun and prose-  
 ‘ cuted in the Years 1640 and 1641, was procured  
 ‘ by the Faction of Papists, Prelates, and their Ad-  
 ‘ herents, which was the Cause of the coming of  
 ‘ the *Scots* into this Kingdom, and of the Engage-  
 ‘ ment thereupon made for their Satisfaction) that  
 ‘ sufficient Lands of Papists, Prelates, and other Ma-  
 ‘ lignants as have adhered to them, shall, by the

An. 10. Car. I.

1643.

July.

Direction and Appointment of both Houses of Parliament, be set forth, out of which Recompence shall be made for the Forbearance of that Money, untill such Time as Satisfaction shall be given for the Discharge of all the said Debts, with the Interest and Consideration for the Forbearance thereof.

V. As for the Arrears due to the *Scots Army* in *Ireland*, it being impossible for this State, by reason of the manifold Troubles and Burdens which lie upon it, to make present Payment, it is desired, That our Brethren of *Scotland* think upon some other Way how we may give Satisfaction, either in the confiscated Lands in *Ireland* by way of Adventure, according to the Rates and Proportions at which they are to be delivered to the *English* Adventurers; or else by Instalment, at four equal Payments, within two Years after the Peace of this Kingdom shall be settled; or else in Provision in Victuals and Apparel, to be delivered at reasonable Rates in *Scotland*, or any other Place; or any other Way within the Power of the two Houses: It being our earnest Desire to give our Brethren full Contentment herein, so far as God shall enable us thereunto.

VI. You shall, according to the precedent Articles, treat and conclude for the Discharge of both the Debts aforementioned; that is, the Remainder of the Brotherly-Assistance Money and the Arrear of the Army in *Ireland*, and such further Payments as shall grow due, untill they shall be dismissed, in any of these Ways as shall be agreeable to our Brethren: And you shall receive any further or other Propositions from them concerning the same; and such Propositions certify to the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that so you may receive further Directions therein.

VII. You shall, with the like Plainness and Truth, make known to our Brethren of *Scotland*, that we are, by these Troubles, made

al-



‘ altogether unable to continue the Charge of the Army in *Ireland*; therefore, lest it should become too great a Burden to them in our Disability of Payment, we desire the said Army may be dismissed in some short Time; only such Garrisons to be kept on Foot, as our Brethren shall think fit to retain for the Guard of *Carrick-fergus* and *Coleraine*, according to the Treaty in that Behalf.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
July.

VIII. ‘ You shall mediate and conclude an Establishment of the same Garrisons, both for the Number of Men (not exceeding 2000) and their Allowances, which the two Houses will undertake to discharge accordingly in Money or Provisions, at reasonable Rates to be agreed upon.

IX. ‘ You shall put our Brethren in Mind, That the Popish and Prelatical Faction, which begun with them in the Year 1640 and 1641, and intended to make Way for our Ruin by theirs, and so to have corrupted and altered Religion in the whole Island, have not diminished in any Part of their Malice towards them; or at all departed from their Design, but only varied in the Manner of their Proceeding; conceiving that they have an easy Way to destroy them, if they may first prevail over us: And thereupon you shall use your utmost Endeavour to persuade and excite our Brethren to join with us in the Common Cause, not only of the two Kingdoms, but of all the Professors of the Protestant Religion; for the total and universal Suppression whereof they may discern that the Pope and his Faction, in several Factions, are strongly combined.

X. ‘ You shall desire therefore, That both Nations may be straitly united and tied for our mutual Defence against the Papists and Prelatical Faction, and their Adherents, in both Kingdoms; and not lay down Arms till they shall be disarmed, and subjected to the Authority and Justice



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

Justice of Parliament in both Kingdoms respectively: For the effecting whereof, we desire our Brethren of *Scotland* to raise an Army of 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horse or more, to be forthwith sent against the Papists, Prelatical Faction, and Malignants; the same to be commanded by the Earl of *Leven*, or such other General as shall be appointed by the States of *Scotland*, according to the Orders and Directions of both Houses of Parliament; and to be paid, according to such an Establishment as shall be agreed on, out of such Revenues of Papists, Malignants, and other Delinquents, as shall be assigned for that Purpose by the two Houses of Parliament.

XI. You shall take Care that the City of *Carlisle* and the Town of *Berwick*, whensoever they shall be secured from the Papists and Malignants, be delivered over unto the Hands of such Persons and Garrisons as shall be appointed by the two Houses of Parliament to receive and defend the same.

XII. For the Charge in raising and arming those Men, we shall give our Brethren Satisfaction as speedily as may be; and if the Reason of the War require that those Forces, or any Part thereof, be employed on this Side *Tees*, or that it shall be so desired and directed by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, they are, in such Case, to be subject to the Order and Command of his Excellency the Earl of *Essex*, or such other as shall be appointed Lord-General by the two Houses of Parliament.

XIII. You shall assure our Brethren of *Scotland*, That, if they shall be annoyed or endangered by any Force or Army, either from *England* or any other Place, the Lords and Commons of *England* will assist them with a proportionable Army of 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horse, or more, to be sent into *Scotland* for their Defence, under such Order and Directions as shall be thought fit by the Parliament or State of *Scotland*;

‘land; and if any Invasion of the *Irish* Rebels, or other Enemies, shall happen during such Time as their Army shall be employed for the Defence of this Kingdom, you shall agree with them for a Guard of Ships to be maintained by us upon that Coast.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
July.

XIV. ‘And, that the mutual Interest and Dangers of both Kingdoms may be defended and preserved by both, you shall, on the Behalf of the Lords and Commons of *England*, contract and agree with the Kingdom and States of *Scotland*, that no Pacification, or Agreement for Peace, shall be concluded, by the two Houses of Parliament, without sufficient Caution and Provision for the Security, Peace, and Safety, of that Kingdom; the Indemnity of all Persons and States for and concerning the Aid and Assistance, which shall be given to this Parliament and Kingdom, for the Suppression of the Popish and ill-affected Party among them; the safe and peaceable Return of their Forces sent hither, and the real Performance of all Articles agreed upon with them.

XV. ‘You shall receive the Public Faith of that Kingdom, that neither their Entrance into, nor Continuance in, this Kingdom, in Arms, shall be made use of to the Prejudice of the Rights and Prerogatives of the Crown of *England*, nor of the Liberties and Privileges of the Subjects; but that all Matters concerning the same be determined by the two Houses of Parliament; and that as our Brethren shall be pleased to come in to help us, at our Request, so their Forces shall be always ready to depart this Kingdom whensoever they shall, by both Houses of Parliament, be thereunto desired.

XVI. ‘You shall further consider, with our Brethren of *Scotland*, what other Articles or Propositions may be fit to be added and concluded; whereby the Assistance and Union betwixt the two Nations may be made more beneficial.



An. 19. Car. I.

1643

July.

‘ nefsical, and effectual for the Security and Defence of Religion and Liberty in both Kingdoms : And you shall certify all such Propositions to the two Houses of Parliament, and thereupon proceed to a Conclusion, as you shall receive further Direction from them.

‘ You are, together with 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horse, or more, desired of our Brethren of *Scotland* for our Assistance, to consider, agree and conclude, with them concerning a fitting Train of Artillery to accompany the same.

‘ You are to represent to our Brethren of *Scotland* the Desire of both Houses, that the Earl of *Antrim* may be examined with Reference to the Affairs of this Kingdom, upon such Interrogatories as shall be, by you, framed and propounded in that Behalf, or such as shall be hereafter appointed by both Houses; which Examinations you are to return unto the Houses with all convenient Speed.

‘ You are to prosecute the *Instructions* formerly given, by the two Houses, unto *Michael Welden* and *John Corbet*, Esquires, concerning the six Earls of *Scotland* voted Incendiaries by both Houses\*.

‘ And whereas by Act of Parliament in both Kingdoms, concerning the Treaty of Peace between the two Nations, two Commissions, the one for conserving of Peace, and the other for Trade, are directed and appointed; which Commissions are passed and consented to by the two Houses of Parliament; you are therefore, according to the said Commissions, and in the Capacity of Commissioners in that Behalf, to treat and advise of all such Matters as, by the said Act of Parliament is appointed; and to carry with you authentic Copies of the same, and them to deliver to the Commissioners for conserving of Peace, as you shall see Cause.

‘ You

\* The Earls of *Roxburgh*, *Morton*, *Annaudale*, *Kinnoul*, *Carnwath*, and *Lanerk*.



‘ You are to represent to the General Assembly An. 19. Car. I.  
 ‘ of *Scotland*, or to the Commissioners appointed 1643.  
 ‘ by them, the Care and Endeavours of both July.  
 ‘ Houses for a perfect Reformation in this Church,  
 ‘ and the happy Progress made by them therein;  
 ‘ for the better accomplishing whereof they have  
 ‘ called an Assembly of Godly and Learned Di-  
 ‘ vines, who are now sitting; and that, by reason  
 ‘ of the Prevalency of the Papists, Prelatical Fac-  
 ‘ tion, and other Malignant Enemies to this so  
 ‘ much desired Reformation, now in Arms against  
 ‘ the Parliament, these good Beginnings are like  
 ‘ to receive Interruption, if they be not utterly  
 ‘ disappointed: And therefore you are not only to  
 ‘ desire Assistance of that Reverend and Godly As-  
 ‘ sembly, for the carrying on this Work with their  
 ‘ Prayers, but also by such seasonable and effec-  
 ‘ tual Means, as to them shall seem meet; and  
 ‘ you are to co-operate with the States of the  
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland*, for the effecting of the  
 ‘ Desires of both Houses in the necessary Supplies  
 ‘ and Aid now desired of our Brethren.  
 ‘ You are also, according to the Desires of both  
 ‘ Houses, formerly express’d in their *Instructions*  
 ‘ to *John Corbet*, Esq; and now in their *Declara-*  
 ‘ *tion* to the General Assembly, to solicit the  
 ‘ speeding away of such and so many Reverend  
 ‘ and Godly Divines as they shall make Choice  
 ‘ of, to be Assistants in the Assembly called by  
 ‘ the two Houses.’

July 22. A Letter to the Speaker of the House  
 of Lords, from the Council of War, was read;  
 the Occasion of it will be best known from its  
 own Words:

My Lord, Brickhill, July 25, 1643.

**W**E have, after divers Addresses to the Houses, A Letter from  
 with Patience expected Recruits and Supplies the Council of  
 of Men, Horses, Saddles, and Arms, to enable us War, in the Earl  
 to do the State that Service which we most heartily of Essex's Army.  
 wish we could perform: And we have, in Modesty,  
 for-

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

July.

forborne to press the Necessity of the Armies upon your Lordships, so often as the Condition thereof required, till now we are driven to that Exigent that we can be no longer silent; we must therefore, to discharge that Trust reposed in us, make known unto your Lordships, That the Army is much decayed very suddenly, partly by the Mortality and Sicknes which hath befallen us, and which lieth still upon us; and partly for Want of Pay and Clothing, our Soldiers being grown bare, and many of them almost naked; and the Running away of our Soldiers is not the least Occasion of our Weakness, who are encouraged to leave us, out of a Report of raising new Armies, wherein they hope they shall be entertained.

We hold it, now, fit to make public the particular Condition of the Army; not knowing whether it will be more pleasing to their Lordships to refer the Information thereof to such as shall be appointed, by your Lordships, to receive the particular Relation thereof from those who are herewith sent to give a full Satisfaction therein: But thus much we shall be bold to say, That if a constant Course be not held that the Soldiers may be duly paid and better cloathed, and the Recruits of Men, Horse, Saddles, and Arms, may likewise be provided, it will be impossible for us to answer your Expectations, or discharge the Duties of our Place; whereof we have thought fit to give your Lordships timely Notice, that we may not, hereafter, have it laid to our Charge that we have dealt unfaithfully in concealing that which, in the End, and that too soon, will be the Destruction and Overthrow of this Army, if speedy Course be not taken to supply the Wants, and prevent our further Weakness, occasioned chiefly by those Particulars mentioned; some whereof will rest in your Lordship's Power to provide against.

My Lord, it concerning our Honour and the Safety of the Kingdom, we must deal plainly and clearly with you, That if a speedy Care be not had, there will not, in a few Days, be left the Face  
of



# Of ENGLAND. 349

*of an Army here amongst us : All which we refer* An. 19. Car. I. 1643.  
*to your Lordship's most serious and speedy Con-*  
*sideration, and rest*

Your Lordship's

July.

Humble Servants,

THOMAS GREY,	JA. HOLBORNE,
WILLIAM BROOKE,	LIONEL COPLEY,
JOHN MIDDLETON,	JOHN MERRICK,
HARRY BARCLAY,	PHIL. SKIPPON.
JOHN BURGOYN,	PHIL. STAPYLTON,
FRANCIS RUSSEL,	EDWARD ALDRICH,
THOMAS TYRRELL,	SAMUEL LUKE.

This Letter was ordered to be communicated to the Commons, at a Conference ; after which both Houses fell upon various Ways and Means to raise Money, of which they were then in great Want. They, also, agreed that a large Body of Horse should be raised ; and this Day, *July 25*, a long The Parliament Ordinance was read and agreed to for that Purpose. resolve to raise  
 This Army was to be commanded by the Earl of another under *Manchester*, and was, as it is declared in the Or- the Earl of Man-  
*dinance*, to prevent the great Mischiefs done by the King's Horse, his Army being said to be vastly superior in that Kind of Force.

The rest of the Transactions of this Month, any way relative to our Design, will be comprised in a very little Room.—Sir *John Conyers*, Lieutenant of the *Tower*, having asked Leave of both Houses to go into *Holland*, with his Lady, for two Months, it was agreed to ; and the Lord Mayor and the two Sheriffs of *London* were appointed to execute that Office till the other's Return. Sir *William Waller*, also, having lost his own Army in the *West*, was authorized to command all the Militia in and about *London*.

The Earl of *Portland* and the Lord *Conway*, having now lain as Prisoners seven Weeks, on the single Testimony of Mr. *Waller* against them, were, by the Lords, admitted to Bail. The Earl  
of



### 350 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

of *Denbigh* and the Lord *Hunsdon* for the former, and the Earl of *Bedford* and Lord *Howard of Effrick* for the latter, in 1000*l.* each; to be forfeited to the King, if, after Notice, they did not appear before the Parliament in three Days Time.

July 31. To close this Month, we shall give an authentic Proof of the Weakness the Parliament was reduced to at this Time, from their Lord-General *Essex's Propositions*; which were delivered to the Earl of *Northumberland*, by some Officers of the Army, sent on purpose to the Committee of Safety; and by the said Earl again presented to the House of Lords, as a Matter deserving the most serious Regard of both Houses of Parliament. They bore this Title:

CONSIDERATIONS to be offered to the Parliament, concerning the Weakness of the Army, and the EXPEDIENTS for Remedy thereof.

The Earl of Essex's Proposals for reinforcing his Army.

THE Number of Foot are 3000 marching Men, and at least 3000 sick, occasioned by the Want of Pay, ill Cloathing, and all other Miseries which attend an unpaid sickly Army.  
The Number of the Horse 2500, (3000 last Muster) occasioned by the Loss of Horses upon hard Duty and Service, and other Casualties incident to Horse in Service; Recruits of Horse, though often desired, not performed. Besides, by reason of a new Army being raised, the Officers find themselves neglected, the present Regiments much lessened, listing themselves elsewhere for the new Army, expecting better Pay and Cloathing; and, upon their going hence, are entertained and protected: And great Discouragements and Scandals put upon his Excellency, the Officers, and Army, either through false Suggestions of some amongst us, or the Misunderstanding of others; poisoning the Affections of the People, which hinders Recruits and Contributions.

As

‘ As Remedies for which Mischiefs we offer these Things :

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

July.

1. ‘ A speedy Pay of Arrears, and a constant Pay settled for the future ; which will draw on Recruits, and give Way to more strict Discipline : And that Cloaths may be provided according to 1000 for every Regiment : To which Purpose an *Ordinance* for a Prefs may be immediately passed.

2. ‘ That 500 Horſe be ſent, and 200 provided, monthly, for Recruits.

3. ‘ That the Forces to be raiſed may not be put into a new Army untill the old Regiments be recruited : No Officer or Soldier to be entertained into any other Employment : And that ſevere Punishment be executed upon ſuch, and thoſe that entertain them.

4. ‘ That ſuch as ſhall be found guilty of any Scandals laid upon his Excellency, any of his Officers, or Army, may be ſeverely puniſhed ; whereby the like Offences may be no more committed : And a *Declaration* of both Houſes paſſed, for the Vindication of his Excellency and them.

5. ‘ That full Power having been given to his Excellency, by an *Ordinance* of both Houſes, for the granting of all Commiſſions for the raiſing or commanding of any Forces, Towns, or Garrisons : It is conceived moſt requiſite, for the better ordering of the Army, that no Commiſſion be granted whatſoever, but from his Excellency ; the Want of which breeds Diſobedience to his Excellency's Commands, to the Prejudice of the Kingdom.

6. ‘ That the Loſs of the *Weſt* is rumoured to be occaſioned by his Excellency. Deſired, it may be thoroughly examined what the Loſs was, and the Occaſion of it.’

July 28, 1643.

E S S E X.

The



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August.

The Lords taking these *Considerations* into serious Debate, came to the following *Resolutions*:

1. ' That the Lord-General's Army shall be recruited in the first Place, by all possible Means; and, for the speedier expediting thereof, their Lordships think it fit that an *Ordinance* of both Houses be passed for pressing of Soldiers.

2. ' That a *Declaration* be published, to vindicate the Lord-General, his Commanders and Officers, from Scandals and Aspersions.

3. ' That a *Declaration* may be published, that no Commander, or Soldier, of the Lord-General's Army, shall be entertained in the City, or any other Place; if they be seen there they shall be punished.

4. ' That such Persons, that shall be employed in the Army under the Lord-General, shall be under his Command, and receive their Commissions from him.

5. ' That it be recommended to the House of Commons, to provide for the paying the Arrears of the Army, and to recruit him with 200 Horses monthly.

6. ' That their Lordships hold it fit that the Rumour of losing the *West* be examined.'

*Ordered*, That these *Considerations* and *Remedies*, with the Sense of this House, shall be communicated to the House of Commons at a Conference, and their Concurrence herein desired.

*August 3.* Many Alterations had been made, from Time to Time, in the Parliament's *Ordinance* for the general Weekly Assessment, as well as in that for sequestering Delinquents Estates, &c. occasioned chiefly by a wrong Interpretation of these new Acts of Power, or the Partiality of the Collectors. To remedy which, the former *Ordinance* was now regulated, and put on a Footing to stand throughout *England* and *Wales*; and, this Day, being agreed to by both Houses, was ordered to be printed and published. This *Ordinance* which is neither in *Rushworth's Collections*, nor  
Huf-



*Husband's*, nor in any other that we have seen, we An. 19. Car. I.  
give from the *Lords Journals*. 1643.

The Preamble runs thus :

August.

‘ **T**HE Lords and Commons now assembled in An Ordinance  
‘ Parliament, being fully satisfied, and re- for laying a  
‘ solved in their Consciences, that they have law- Weekly Asses-  
‘ fully taken up Arms, and may and ought to ment, through-  
‘ continue the same for the necessary Defence of out England and  
‘ the true Reformed Religion, of themselves and Wales, for car-  
‘ the Parliament, from Violence and Destruction, rying on the War.  
‘ and of this Kingdom from foreign Invasion, and  
‘ for the bringing of notorious Offenders to con-  
‘ dign Punishment ; which are the only Causes for  
‘ which they have raised, and do continue, an  
‘ Army and Force, which cannot possibly be main-  
‘ tained, nor the Kingdom subsist, without the  
‘ speedy raising of large and considerable Sums of  
‘ Money, proportionable to the great Expences  
‘ which now this Kingdom is at, for the support-  
‘ ing of the said Army, and for the saving of the  
‘ whole Kingdom, our Religion, Laws, and Liber-  
‘ ties, from utter Ruin and Destruction : Which  
‘ that it may be done with as much Ease and In-  
‘ difference to the good Subjects, as the Exigence  
‘ of the Time will permit, the said Lords and  
‘ Commons do ordain, &c.

*The enacting Clauses, in which, for Brevity's  
Sake, we have left out the Words of Form,  
run thus :*

‘ That for the several Purposes aforesaid, the  
‘ weekly Sums of Money hereafter mentioned, shall  
‘ be levied upon all the Counties, Cities, Towns,  
‘ Liberties, Places, and Persons hereafter mention-  
‘ ed, according to the Proportions herein express'd,  
‘ to be paid in weekly to the Collectors appointed  
‘ for receiving thereof.

	L.	s.
Bedfordshire, ——— —	220	00
Berkshire, ——— —	550	00
Buckinghamshire, ——— —	420	00
Cambridgeshire, ——— —	375	00
Isle of Ely, ——— —	147	10
Cheshire, ——— —		

# 354 The Parliamentary History

Ann. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August.

	L.	s.
<i>Cheshire,</i>	175	00
City of <i>Chester</i> and County thereof	62	00
<i>Cornwal,</i>	625	00
<i>Cumberland,</i>	37	10
<i>Derbysire,</i>	175	00
<i>Devonsire,</i>	1800	00
City of <i>Exeter</i> and County thereof,	50	10
<i>Dorsetshire,</i>	705	00
<i>Durham,</i>	62	10
<i>Essex</i>	1125	00
<i>Gloucestershire,</i>	750	00
City of <i>Gloucester</i> , and County thereof,	62	10
<i>Hampshire</i> , with the City of <i>Winche-</i> <i>ster</i> , <i>Southampton</i> , and the Isle of <i>Wight</i> ,	750	00
<i>Herefordshire</i> , and City of <i>Hereford</i> ,	437	10
<i>Hertfordshire</i>	450	00
<i>Huntingdonshire,</i>	220	00
<i>Kent</i> , with the Cities there	1250	00
<i>Lancashire,</i>	500	00
<i>Leicestershire,</i>	187	10
<i>Lincolnshire</i> , with the City of <i>Lincoln</i>	812	10
<i>Middlesex</i> , and the City and Liberty of <i>Westminster</i> ,	750	00
<i>Monmouthshire,</i>	62	10
<i>Norfolk</i> , with the City of <i>Norwich</i> ,	1250	00
<i>Northumberland,</i>	50	00
<i>Newcastle upon Tyne,</i>	25	00
<i>Northamptonshire,</i>	425	00
<i>Nottinghamshire,</i>	187	10
<i>Oxfordshire,</i>	400	00
<i>Rutlandshire,</i>	62	10
<i>Salop,</i>	375	00
<i>Somersetshire,</i>	1050	00
City of <i>Bristol</i> ,	55	15
<i>Staffordshire,</i>	212	10
City of <i>Litchfield</i> ,	45	00
<i>Suffolk,</i>	1250	00
<i>Surrey</i> , with the Borough of <i>Southwark</i> ,	500	00
<i>Sussex,</i>	625	00

War-



# Of ENGLAND. 355

	L.	s.	An. 19. Car. L.
Warwickshire, ——— —	562	10	1643.
Coventry, County and City thereof	37	10	August.
Westmoreland, ——— —	27	05	
Wiltshire, ——— —	725	00	
Worcestershire ——— —	150	00	
Worcester, City and County thereof,	16	13	
Yorkshire, ——— —	1062	10	
York City, and County thereof, —	62	00	
Kingston upon Hull, — —	25	00	

## W A L E S.

Anglesey, ——— —	25	00
Brecknock, — — —	50	10
Cardigan, ——— —	62	10
Carmarthen, ——— —	50	00
Carnarvan, — — —	30	00
Denbigh, ——— —	25	00
Flint, ——— —	16	10
Glamorgan, — — —	67	10
Merioneth, — — —	12	10
Montgomery, ——— —	62	10
Pembroke, ——— —	50	00
Haverford-West, — — —	5	00
Radnor, ——— —	37	10

Every Person of the Estate of a Baron or Barons, and every Estate above, and every other Person born within *England, Wales*, or other the King's Dominions, as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal; and every Corporation, Fraternity, Guild, Mystery, Brotherhood and Commonalty, Corporate or not Corporate, shall pay towards the Weekly Sum so assessed upon each County, according as the same shall be tax'd upon the respective Town, Hamlet, Parish, or Place where such Person is chargeable, his respective Proportion for whatsoever he hath to his own proper Use, as well in Coin as in Plate, Stock of Merchandize, or any Manner of Corn, Grain, Household Stuff, and of all other Goods and Moveables, as well within this Realm as without, and of all such Sums of Money as to him is



# 356 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
August.

owing, whereof he trusts in his Conscience to be paid, except Money that he doth owe; and, in his Conscience intends truly to pay; and except also the Apparel of every such Person, their Wives and Children, belonging to their own Bodies, saving Jewels, Gold, Silver, Stones, Pearl: And every Alien and Stranger, born out of the King's Obedience, as well Denizens as others, inhabiting within this Realm; and also every Popish Recusant, convict or not convict, shall pay a Proportion double to those of the like Estates, being no Aliens or Recusants.

Every Person born within the King's Obedience, as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal; and every Corporation, Fraternity, &c. shall also, for every Estate which such Person, Corporation, Fraternity, &c. or any other to their Use, in Trust or otherwise, hath, in Fee-Simple, Fee-Tail, or Term of Life, Term of Years, by Executorship, Wardship, or by Copy of Court-Roll, in any Honours, Castles, Manors, Lands, Tenements, Rents, Services, Tythes, Obligations, Obventions, Annuities, Offices of Profit, Fees, Corrodies, or other yearly Profits or Hereditaments, as well within antient Demesne and other Places privileged, as elsewhere, shall pay towards the said Weekly Sums his Proportion thereof as charged upon each County as aforesaid, according to the true Intent and Meaning of this *Ordinance*. Excepted always from this Assessment, all the Goods, Chattels, and Ornaments belonging to any Church or Chapel for the Service of Almighty God; and except yearly Wages due to Servants.

And the said several Sums so charged upon the several Counties, Cities, &c. shall be rated before the tenth Day of *August*, 1643; and the said Weekly Payments are to continue for two Months (accounting 28 Days to the Month) next ensuing, from the said tenth Day of *August*, unless the King's Army shall be disbanded in the mean Time.

*Next*

*Next follow the Names of the Commissioners An. 19. Car. I.  
for executing this Ordinance in each County, &c. but these, being mostly the same with  
those appointed for the Sequestration of Delinquents Estates, before given at large, we  
pass over, and proceed with our Abstract of  
the Ordinance.*

1643.

August.

‘ The Commissioners of the several Counties  
‘ and Places, or the greatest Part of them, shall,  
‘ with all convenient Speed, after Notice of this  
‘ Ordinance, meet together in some convenient  
‘ Place within their several Counties and Places ;  
‘ and may there agree to divide themselves, for  
‘ the Execution of the said Service, into such  
‘ Hundreds, Places, and Divisions within their re-  
‘ spective Counties, &c. as to them shall seem  
‘ expedient ; and afterwards they, or any two of  
‘ them, respectively, shall direct their Warrants  
‘ to such Number of Persons as they shall think  
‘ fit, within their several Divisions, to appear be-  
‘ fore them ; and, upon their Appearance, the said  
‘ Commissioners, or any two of them, shall ap-  
‘ point such Persons as they think fit within their  
‘ respective Divisions, who shall have Power to  
‘ assess every Person, Corporation, Fraternity, &c.  
‘ according to the Weekly Rates and Proportions  
‘ in this Ordinance mentioned.

‘ And the respective Commissioners, or any  
‘ two of them, shall have Power within their re-  
‘ spective Limits, to nominate Collectors for the  
‘ Money so assess’d, who shall pay the same to  
‘ the Treasurers of the Army, raised by the Par-  
‘ liament, for the Time being, at Guildhall, Lon-  
‘ don ; or at such Place, or to such Persons, as the  
‘ said Commissioners shall appoint : And if any  
‘ Person, Corporation, Fraternity, &c. shall refuse  
‘ to pay the Sums upon them assess’d, or shall not  
‘ pay the same upon Demand at the Place of his  
‘ Abode, or where such Assessment shall be made,  
‘ it shall be lawful for the Collectors, or any two  
‘ of them, to levy all Sums so assess’d by way of



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

August.

## 358 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

‘ Distress and Sale of their Goods, wherever the  
‘ same shall be found; and to break open any  
‘ House, Chest, Trunk, Box, or any other Thing  
‘ wherein such Goods are; and if any Person so  
‘ distrained shall make Resistance, it shall be law-  
‘ ful for the said Collectors, as they shall see Cause,  
‘ to call to their Assistance any of the Train’d  
‘ Bands, or Companies of Volunteers, or other  
‘ Forces, within the County or Place where such  
‘ Resistance shall be made, or any other Person  
‘ dwelling in or near the Place; and the said  
‘ Train’d Bands, &c. are required to be assisting  
‘ to the said Collectors at their Peril.

‘ Every Person shall be rated, in every County,  
‘ for the Estate he hath, either in Lands, Tene-  
‘ ments, Hereditaments, Rents, Annuities, Fees,  
‘ Offices, Goods, Cattle, or Chattels in that Coun-  
‘ ty only; and if he has an Estate, either in  
‘ Lands, Tenements, &c. in more Counties than  
‘ one, then to be rated in each County according  
‘ to such his Estate.

‘ All Lands, Tenements, &c. of every Person,  
‘ of what Degree soever, shall be rated towards  
‘ raising of the said Weekly Sum charged by this  
‘ Ordinance; with this Proviso, That if the Lands  
‘ be set at, or lett near, the yearly Value thereof,  
‘ in the Possession of any Tenant for Life, Lives,  
‘ Years, or at Will, such Person, to whom the  
‘ Rent thereof belongeth, to be solely chargeable  
‘ therewith; but if the same be lett at any Under-  
‘ Value, then the Sum taxed to be apportioned  
‘ between the Party to whom the Rent belongeth  
‘ and the Tenant thereof, as the Taxers shall think  
‘ meet; and if any of them shall do any Injury,  
‘ the same to be rectified by the Commissioners,  
‘ or any two of them, within their several Limits,  
‘ according to their Discretion: And if any such  
‘ Tenant of Lands, &c. shall be charged with  
‘ any Sum, contrary to the true Meaning of this  
‘ Ordinance, it shall be lawful for such Tenant  
‘ to stop the same out of his Rent due for the same  
‘ Lands, or to take his lawful Remedy against such  
‘ Per-



‘ Person to whom the said Rent is due, (who ought  
‘ by the true Meaning of this *Ordinance*, to be  
‘ charged therewith) by Action of Debt, wherein  
‘ no Wager of Law, Protection, or Essoign shall  
‘ be allowed.

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

August.

‘ All Persons having any Debts or Sums of Mo-  
‘ ney owing to them within this Realm, or any  
‘ Debts, Goods, or Sums of Money beyond the  
‘ Seas, out of his Majesty’s Dominions, shall be  
‘ charged for the same in the Place of his Resi-  
‘ dence at the Time of the Taxation.

‘ No Person having two Mansions to resort to,  
‘ and calling himself Household Servant or Waiting  
‘ Servant to the King’s Majesty or other Persons,  
‘ shall be excused from Payment to this Assess-  
‘ ment: And if any Person, by Craft, happen to  
‘ escape from the said Payment, according to the  
‘ true Meaning of this *Ordinance*, and that proved  
‘ before the said Commissioners, or any two of  
‘ them, then every such Person shall be charged  
‘ the treble Value of so much as he should have  
‘ been taxed at; and the same to be levied by Dis-  
‘ tress and Sale of his Goods: And if no Distress  
‘ be found, then the said Collectors shall respectively  
‘ have Power to enquire for any Money, due or to  
‘ be due to the Persons so assess’d, for any Rents  
‘ or Goods whatsoever, and to compound for any  
‘ of the said Rents, Goods, &c. with any Person  
‘ by whom they are due; also to give a full Dis-  
‘ charge for the Money by them so received upon  
‘ Composition, or otherwise; which Discharge  
‘ shall be valid to all Intents and Purposes.

‘ If any Person shall find himself over-rated,  
‘ such Person, before Distress taken, may complain  
‘ to the Commissioners within that Division, which  
‘ Commissioners, or any two of them, shall have  
‘ Power to give Relief as they shall see Cause; and  
‘ if any Person so aggrieved, be such as have not  
‘ formerly contributed to the *Propositions*, or not  
‘ paid upon the *Ordinance* for assessing of such as  
‘ have not contributed at all, or not contributed

ac-

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

August.

‘ according to the Proportion of their Estates, then  
‘ the said Parties, if they be not assess’d above a  
‘ proportionable Part as other Men of their Abi-  
‘ lity have paid upon the *Propositions*, or have paid  
‘ upon the said *Ordinance*, not exceeding the twen-  
‘ tieth Part, the Rates so assess’d to stand without  
‘ Appeal : Provided that no Person be assess’d a-  
‘ bove the Sum of 10 *l.* the Week.

‘ And for the Encouragement of the Collectors,  
‘ Three-pence in the Pound shall be allowed for  
‘ every Sum paid to the Receivers appointed by  
‘ this *Ordinance*, Two-pence whereof shall be al-  
‘ lowed to the Collectors, and the Residue to such  
‘ other Persons as shall be employed in the said  
‘ Service, according to the Discretion of the Com-  
‘ missioners.

‘ And that all the Monies assess’d may be col-  
‘ lected, the respective Assessors shall, within one  
‘ Week after their respective Assessments made, re-  
‘ turn their several Assessments to the Commission-  
‘ ers for their respective Divisions ; who are hereby  
‘ required, within ten Days after, to deliver a Copy  
‘ thereof, subscribed with their Hands, to the Col-  
‘ lectors within their Divisions ; and also to send  
‘ up another Copy to the Treasurer of the Army,  
‘ raised by the Parliament, for the Time being,  
‘ that the said Treasurer may know thereby what  
‘ he is to receive of every Parish, &c. within the  
‘ Realm ; which Sums shall be paid to the said  
‘ Treasurer at *Guildhall, London.*

‘ And if any Assessors or Collectors shall refuse  
‘ the said Service, or be faulty therein, the Com-  
‘ missioners for the Divisions where such are, shall  
‘ have Power to commit them to Prison, or to set  
‘ such a Fine upon them as they shall think fit, not  
‘ exceeding the Sum of 20 *l.* upon the Assessor,  
‘ or the Sum of 5 *l.* upon the Collector, the same  
‘ to be levied by Distress and Sale : And if any  
‘ Person so assess’d as aforesaid, shall conceal his  
‘ Goods, so that no Distress can be taken, or the  
‘ Sum so assess’d levied by any the Ways in this  
‘ Or-



‘ *Ordinance* mentioned, then the Collectors shall  
 ‘ certify the same ; in case he be a Peer, unto the  
 ‘ Lords in Parliament ; and, if he be under that  
 ‘ Degree, to the Committee of Lords and Com-  
 ‘ mons appointed for the Advance of Monies ;  
 ‘ which Committee shall have Power to send for  
 ‘ such Persons as Delinquents, and commit them  
 ‘ Prisoners to such Place within this Kingdom,  
 ‘ and for so long a Time, as the Committee for  
 ‘ Examinations shall think fit.

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 August.

‘ All the Assessors and Collectors, and all that  
 ‘ shall assist them in the Premises, shall be protect-  
 ‘ ed, by both Houses of Parliament, from all Da-  
 ‘ mage that may come to them by this Service ;  
 ‘ and shall further receive such Allowances for their  
 ‘ Charge, and Obedience in the Execution of this  
 ‘ *Ordinance*, as, upon Certificate from the Com-  
 ‘ missioners, or any two of them, shall be thought  
 ‘ fit by the Committee of the House of Commons  
 ‘ for Examinations.

‘ Lastly, Where no Commissioners are named  
 ‘ in this *Ordinance* for any County, &c. such other  
 ‘ Commissioners as are appointed by Parliament  
 ‘ shall put this present *Ordinance* in Execution  
 ‘ within any such County, &c.

‘ Provided that no Peer of this Realm shall,  
 ‘ by virtue of this *Ordinance*, be rated for any of  
 ‘ his Mansion-houses, with the Appurtenances, in  
 ‘ any Place whatsoever ; but that the Assessors shall  
 ‘ certify the same unto the House of Peers, that  
 ‘ such Peers may be there rated for the same ac-  
 ‘ cording to this *Ordinance*.

‘ And whereas, by this *Ordinance*, the Inhabi-  
 ‘ tants of the City of *London* are not to be rated,  
 ‘ in respect of the great Proportion laid upon them  
 ‘ by the late Weekly Assessment for three Months,  
 ‘ it is now ordered, That those Persons within the  
 ‘ said City of *London*, which have not paid the said  
 ‘ Assessment, formerly rated on them, shall, in  
 ‘ case they pay not the same within twenty Days  
 ‘ after the Date of this *Ordinance*, be rated for the

‘ Space



An. 19. Car. I. 'Space of two Months as other Counties, by this  
1643. 'Ordinance, are to be.'

August,

Aug. 4. The Lords received Letters from the Lord *Willoughby* of *Parham*, dated *August 1*, but not entered in their *Journals*, giving an Account of the ill State and Condition the Parliament's Forces were in, in those Parts of *Lincolnshire* where he commanded: Desiring present Relief, both of Men and Money, else he could not defend them against the Earl of *Newcastle's* Army. It was ordered to be communicated to the House of Commons.

The same Day the Earl of *Northumberland*, from the Committee appointed to consider of Means for settling the present Distractions of the Kingdom, reported, That they had considered of a *Petition* to be presented to his Majesty, from both Houses, to that Purpose; which being read, and after Debate agreed to, a Message was sent to the Lower House, to desire a Conference with them the next Morning.

Aug. 5. The Lords took into further Consideration their *Propositions* for *Peace*, and ordered that their Speaker should introduce them to the Commons, at the Conference, with this Preface:

Gentlemen,

Preamble to the  
Lords Propositions  
for Peace.

THE Lords believe it too visible to the Understanding of all Persons, that this Kingdom, with all those Blessings of Plenty and Abundance, the Fruits of our long and happy Peace, must be forthwith turned into that Desolation and Famine which accompany a Civil War: And that those Hands and Hearts, that should support this Land, do now endanger it by unnatural Divisions: Which Considerations have moved the Lords to send Propositions again to his Majesty, in which they do desire your Concurrence; the Reasonableness and Justice of them being such, that, if they be rejected, our Cause will there-

thereby be strengthened, and the Kingdom encouraged An. 19. Car. I.  
to preserve themselves in their just Rights. 1643.

August.

But tho' we are told the Conference was held this Day, yet the Report of it is not entered in the *Journals*, nor does it appear from those Authorities what the *Propositions* of Peace were. Mr. *Whitlocke* passes over this whole Affair in Silence. Mr. *Rushworth*, indeed, gives us a *Petition* from the City of *London* against them, but nothing more. This Deficiency is very luckily supplied by Lord *Clarendon*, who has not only given us the *Propositions* themselves, but also the Arguments urged in the House of Commons for and against them. The Neglect of the other Cotemporaries, in a Point of so great Importance, is a sufficient Apology for our giving his Lordship's Account of this Matter, though he was not, nor could not be, present at the Debate\*.

The Particulars proposed by the Lords were :

1. ' That both Armies might be presently dis- The Articles  
' banded, and his Majesty be entreated to return thereof.  
' to his Parliament, upon such Security as should  
' give him Satisfaction.
2. ' That Religion might be settled with the  
' Advice of a Synod of Divines, in such a Manner  
' as his Majesty, with the Consent of both Houses  
' of Parliament, should appoint.
3. ' That the Militia, both by Sea and Land,  
' might be settled by a Bill ; and the Militia,  
' Forts, and Ships of the Kingdom, put into such  
' Hands as the King should appoint, with the  
' Approbation of both Houses of Parliament ; and  
' his Majesty's Revenue to be absolutely and  
' wholly restored unto him, only deducting such  
' Part as had been of Necessity expended for the  
' Maintenance of his Children, and not other-  
' wise.
4. ' That all the Members of both Houses,  
' who had been expelled only for absenting them-  
' selves

\* History, Vol. III. 8vo. Edit. p. 318.



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August,

‘ selves, or meer Compliance with his Majesty,  
 ‘ and no other Matter of Fact against them,  
 ‘ might be restored to their Places.

5. ‘ That all Delinquents, from before the  
 ‘ 10th Day of *January*, 1641, should be deli-  
 ‘ vered up to the Justice of Parliament, and a Ge-  
 ‘ neral Pardon for all others on both Sides.

6. ‘ And lastly, That there might be an Act  
 ‘ of Oblivion for all by-gone Deeds and Acts of  
 ‘ Hostility.’

Debate thereon  
 in the House of  
 Commons;

‘ When this Conference was reported in the  
 House of Commons, it begot a wonderful long  
 and a hot Debate, which lasted till Ten o’Clock  
 that Night, and continued a Day or two more;  
 the violent Party (for there were yet many among  
 them of more moderate Constitutions, who did,  
 and ever had, heartily abhorred their Proceedings,  
 though, out of Fear, or Indisposition of Health,  
 or not knowing else well what to do, they conti-  
 nued there) inveighed furiously against the Design  
 itself of sending to the King at all, and therefore  
 would not have the particular *Propositions* so much  
 as considered: ‘ They had received much Preju-  
 ‘ dice by the last *Treaty* at *Oxford*, and therefore  
 ‘ must undergo more now their Condition was much  
 ‘ lower; the King had since that, upon the Mat-  
 ‘ ter, declared them to be no Parliament; for if they  
 ‘ were not free, they could not be a Parliament;  
 ‘ so that till that Point were vindicated, they could  
 ‘ not treat in any safe Capacity, but would be look’d  
 ‘ upon under the Notion of Rebels, as his Majesty  
 ‘ had declar’d them. They had sent Members  
 ‘ into *Scotland* to require Assistance, which that  
 ‘ Kingdom was preparing with all Brotherly Af-  
 ‘ fection and Forwardness; and, after such a Dif-  
 ‘ covery, to treat for *Peace*, without the Privy of  
 ‘ the *Scots*, was to betray them, and to forfeit  
 ‘ all Hopes hereafter of Relief from thence, what  
 ‘ Necessities soever they might be reduced to. That  
 ‘ the City of *London* had expressed all imaginable  
 ‘ Readiness to raise Forces for Sir *William Waller*;  
 ‘ and



‘and the Counties near *London* were ready to rise  
 ‘as one Man; whereby the Earl of *Essex* would  
 ‘be speedily enabled to march, with a better Ar-  
 ‘my than ever he had, to give the King Battle,  
 ‘except this Discourse of *Peace* did extinguish the  
 ‘Zeal that was then flaming in the Hearts of the  
 ‘People.’

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 August.

‘But notwithstanding these Reasons, and the  
 Passion in the Delivery, the Terror of the King’s  
 Successes suggested Answers enough: ‘They had  
 ‘been punished for breaking off the *Treaty* of  
 ‘*Oxford*, when they might have had better Terms  
 ‘than now they could expect; and if they omit-  
 ‘ted this Opportunity, they should fare much  
 ‘worse; that they were not sure of Aid from *Scot-*  
 ‘*land*, neither was it almost possible it should come  
 ‘Time enough to preserve them from the Ruin  
 ‘at Hand: And for the City of *London*, tho’ the  
 ‘common and meaner Sort of People, who might  
 ‘promise themselves Advantage by it, desired the  
 ‘Continuance of the Distractions, yet it was evi-  
 ‘dent the most substantial and rich Men desired  
 ‘*Peace*, by their Refusal to supply Money for the  
 ‘carrying on the War; and if they should judge  
 ‘of the Common People by their Forwardness  
 ‘to engage their own Persons, they had Reason  
 ‘to believe they had no mind to the War neither;  
 ‘for their General was forced to retire even under  
 ‘their own Walls, for Want of Men to recruit his  
 ‘Army. However, the sending reasonable *Pro-*  
 ‘*positions* to the King, would either procure a  
 ‘*Peace*, and so they should have no more need  
 ‘of an Army; or, being refused, would raise more  
 ‘Men and Money than all their *Ordinances* with-  
 ‘out it.’ These Reasons and Arguments prevail-  
 ed; and after the Debate had lasted till Ten of  
 the Clock at Night, it was resolved upon the  
 Question, and carried by Twenty-nine Voices\*,

‘That

\* This Circumstance is confirm’d by the *Commons Journals*; wherein we find the Numbers for taking the Lords *Propositions* into Consideration were 94. Against it, 65. The Tellers for the Question, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Evelyn*; against it, Mr. *Martin* and Mr. *Strode*.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August,

‘ selves, or meer Compliance with his Majesty,  
 ‘ and no other Matter of Fact against them,  
 ‘ might be restored to their Places.

5. ‘ That all Delinquents, from before the  
 ‘ 10th Day of *January*, 1641, should be deli-  
 ‘ vered up to the Justice of Parliament, and a Ge-  
 ‘ neral Pardon for all others on both Sides.

6. ‘ And lastly, That there might be an Act  
 ‘ of Oblivion for all by-gone Deeds and Acts of  
 ‘ Hostility.’

Debate thereon  
 in the House of  
 Commons;

‘ When this Conference was reported in the  
 House of Commons, it begot a wonderful long  
 and a hot Debate, which lasted till Ten o’Clock  
 that Night, and continued a Day or two more;  
 the violent Party (for there were yet many among  
 them of more moderate Constitutions, who did,  
 and ever had, heartily abhorred their Proceedings,  
 though, out of Fear, or Indisposition of Health,  
 or not knowing else well what to do, they continu-  
 ed there) inveighed furiously against the Design  
 itself of sending to the King at all, and therefore  
 would not have the particular *Propositions* so much  
 as considered: ‘ They had received much Preju-  
 ‘ dice by the last *Treaty* at *Oxford*, and therefore  
 ‘ must undergo more now their Condition was much  
 ‘ lower; the King had since that, upon the Mat-  
 ‘ ter, declared them to be no Parliament; for if they  
 ‘ were not free, they could not be a Parliament;  
 ‘ so that till that Point were vindicated, they could  
 ‘ not treat in any safe Capacity, but would be look’d  
 ‘ upon under the Notion of Rebels, as his Majesty  
 ‘ had declar’d them. They had sent Members  
 ‘ into *Scotland* to require Assistance, which that  
 ‘ Kingdom was preparing with all Brotherly Af-  
 ‘ fection and Forwardness; and, after such a Dis-  
 ‘ covery, to treat for *Peace*, without the Privy of  
 ‘ the *Scots*, was to betray them, and to forfeit  
 ‘ all Hopes hereafter of Relief from thence, what  
 ‘ Necessities soever they might be reduced to. That  
 ‘ the City of *London* had expressed all imaginable  
 ‘ Readiness to raise Forces for Sir *William Waller*;  
 ‘ and



‘and the Counties near *London* were ready to rise  
 ‘as one Man; whereby the Earl of *Essex* would  
 ‘be speedily enabled to march, with a better Ar-  
 ‘my than ever he had, to give the King Battle,  
 ‘except this Discourse of *Peace* did extinguish the  
 ‘Zeal that was then flaming in the Hearts of the  
 ‘People.’

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 August.

‘But notwithstanding these Reasons, and the  
 Passion in the Delivery, the Terror of the King’s  
 Successes suggested Answers enough: ‘They had  
 ‘been punished for breaking off the *Treaty* of  
 ‘*Oxford*, when they might have had better Terms  
 ‘than now they could expect; and if they omit-  
 ‘ted this Opportunity, they should fare much  
 ‘worse; that they were not sure of Aid from *Scot-*  
 ‘*land*, neither was it almost possible it should come  
 ‘Time enough to preserve them from the Ruin  
 ‘at Hand: And for the City of *London*, tho’ the  
 ‘common and meaner Sort of People, who might  
 ‘promise themselves Advantage by it, desired the  
 ‘Continuance of the Distractions, yet it was evi-  
 ‘dent the most substantial and rich Men desired  
 ‘*Peace*, by their Refusal to supply Money for the  
 ‘carrying on the War; and if they should judge  
 ‘of the Common People by their Forwardness  
 ‘to engage their own Persons, they had Reason  
 ‘to believe they had no mind to the War neither;  
 ‘for their General was forced to retire even under  
 ‘their own Walls, for Want of Men to recruit his  
 ‘Army. However, the sending reasonable *Pro-*  
 ‘*positions* to the King, would either procure a  
 ‘*Peace*, and so they should have no more need  
 ‘of an Army; or, being refused, would raise more  
 ‘Men and Money than all their *Ordinances* with-  
 ‘out it.’ These Reasons and Arguments prevail-  
 ‘ed; and after the Debate had lasted till Ten of  
 ‘the Clock at Night, it was resolved upon the  
 ‘Question, and carried by Twenty-nine Voices\*,  
 ‘That

\* This Circumstance is confirm’d by the *Commons Journals*; wherein we find the Numbers for taking the Lords *Propositions* into Consideration were 94. Against it, 65. The Tellers for the Question, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Evelyn*; against it, Mr. *Martin* and Mr. *Strode*.



An. 19. Car. I. 1643. ' That they should insist upon the *Propositions*,  
 and send them to his Majesty.'

August.

Which being by  
 them, in some  
 Measure, appro-  
 ved of,

Lord *Clarendon* proceeds to remark, ' That, without doubt, if they had then sent, (as, if the Power had been in the two Houses of Parliament, they had done) a firm *Peace* had immediately ensued: For besides that, if a *Treaty* and *Cessation* had been in that *Conjuncture* enter'd upon, no extravagant Demand would have been pressed, only a Security for those who had been faulty, which the King would gladly have granted, and most religiously observed; the *Fourth Proposition*, and Consent to restore all Members to their Places in Parliament, would have prevented the kindling any more Fire in those Houses. But this was too well known to be suffered to pass; and, therefore, the next Day, being *Sunday*, the seditious Preachers fill'd all the Pulpits with Alarms of Ruin and Destruction to the City, if a *Peace* were now offered to the King; and printed Papers were scattered through the Streets, and fix'd upon Gates, Posts, and the most public Places in the City and Suburbs, requiring all Persons well affected to rise as one Man, and to come to the House of Commons next Morning, for that 20,000 *Irish* Rebels were landed; which Information was likewise given that Day in many Pulpits by their Preachers; and, in other Papers likewise set up, it was declared, That the Malignant Party had over-voted the Good, and, if not prevented, there would be a *Peace*.—Thus far the Noble Historian.

This Apprehension of a *Peace* so alarmed the leading Men in the City of *London*, that the Lord Mayor, (*Pennington*) who had been excepted by Name in the King's Offer of a General Pardon, call'd a Common Council at the *Guildhall* the same Evening, though on a *Sunday*; where a *Petition* against any *Accommodation*, and a Draught of an *Ordinance* for vigorously prosecuting the *War*, was agreed on to be presented to the House of Commons next Morning (*August 7.*): For tho' these

these *Propositions* for *Peace* took their Rise in the House of Lords, the Citizens did not offer any *Petition* to that House against them. Instead thereof we find that the Lords being met, they were informed that a great Concourse of People were gathered about their House, occasioned by several Papers printed and dispersed all over the City the Day before, inviting the People to come down in an unlawful Manner to *Westminster*: On which they agreed to have a Conference with the other House, to let them know, That their Lordships did account this Manner of coming down a great Breach of Privilege, and that they did adjourn their House till the next Morning; and that, if the Concourse of People still continued, they would adjourn themselves to a further Time. Likewise to desire the Commons to join with them, to find out who printed and dispersed those Papers, and who were the Authors of them, that they might be brought to condign Punishment.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
August.

A great Tumult  
is raised about  
both Houses,

In the Midst of this Tumult came down also a select Body of Aldermen and Common Council to *Westminster*, with the *Petition* before-mentioned; and the Commons being informed they were at the Door, they were called in, when Alderman *Atkins*, one of the Sheriffs, in the Name of all the rest, presented the following *Petition*:

And the City of  
London petition  
the Commons  
against any Ac-  
commodation;

To the Honourable the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses, of the Commons House, in Parliament assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of *London*, in Common Council assembled,

Sheweth,

**T**HAT your Petitioners having heard that such Propositions and Offers have been lately sent, from the House of Peers, to this Honourable House; which (as we greatly fear) if yielded unto, would be destructive to our Religion, Laws, and Liberties; and finding already, by Experience, that the Spirits  
of



## 368 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. of all the well-affected Party, in the City and  
 1643.  
 {  
 August, Counties adjacent, that are willing to assist the Parliament both in Person and Purse, are much dejected thereat; and the Brotherly Assistance from Scotland, as well as the Raising and Maintaining of Forces ourselves, thereby likely to be retarded; all which the Petitioners refer to your serious Consideration; and, considering our present sad Condition lies upon us in a special Manner, through the incensed Patience of the Almighty, by Delay and Want of Execution of Justice upon Traitors and Delinquents; and, having an Opportunity yet afforded us to speak, our Desires are,

That you would be pleased to persist in your former Resolutions, whereupon the People have so much depended, and wherein you have so deeply engaged yourselves, (though you should perish in the Work) that Justice may be done upon Offenders and Delinquents. And that, since we are as willing as ever to expose what we are, and have, for the crowning of so good a Cause, you will be pleased, by a speedy passing the Ordinance hereunto annexed, or one to this Effect, to put us in a probable Way for our and your Defence, wherein your Petitioners will, by the Blessing of God, never be wanting; but shall ever pray, &c.

Who thereupon  
 reject the Lords  
 Propositions for  
 Peace.

The Commons, after having read the *Petition* and *Ordinance*, first returned the Citizens hearty Thanks for their great Expressions of Care for the Safety of the Common-wealth, &c. Next ordered their Committee, formerly appointed to meet with the City's concerning the Militia, to receive such Propositions as shall be offered them, for the Safety of the City and Peace of the Kingdom: To prepare a Draught of an Ordinance upon them, and present it to the House. They then proceeded to take into Consideration the *Propositions* for Peace sent from the Lords; and, after a very long Debate, the House divided on this Question



tion, Whether they should take those *Propositions* into a more particular Consideration? The Yeas went out, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Holland*, Tellers for the Yeas, and Sir *Robert Harley* with Sir *Thomas Barrington*, for and with the Noes; who brought in the Number of 81 of the former, and 79 of the latter. This near Division occasioned a stricter Scrutiny; for the House, not being satisfied with the Report of the Tellers, divided again, when the Number of the Yeas that went forth were 81, as before, but the Number of the Noes that sat amounted now to 88. A very odd Circumstance, unless we may suppose that nine Members came into the House at that Interval.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
August.

Thus all Hope of an *Accommodation*, between King and Parliament, was stopped by the Commons; for another Question arising at the same Time, Whether that House would concur with the Lords in their *Propositions*, or not? it passed in the Negative without any Division\*. But the Commons, to soften the Harshness of this *Vote* to the Lords, appointed a Committee to prepare Reasons to be offered to them, why they dissented from them; and particularly to desire their Lordships, at the next Conference, *not to desert the Defence of the Kingdom at this Time; for the Commons would do their utmost in the Defence of the Lords, as much as for themselves.* They also resolved to recommend it to the Lord Mayor of London, to take some Course to prevent all Tumults; who accordingly issued an *Order*, prohibiting, on the utmost Penalties the Law could inflict, the making of any unlawful Assemblies, or printing any Papers, &c. for that Purpose.

Two Days after this, (*August 9*) as a Counterpoise to the foregoing *Petition* for continuing the *War*, another was presented to the Commons for

VOL. XII.

A a

Peace

\* Lord *Clarendon* says, The People about the Doors behaved so imperiously, as to tell the Members of both Houses, as they pass'd by them, 'That if they had not a good Answer, they would be there the next Day with double the Number.'

# 370 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August.

*Peace.* This was from the Women; the Men, as Lord *Clarendon* remarks, being deterred from any Attempt of this Sort by the late Execution of Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Chaloner*, and the Severities which followed the Discovery of Mr. *Waller's* Plot. This remarkable *Petition* runs thus:

To the Honourable the HOUSE of COMMONS in Parliament assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of many CIVILLY-DISPOSED WOMEN, inhabiting in the Cities of *London*, *Westminster*, the Suburbs and Parts adjacent,

Sheweth,

A Petition from the Women of London, &c. for Peace.

*THAT* your poor Petitioners, though of the weaker Sex, do too sensibly perceive the ensuing Desolation of this Kingdom, unless, by some timely Means, your Honours provide for the speedy Recovery thereof. Your Honours are the Physicians that can, by God's special and miraculous Blessing, (which we humbly implore) restore this languishing Nation, and our bleeding Sister the Kingdom of Ireland, which hath now almost breathed her last Gasps.

We need not dictate to your Eagle-eyed Judgments the Way; our only Desire is, That God's Glory in the true Reformed Protestant Religion may be preserved; the just Prerogatives and Privileges of King and Parliament maintained; the true Liberties and Properties of the Subject, according to the known Laws of the Land, restored; and all honourable Ways and Means for a speedy Peace endeavoured.

May it therefore please your Honours, that some speedy Course may be taken for the Settlement of the true Reformed Protestant Religion for the Glory of God, and the Renovation of Trade for the Benefit of the Subject, they being the Soul and Body of the Kingdom.

And your Petitioners, with many Millions of afflicted Souls, groaning under the Burden of these Times of Distress, shall (as bound) pray, &c.

We



We have before taken Notice of a *Petition* from An. 19. Car. I.  
the Female Sex at the Beginning of the Troubles,  
and Mr. *Pym's* Speech to them at that Time \*: 1643.  
But this Gentleman seems now to have been  
greatly out of the Ladies Favour, by what follows  
in Mr. *Rushworth's* Account of this Matter: He  
tells us, ' That this *Petition* was brought up by  
2 or 3000 Women, generally of the Meanest Sort,  
(whom Lord *Clarendon* calls a great Multitude of  
the Wives of Substantial Citizens) with white Silk  
Ribbons in their Hats; and was, by some of their  
Number, presented to the House of Commons,  
who received and read the same; and sent out  
Sir *John Hippsley* and two or three Members  
more, to return them an *Answer*, ' That the  
' House were no way Enemies to *Peace*, and that  
' they did not doubt, in a short Time, to answer  
' the Ends of their *Petition*; and desired them to  
' return to their Habitations.'† But the Women,  
not satisfied, remained thereabouts, and, by Noon,  
were increased to 5000 at the least; and some  
Men of the Rabble, in Women's Cloaths, mixed  
themselves amongst them, and instigated them to  
go up to the Commons Door, and cry *Peace*,  
*Peace*; which they did accordingly, thrusting to  
the Door of the House at the Upper Stairs-head.  
The Trained Band advised them to come down,  
and first pulled them; and afterwards, to fright  
them, shot Powder: But they cried out, *Nothing*  
*but Powder*; and some of them in the Yard having  
Brick Bats, threw them a-pace at the Trained  
Band, who then shot Bullets. Yet the Women,  
not daunted, cried out the louder at the Door of  
the House of Commons, *Give us those Traitors that*  
*are against Peace, that we may tear them to Pieces:*  
*Give us that Dog Pym, &c.*

A a 2

Upon

\* In our Tenth Volume, p. 271, et seq.

† The *Petition* itself is not entered in the *Journals*: But those  
Authorities mention the Presentment and Reading of it; and that  
Sir *Robert Harley*, Sir *John Corbet*, Sir *John Hippsley*, Mr. *Buller*,  
Mr. *Noble*, and Sir *Edward Bainton*, were appointed to give the  
*Petitioners* an *Answer*; which was to the above Effect.



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

August.

Ordinance for  
pressing of Sol-  
diers,

Upon the whole, it appears to have been with some Difficulty, and not without some Bloodshed also, that this Mob of Female Petitioners was silenced and dispersed.

Aug. 10. The Commons sent up an *Ordinance* for pressing Soldiers, throughout the Kingdom; to which the Lords agreed; it had this remarkable Preamble:

‘ Forasmuch as the true Protestant Religion, the  
‘ Laws and Liberties of the Subject and the Parlia-  
‘ ment, are in Danger to be subverted; Idolatry  
‘ and Tyranny like to be introduced by Force and  
‘ Power of several Armies, raised by Pretence of  
‘ the King’s Authority, consisting of Papists and  
‘ other dangerous and ill-affected Persons of this  
‘ Kingdom, *Irish* Rebels, Popish Soldiers, and others  
‘ of foreign Dominions and Nations, not being under  
‘ the King’s Obedience, for the Ruin and Destruction  
‘ of this Kingdom, unless the same be prevented  
‘ by a considerable Power of Forces, to be sud-  
‘ denly raised by both Houses of Parliament, being,  
‘ with God’s Blessing and Assistance, the most pro-  
‘ bable Way to preserve the Kingdom, our Reli-  
‘ gion, and Liberty.

‘ Be it therefore *ordained*, &c.’

Aug. 16. A Passage which happened, as this Day, in the House of Commons, is expunged in their *Journals*, as appears in the Margin, by an *Order* made *January* 6, 1645; by which Means this Affair is rendered so dark and obscure, that nothing can be made of it in that Authority. We are obliged to Mr. *Whitlocke* for an Explanation, who tells us, ‘ That one Mr. *Saltmarsh*, a Minister, had published a Book, in which were these bold Positions:

1. ‘ That all Means should be used to keep the King and his People from a sudden Union.
2. ‘ To cherish the War, under the Notion of Popery, as the surest Means to engage the People.
3. ‘ If

3. ' If the King would not grant their Demands, An. 19. Car. I. 1643. then to root him out and the Royal Line, and to collate the Crown upon somebody else.

' This strange Doctrine gave Offence, says our Author, to sober Men; and *Saltmarsh* was sent for and examined, before the Commons, about it; when some Exceptions being taken against it, *Mr. Henry Martin* said, *That he saw no Reason to condemn Mr. Saltmarsh; and that it was better one Family should be destroyed than many.* *Sir Neville Poole* moved, *That Mr. Martin* should explain, *What one Family he meant; who boldly answered, The King and his Children.* Upon this some Members urged the Height and Danger of these Words, and taxed him with his lewd Life; and, many speaking very sharply against him, he was committed to the *Tower*: But, shortly after, released, and re-admitted to his Seat in Parliament.' \*

August.

Mr. Martin committed to the Tower for reviling the King and Royal Family.

The rest of the Affairs in both Houses, for several Days, turned chiefly on Ways and Means to raise more Money and Men, in order to recruit and pay their Armies; the Lord-General *Essex* complaining again very heavily for Want of both. He likewise added, That his Army was much visited with Sicknefs; and that tho' he was ready to march, yet he did not care to adventure the Common-Wealth of *England* by a Battle, in so weak a Condition, &c. Upon which Advice the Parliament thought fit to dispatch a Committee of both Houses to him, on the 19th of this Month, to learn, particularly, his Wants, that they might be speedily redressed. This Committee returning, reported, That they had been with the General, and they had brought him to agree to the following *Propositions*:

The Earl of Essex requires further Supplies.

*First*, ' That his Excellency intends to begin his March in three Days Time; and that about

A a 3

' Twelve

\* Upon his Petition to the House, presented the second of September following, he was ordered to be forthwith discharged, without paying any Fees for his Imprisonment.

*Commons Journals.*



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August.

‘ Twelve o’Clock, on that Day, he promises to draw his Army up to their Rendezvous on *Hounslow-Heath*; whither he desires the Parliament to send Commissioners to be present and view the Troops.

*Next*, ‘ He desired the City would send to him what Strength they could possibly spare, as had been proposed to him by the Parliament. He approved of the Motion that a Committee of both Houses might constantly attend the Army.

And, *lastly*, ‘ The General expected such Supplies of Money as might enable him to proceed upon his March.’

*Aug. 21.* The Queen of *Bohemia* had hitherto lived under an unhappy Planet; and, though the Daughter of one King, Wife to another, and Sister to a third, was now reduced almost to beg her Bread of the Parliament; for, this Day, a supplicating Letter from her, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read in these Words:

My Lord,

The Queen of Bohemia’s second Letter, desiring some Allowance from Parliament.

*SINCE* my last to you, whereby I craved the Assistance of the most Honourable House of Peers (whereof you are Speaker) towards the Relief of my present Necessities, I daily find my Burden growing heavier the longer their Help is deferred; which maketh me trouble you, once again, by this Bearer, Cromwell my Servant, whom I send expressly over about this Business; desiring you to give him such Credit and Access as my Occasions may therein require. Hereby I entreat you to represent my earnest Request to the most Honourable House, if they would be pleased to grant me their favourable Concurrence, in this Time of my Need; whereby I may be freed both from my pressing Wants, and from the Mischiefs which thereupon ensue. I have no Cause to doubt but that the Lords, understanding the Extremity of my Case, will take an honourable Sense thereof; and hasten, on their Parts, the Means



# Of ENGLAND. 375

*Means of my Supply; whereof I beseech you to assure them all that I shall be ever sensible, and remain,*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

August.

Your most Affectionate Friend,

Haghe, June 29,  
1643.

ELIZABETH.

The Lords *ordered*, That this Letter be communicated to the Commons, and to desire them to consider how the Queen might be supplied with the Allowance formerly given her from this Kingdom, as soon as they could find Means to do it. But very little was done in this Business.

Many *Ordinances* now croud the *Journals* of the Lords, all concerning Men and Money to support this unnatural War; but none of them of Consequence enough for this History. The King, at this Time, as has been said, was every where victorious, and his own Army so strong, that the Earl of *Essex* durst not cope with him. In this Situation, the King and his Counsellors are greatly blamed, by Historians, for not marching directly for *London*, where he must have either taken the Place, or forced the Earl to a Battle; either of which would, in all Probability, have ended the War. For, at this Time, says *Whitlocke*, 'The Parliament had no considerable Body of an Army together, and their Party in some Divisions; but, by the Time of the King's March and Stay at *Gloucester*, they had recruited their Army, provided Money, and pieced up their Discontents amongst themselves \*.' But such was the Unhappiness of this Prince's Fate, that, after the Surrender of *Bristol* to his Forces, he turned aside; and, in Person, with his whole Army, laid Siege to *Gloucester*. This was on the 10th of *August*, and the Place holding out resolutely, it took the King much more Time than he thought of, and proved fruitless in the Event.

The Siege of  
*Gloucester*.

Mr.

\* *Memorials*, p. 69. Col. 2.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

August,

Mr. *Rushworth* hath left us a *Journal* of this famous Siege; and other Historians, of these Times, are very particular in their Accounts of it. To them, therefore, we refer, and shall only take Notice, that the Parliament thought it a Place of such Importance, as occasioned both Houses to make an *Ordinance*, on the 23d of this Month, to authorize the Committee for the Militia of the City of *London*, to order six Regiments of Foot, consisting of 8000 Men, and 1500 Horse, to march immediately for its Relief.

*Aug. 27.* An *Ordinance* for removing superstitious Images, Crucifixes, Altars of Stone, &c. passed the Lords, which had been formerly sent up by the other House: It ran in these Words, and with which we shall conclude the Affairs of this Month.

Ordinance for  
removing Images,  
Altars, &c.  
out of Churches.

THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, taking into their serious Consideration how well pleasing it is to God, and conducive to the blessed Reformation in his Worship, so much desired by both Houses of Parliament, that all the Monuments of Superstition or Idolatry should be removed and demolished, do *ordain*, That in all and every the Churches and Chapels, as well Cathedral and Collegiate as other Churches and Chapels, and other usual Places of public Prayer, authorized by Law within this Realm of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, all Altars and Tables of Stone shall, before the first Day of *November* 1643, be utterly taken away and demolished: And also all Communion-Tables removed from the *East* End of every such Church, Chapel, or Place of public Prayer, and Chancel of the same; and shall be placed in some other fit and convenient Place or Places of the Body of the said Church, Chapel, or other such Place of publick Prayer, or of the Body of the Chancel of every such Church, Chapel, or other such Place of public Prayer: And that all Rails  
what-



whatsoever, which have been erected near to,  
 before, or about any Altar or Communion-Table  
 in any of the said Churches or Chapels, or  
 other such Place of public Prayer as aforesaid,  
 shall, before the said Day, be likewise taken  
 away; and the Chancel Ground of every such  
 Church or Chapel, or other Place of public  
 Prayer, which hath been, within twenty Years  
 last past, raised for any Altar or Communion-  
 Table to stand upon, shall, before the said Day,  
 be laid down, and levelled as the same was be-  
 fore the said twenty Years last past: And that  
 all Tapers, Candlesticks, and Basons, shall, be-  
 fore the said Day, be removed and taken away  
 from the Communion-Table in every such  
 Church, Chapel, or other Place of public Prayer;  
 and neither the same, nor any such like, shall  
 be used about the same at any Time after the  
 said Day: And that all Crucifixes, Crosses, and  
 all Images and Pictures of any one or more Per-  
 sons of the Trinity, or of the Virgin *Mary*; and  
 all other Images and Pictures of Saints, or super-  
 stitious Inscriptions in, or upon, all and every  
 the said Churches or Chapels, or other Places of  
 public Prayer, Church-Yards, or other Places  
 to any the said Churches and Chapels, or other  
 Places of public Prayer, belonging, or in any  
 other open Place, shall, before the said first Day of  
*November*, be taken away and defaced; and none  
 of the like hereafter permitted in any such  
 Church or Chapel, or other Places as aforesaid.  
 And be it further *ordained*, That all and every  
 such Removal of the said Altars, Tables of Stone,  
 Communion-Tables, Tapers, Candlesticks and  
 Basons, Crucifixes and Crosses, Images and Pic-  
 tures as aforesaid, taking away of the said Rails,  
 levelling the said Grounds, shall be done and  
 performed; and the Walls, Windows, Grounds,  
 and other Places which shall be broken, impair-  
 ed, or altered by any the Means aforesaid, shall  
 be made up and repaired in good and sufficient  
 Manner, in all and every of the said Parish  
 Churches

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

August.



An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

August.

‘ Churches or Chapels, or usual Places of public  
 ‘ Prayer belonging to any Parish, by the Church-  
 ‘ Warden or Church-Wardens of every such Pa-  
 ‘ rish for the Time being respectively; and in any  
 ‘ Cathedral or Collegiate Church or Chapel, by  
 ‘ the Dean or Sub-Dean, or other chief Officer  
 ‘ of every such Church or Chapel for the Time  
 ‘ being; and in the Universities, by the several  
 ‘ Heads and Governors of every College or Hall  
 ‘ respectively; and in the several Inns of Court,  
 ‘ by the Benchers and Readers of every of the  
 ‘ same respectively, at the Cost and Charges of  
 ‘ all and every such Person or Persons, Body Po-  
 ‘ litic or Corporate, or Parishioners of every Pa-  
 ‘ rish respectively, to whom the Charge of the  
 ‘ Repair of any such Church, Chapel, Chancel,  
 ‘ or Place of public Prayer, doth or shall belong.

‘ And in case Default be made in any of the Pre-  
 ‘ mises, by any of the Person or Persons thereunto  
 ‘ appointed by this *Ordinance*, from and after the  
 ‘ said first Day of *November* 1643, that then every  
 ‘ such Person or Persons, so making Default, shall,  
 ‘ for every such Neglect or Default by the Space  
 ‘ of twenty Days, forfeit and lose forty Shillings  
 ‘ to the Use of the Poor of the said Parish wherein  
 ‘ such Default shall be made; or if it be out of  
 ‘ any Parish, then to the Use of the Poor of such  
 ‘ Parish whose Church is, or shall be, nearest to  
 ‘ the Church or Chapel, or other Place of public  
 ‘ Prayer, where such Default shall be made; and  
 ‘ if Default shall be made after the first Day of  
 ‘ *December* 1643, then any one Justice of the  
 ‘ Peace of the County, City, or Town, where  
 ‘ such Default shall be made, upon Information  
 ‘ thereof to him to be given, shall cause or procure  
 ‘ the Premises to be performed, according to the  
 ‘ Tenor of this *Ordinance*, at the Cost and Charges  
 ‘ of such Person or Persons, Bodies Politic or Cor-  
 ‘ porate, or Inhabitants in every Parish, who are  
 ‘ appointed by this *Ordinance* to bear the same.

‘ Provided that this *Ordinance*, or any thing  
 ‘ therein contained, shall not extend to any Image,  
 ‘ Pic-

Picture, or Coat of Arms in Glass, Stone, or otherwise, in any Church, Chapel, Church Yard, or Place of public Prayer as aforesaid, set up or graven only for a Monument of any King, Prince, or Nobleman, or other dead Person, which hath not been commonly reputed or taken for a Saint: But that all such Images, Pictures, and Coats of Arms, may stand and continue in like Manner and Form, as if this *Ordinance* had never been made.\*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September.

Military *Orders* of various Kinds continue to be made by both Houses, at the Beginning of the Month of *September*; nor is there any thing else, material enough for our Purpose, till the seventh of this Month: When Sir *John Hotham* was brought to the Bar of the House of Commons by Order, before he took his Trial; and being acquainted by the Speaker, That he had Liberty to speak to the House if he desired it, he said, He had some Petitions to present to them; which was, That his Lady might come up with her Coach and Horses, Children, Servants, and Evidences; and some Goods and Plate he had left, for their Maintenance. He desired also, that he might continue where he was till his Trial: He protested his own Innocency, and did not doubt, when he knew his Charge, but to make it appear as clear as the Sun. Being demanded, Whether he knew of any Members of that House, or of the Lords, that had conveyed any Treasure beyond Seas? He answered, He knew of none, if he were to die that Instant. And being again asked, Whether he knew that Mr. *Pym* had conveyed any Treasure in like Manner? With some Astonishment he asked, If that Question was asked him in Earnest? Protested he knew nothing of it, and that he had never reported any such Thing.

Sir John Hotham and his Son examined by the Commons;

Then the Examination taken by the Committee, concerning the Correspondence he held with Lord

\* This Proviso seems to have been founded upon the Statute of 3. and 4. *Edward VI. Cap. 12. for defacing of Images*; which see in our Third Volume, p. 252.



An. 10. Car. I.

1643.

September.

Lord *Digby*, was read to him. And, being demanded by the Speaker, Whether it was true or not which he had there express'd? He answered, It was true; only in that concerning Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, and *Keyes*, his Son's Servant, were some Mistakes: For when *Keyes* came to him at *Hull*, he, wondering to see him, said, *How the Devil camest thou hither?*—*How couldst thou come thro' the Queen's Army?* and that was all he said to him. Further, he said, the Lord *Digby* did send a Declaration to him, to publish to the World his Reasons for his turning to his Allegiance to the King; but he tore it in Pieces, and told him, That he could not serve the King, till he had sent just Propositions to the Parliament. And being pressed by the Committee to answer to some farther Questions about Lord *Digby*, he said, He was not bound to accuse himself\*; made no farther Answer, and confess'd that he did refuse to sign this Examination. After this the Commons proceeded to expell Sir *John* their House, and to commit him close Prisoner to the *Tower*.

Sept. 8. The Son of this unfortunate Father, was likewise brought to the same Bar, the Serjeant standing with his Mace within it, when the Speaker told him, If he had any thing to say the House would hear him. Upon which he made a long Narration of the whole Carriage of Affairs, from the first Time he took Possession of *Hull*, to that of his Commitment; acknowledging he had committed many Errors and Offences, but nothing to betray the Trust reposed in him by the Parliament. Being asked, as his Father had been before, If he could tell what Monies, Treasure, or other Goods, the Lord *Say*, Mr. *Pym*, or any other Member of either House, had transported beyond Sea

\* Lord *Clarendon* gives a very particular Narrative of what passed between Lord *Digby* and Sir *John Horbam*, in relation to a Proposal made by the former for the Surrender of *Hull* to the King, when he was taken Prisoner in Disguise, on board the Ship *Providence*.

*Clarendon*, Vol. II. p. 705.

We took some Notice of this Matter in our Eleventh Volume, p. 356. But the Whole is too long for our Purpose.



Sea? He answered, He knew of none, nor ever heard of any that knew any such Thing.—Notwithstanding this the Commons expelled Captain *Hotbam*, and remanded him to the same Custody he was before; but ordered that a Warrant should be made to bring up both their Ladies, Children, Servants, &c. as his Father had desired.

An. 10. Car. I.  
1643.

September.

They are expelled the House, and recommitting to Prison.

In the Course of these Examinations, the Reader may observe that Mr. *Pym* is mentioned, along with others, as charged with some indirect Practices. To do Justice to the Memory of that great Man, on the same Day Sir *Edward Bainton*, a Member of the House of Commons, was sent for, charged with saying, That the Lord *Say* and Mr. *Pym* had betrayed the *West* and *North*. And being demanded, Whether he had spoke those Words charged upon him? Answered, He did not speak them as they were there laid down. Being then demanded, What he had spoken to that Purpose? Answered, That he had learned, since he had sat here, that he ought not to speak any Thing here that reflected to the Prejudice of another Member; and therefore desired to be excused, unless he were enjoined and commanded. Whereupon he was enjoined to speak the whole Truth: And then he said, That he did not say that Mr. *Pym* had betrayed the *West*, but that he had betrayed his Country; which he did, by being a Means of detaining him in Prison, who only was able to maintain and preserve that County, till the said County was quite lost, notwithstanding many Orders made for his bringing up:\*. As for betraying the *North*, he knew nothing more of that than he had heard in the House, which sounded bad enough, viz. That the Offer of the Lord *Savile* and Sir *William*

A Charge against Mr. Pym for indirect Practices;

\* This Passage runs thus in the *Commons Journals*:—Probably *Wiltshire* is intended, where Sir *Edward Bainton* was a Deputy-Lieutenant of the Militia; and had been so active in the Parliament's Service as to be particularly mentioned in the King's Declaration on Occasion of the Parliament's Ordinances for laying an Assessment; which we have already given in this Volume, p. 61.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September.

*Liam Savile*, to deliver up, to the Parliament's Forces, *York* and that whole County, if they might not be prejudiced in their Persons and Estates, was prevented. Adding, That he had heard it said and affirmed, with solemn and deep Oaths and Protestations, That the Lord *Cottington* had treated with his Majesty for the Pardon of the Lord *Say* and Mr. *Pym*; and that if they had had the Preferments they expected, we had not been brought to the Condition we now are in. Being demanded from whom he heard this, answered, It was from the Lord *Grandison's* Brother, Lieutenant-Colonel *Brett*, and Serjeant-Major *Juques*, all Officers in the King's Army, and Prisoners with him at *Gloucester*.

Which the  
Commons vote  
to be false and  
scandalous,

Mr. *Pym*, in Answer to this Charge, protested solemnly, That he never had Intercourse with the Lord *Cottington*, by one Means or other, since the Difference between the King and Parliament: That he never received but two Messages from him since this Parliament began; the one was by Sir *Arthur Ingram*, long before he died; the other by Sir *Benjamin Rudyard*.—Upon the whole, the Commons voted the Charge laid upon Mr. *Pym* by Sir *Edward Bainton*, to be false and scandalous; and that the said Sir *Edward* should be forthwith sent to the *Tower*, there to remain a Prisoner during the Pleasure of the House. But, soon after, the Question being put, Whether Sir *Edward Bainton* should be now called to the Bar, and from thence sent to the *Tower*, the House divided into 20 Yeas and 40 Noes; so it passed in the Negative.—Howsoever this last Charge against Mr. *Pym* may be true or false, Mr. *Whitlocke* has insinuated in his Account of the Beginning of these Troubles, ‘That the Earl of *Strafford's* Prosecution might have been stopped, and the King's Enemies have become his Friends, if some particular Persons had been gratified in their Expectations and Desires; amongst whom he names Mr. *Pym* to have been designed for Chancellor of the *Exchequer*.



*chequer*\*. But it is very strange that neither this *An. 19. Car. I.*  
*Memorialist*, nor Mr. *Rushworth*, nor even Lord  
*Clarendon* himself, make any Mention of this Ac- 1643.  
 cufation. September.

Sept. 9. The Reader must remember, that, on the famous Affair of *Ship-Money*, most of the Judges who had given the King their Opinions for the Legality of it, were committed, some to the *Tower*, others elsewhere. Amongst these, Sir *Robert Berkeley*, one of the Justices of the King's *Bench*, had been long a Prisoner in the *Tower*, and his Trial put off in *Die ad Diem*, for many Months together. 'Till, this Day, it came on peremptorily before the House of Lords; a Committee of the Commons being at the Bar to manage the Evidence against him, concerning so much of the Charge as respected *Ship-Money* only, and the Opinions of the Judges thereupon. The Proceedings against Judge Berkeley, for his Opinion in relation to Ship-Money, revived.

Then by the Direction of the House of Lords the Gentleman-Usher of the Black Rod brought Mr. Justice *Berkeley* to the Bar; where, after he had kneeled as a Delinquent, and being commanded by the Speaker to stand up, the Committee proceeded in the Charge: But first acquainted the Lords, That whereas the Commons had impeached Mr Justice *Berkeley*, and brought up divers Articles against him, they intended to proceed only upon the Fourth, Fifth, and Sixth, which concerned *Ship-Money*. †

Then the Lords commanded the said Articles to be read, *viz.*

IV. ' That the said Sir *Robert Berkeley*, then being one of the Justices of the Court of King's *Bench*, and having taken an Oath for the due Administration of Justice, according to the Laws  
 ' of

\* *Memorials*, p. 39.

† In the Proceedings of July 6, 1641, we took Notice of Articles of Impeachment being exhibited against Sir *Robert Berkeley* and other Judges. These we passed over with a Reference to *Rushworth*, *Nelson*, and the *State Trials*: But the Proceedings, and Sentence in Consequence of this Impeachment, are omitted in all those *Collections*.



### 384 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. *September.* of this Realm, to his Majesty's leige People, did, on the last Day of November 1635, subscribe an Opinion, in hæc Verba :

*I am of Opinion that, where the Benefit doth more particularly redound to the Good of the Ports, or marine Parts, as in the Case of Piracy or Depredations upon the Seas, there the Charge hath been, and may be, lawfully imposed upon them according to Precedents of former Times : So where the Safety and Good of the Kingdom in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdom in Danger, of which his Majesty is the only Judge, there the Charge of the Defence ought to be borne by all the Realm in general. This I hold agreeable both to Law and Reason.*

V. ' That the said Sir Robert Berkeley, being one of the Justices of the Court of King's-Bench, and duely sworn as aforesaid, did, in February 1636, subscribe an extrajudicial Opinion in an Answer to Questions in a Letter from his Majesty ; which was to this Effect :

#### CHARLES R.

' **W**HEN the Good and Safety of the Kingdom in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdom in Danger, whether may not the King, by Writ under the Great Seal of England, command all the Subjects of this Kingdom, at their Charge, to provide and furnish such Number of Ships with Men, Victuals, and Ammunition, and for such Time as he shall think fit, for the Defence and Safeguard of the Kingdom from such Danger and Peril ; and, by Law, compel the doing thereof in case of Refusal or Refractoriness ; and whether, in such Case, is not the King the sole Judge both of the Danger, and how, and when, the same is to be prevented and avoided ?

May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,  
**W**E have, according to your Majesty's Command, severally, every Man by himself, and all of us together, taken into serious Consideration  
the

*the Case and Question signed by your Majesty, and inclosed in your Royal Letter; and are of Opinion, That when the Good and Safety of the Kingdom in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdom in Danger, your Majesty may, by Writ, under the Great Seal of England, command all the Subjects of this your Kingdom, at their Charge, to provide and furnish such Number of Ships, with Men, Victuals, and Munition, and for such Time as your Majesty shall think fit, for the Defence and Safeguard of the Kingdom from such Danger and Peril; and that, by Law, your Majesty may compel the doing thereof in case of Refusal or Refractoriness: And we are also of Opinion, That, in such Case, your Majesty is the sole Judge both of the Danger, and when and how the same is to be prevented and avoided.*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
September.

JOHN BRAMSTON,	FRANCIS CRAWLEY,
JOHN FINCH,	JOHN DENHAM,
HUM. DAVENPORT,	WILLIAM JONES
RICHARD HUTTON,	THOMAS TREVOR,
GEORGE CROOKE,	ROBERT BERKELEY,
GEORGE VERNON,	RICHARD WESTON.

VI. ' That the said *Robert Berkeley*, then being  
' one of the Justices of the Court of *King's-Bench*,  
' and duely sworn as aforesaid, did, [on the 10th  
' of *February*, 13<sup>o</sup>. *Car.* 1637,] deliver his Opinion  
' in the *Exchequer-Chamber* against *John Hampden*,  
' Esq; in the Case of *Ship-Money*, That he the said  
' *John Hampden*, upon the Matter and Substance  
' of the Case, was chargeable with the Money then  
' in Question: A Copy of which Proceedings and  
' Judgment the Commons, in this present Par-  
' liament, have delivered to your Lordships.'

Then *Mr. Maynard*, one of the Committee, desired that *Mr. Justice Berkeley* might have this Question put to him, Whether he did give his Opinion, and subscribe the said Opinion?

*Mr. Justice Berkeley* desired Leave of the House, that he might have Liberty first to make a Pro-



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September.

testation before he speaks any Thing of the Matter. The Lords gave him Leave to do it; and then he said, He cannot but take Notice of the supreme and unquestionable *Votes* of both Houses of Parliament concerning the Judgment against *Ship-Money*, to which *Votes* he humbly submits; and against which he will not speak one Syllable.

Then he confessed that about *Hilary Term*, 11<sup>o</sup> *Caroli*, the Lord Chief Justice *Finch* came to his Chamber at *Serjeants-Inn*, and told him he had a Case to deliver to him from the King, and he was to deliver his Opinion in it. He confessed he read and considered of it, and he did subscribe to the Opinion now read, and he subscribed to it as his Opinion, according as he then thought the Law to be.

Next he was asked, Whether the rest of the Judges did not subscribe the same Opinion as it is charged?

He answered, That on the sixth of *February* the Lord Chief Justice *Bramston* sent to all the Judges to meet at *Serjeants-Inn*; and there acquainted them, that he had received a Letter from the King and a Case inclosed, which he was to communicate as from him, and that his Majesty required them to subscribe their Opinions; that the said Case and Letter was read, being the very same as in the Charge; and that, upon Consideration, it was carried by the Major Part; and all the Judges subscribed the same as their Opinion.

Then being asked, Whether he delivered his Opinion, in the Judgment, in Mr. *Hampden's* Case, as 'tis charged in the Impeachment, which was for Levying of Money? He confessed, That, by Mr. *Hampden's* Plea of Demurrer, he conceived that Mr. *Hampden* had confessed the Necessity that *Salus Reipublicæ periclitabatur*: And he gave Judgment therein as he conceived, then, the Law to be; but that he is now enlightened by the *Votes* of both Houses of Parliament since made; and that he did not do any Thing out of Malice, but out of Error of Opinion.

Mr.



Mr. *Maynard* and the rest of the Committee An. 19. Car. I.  
concluded with a short Reply, by way of Agra- 1643.  
vation, That the Judgment was for Money, tho' }  
the Opinion was not: That the Judgment in Mr. }  
*Hampden's* Case was extrajudicial, and the Judges }  
had no Cognizance of it; but they ought to have }  
refused any Judgment in it: That being so great }  
a Concernment to the Common-wealth, it was a }  
Crime done to the whole Common-wealth, con- }  
trary to the Liberty of the Subject, destructive to }  
the Privileges of Parliament, and to the Petition }  
of Right, and the Laws of this Kingdom.

September,

The Committee added, That this Judgment was contrary to his Oath as a Judge, being sworn to do equal Right, and to give Counsel between the King and the Subject, according to Law, as 18. *Edward III. Parliament-Roll*: That this Crime was more than an Error of Judgment, tho' Judges have been questioned and judged in Parliament not only for false Judgment, but also for Error of Opinion.

And concluded with a Desire, That the Matter of Fact being confessed, their Lordships would please to take the whole into Consideration, and inflict such exemplary Punishment as their Lordships, in their great Wisdom, should think fit.

Sept. 12. The Lords proceeded to Sentence against Sir *Robert Berkeley*; and having previously found him guilty of the Charge in the three foregoing Articles against him, that High Court did award and adjudge,

I. That the said Sir *Robert Berkeley, Knt. shall* The Lords pro-  
be fined in the Sum of 20,000l. to be paid in at nounce Sentence  
Guildhall, London, to be disposed of by the Autho- against him.  
rity of both Houses of Parliament, for the Safety of the Kingdom. And if it shall not be paid and satisfied within six Weeks next after the Date of this Judgment, other Course shall be taken for levying the same.

II. That he be hereby discharged from being a Judge in the Court of King's-Bench; made inca-

An. 19. Car. I. *pable of any Honour, or to hold any Place or Office in the State or Common-Wealth, for the future.*  
1643.

September. *III. That he shall be imprisoned in the Tower of London, during the Pleasure of this House\*.*

At this Time it was, that the *Scots* sent over Commissioners from the General Assembly of the Kirk of *Scotland*, with some *Propositions* to be presented to the *English* Parliament. These Commissioners were some Noblemen and others, called Ruling Elders, with Ministers, &c. who delivered their Credentials to a Committee of both Houses, appointed for that Purpose. There had been a *Declaration* of Parliament, sent some Time before into *Scotland*, concerning Religious Matters, to which these Commissioners brought the following Answer.

*The ANSWER of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, to the DECLARATION of the Honourable Houses of Parliament in England.*

The Commissioners from the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, propose their Solemn League and Covenant to the Parliament of England,

**T**HE General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*, having received a *Declaration* from the Honourable Houses of the Parliament of *England*, by their Commissioners now residing here, hath thought good to make known unto the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That all the Members of this Assembly, and others well affected here, do, with most Thankfulness, take special Notice of the Expressions which they have been pleased to make in the forementioned *Declaration*; not only concerning their Approbation of the Desires and Endeavours of the General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland* for the Reformation of the Church of *England*, and the Union of both Churches in Religion and Church-Government; but also concerning the Resolution of both Houses fully to concur with them in those

pious

\* Lord Clarendon observes, That there were only ten Peers present at the passing of this Sentence: And that Sir Robert Berkeley was abated one Half of the Fine, and had his Liberty, upon present Payment of the other to the Persons appointed by the Parliament to receive it.—This last Circumstance is confirmed by Mr. Whitlocke, as before observed in our Tenth Volume, p. 12.



‘ pious Intentions. With the same Thankfulness  
 ‘ and due Reverence, they acknowledge the high  
 ‘ Respects expressed towards them by both Houses,  
 ‘ in directing unto them their Commissioners as-  
 ‘ sisted by two Reverend Divines; and in desiring  
 ‘ some of the Godly and Learned of this Church  
 ‘ to be sent unto the Assembly sitting there.

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 September.

‘ The Assembly doth bless the Lord, who hath  
 ‘ not only inspired the Houses of Parliament with  
 ‘ Desires and Resolutions of the Reformation of  
 ‘ Religion, but hath advanced, by several Steps  
 ‘ and Degrees, that blessed Work; by which, as  
 ‘ they shall most approve themselves to the Re-  
 ‘ formed Churches and to their Brethren abroad,  
 ‘ so shall they most powerfully draw down from  
 ‘ Heaven the Blessing of Prosperity and Peace up-  
 ‘ on *England*. And as it is the earnest Wish of their  
 ‘ Brethren here, that the true State and Ground  
 ‘ of the present Differences and Controversies in  
 ‘ *England* may be more and more cleared concern-  
 ‘ ing Religion; and that both Houses may incess-  
 ‘ santly prosecute that good Work first and above  
 ‘ all other Matters, *giving no Sleep nor Slumber to*  
 ‘ *their Eye-lids, untill they find out a Place for the*  
 ‘ *Lord, an Habitation for the mighty God of Jacob,*  
 ‘ whose Favour alone can make their Mountain  
 ‘ strong, and whose Presence, in his own Ordinan-  
 ‘ ces, shall be their Glory in the Midst of them:  
 ‘ So it is our Confidence that the begun Reforma-  
 ‘ tion is of God, and not of Man; that it shall in-  
 ‘ crease and not decrease through his Help, to  
 ‘ whom nothing is too hard; who can make  
 ‘ Mountains Valleys, crooked Things straight,  
 ‘ and rough Ways smooth; and shall lead along,  
 ‘ and make perfect, this most wonderful Work,  
 ‘ which shall be remembered to his Glory, in the  
 ‘ Church, throughout all Generations.

‘ And least, thro’ any Defect upon the General  
 ‘ Assembly’s Part, the Work of Reformation,  
 ‘ which hitherto, to the great Grief of all the  
 ‘ Godly, hath moved so slowly, should be any  
 ‘ more retarded or interrupted, they have, accord-



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September.

ing to the renewed Desires of both Houses of Parliament, and their own former Promises, nominated and elected Mr. *Alexander Henderson*, Mr. *Robert Douglas*, Mr. *Samuel Rutherford*, Mr. *Robert Bailey*, and Mr. *George Gillespie*, Ministers of God's Word; *John Earl of Cassels*, *John Lord Maitland*, Sir *Archibald Johnston of Warriston*, Ruling-Elders, (all of them Men much approved here) with Commission and Power to them, or any three of them, whereof two shall be Ministers, to repair unto the Assembly of Divines, and others of the Church of *England*, now sitting at *Westminster*, to propound, consult, treat, and conclude with them, and with any Commissioners deputed by the Houses of Parliament, if it shall seem good to the Honourable Houses, in their Wisdom, to depute any for that End, in all such Things as may conduce to the utter Extirpation of Popery, Prelacy, Heresy, Schism, Superstition, and Idolatry; and for the settling of the so much desired Union of this whole Island in one Form of Church-Government, one Confession of Faith, one Common Catechism, and one Directory for the Worship of God, according to the Instructions which they have received, or shall receive, from the Commissioners of the General Assembly appointed to meet at *Edinburgh*, from time to time, with the Assembly's Power to that End. And as the General Assembly doth most gladly and affectionately receive, and fully trust, the Commissioners and Divines sent hither; so do they hereby commend the aforementioned Commissioners not only to the like Affection and Trust of the Assembly there, but also to the Favour and Protection of both Houses of Parliament.

And for the further Satisfaction and Encouragement of their Brethren of *England*, the whole Assembly, in their own Name, and in the Name of all the particular Churches in this Kingdom whom they represent, do hereby declare, That, from their Zeal to the Glory of God and Pro-

‘ Propagation of the Gospel, from their Affection An. 19. Car. 1.  
 ‘ to the Happiness of their Native King and of the 1643.  
 ‘ Kingdom of *England*, and from the Sense of  
 ‘ their own Interest in the common Dangers of  
 ‘ Religion, Peace, and Liberty, they are most  
 ‘ willing and ready to be united and associated  
 ‘ with their Brethren in a nearer *League* and *So-*  
 ‘ *lemn Covenant*, for the Maintenance of the truly  
 ‘ Reformed Protestant Religion, against Popery  
 ‘ and Prelacy, and against all Popish and Prelati-  
 ‘ cal Corruptions in Doctrine, Discipline, Wor-  
 ‘ ship or Church-Government; and for the set-  
 ‘ tling and holding fast of Unity and Uniformity  
 ‘ of Religion, betwixt the Churches of this Island  
 ‘ and with the best Reformed Churches beyond  
 ‘ the Sea, which Union and Covenant shall, by  
 ‘ God’s Assistance, be seconded by your co-oper-  
 ‘ ating with their Brethren in the Use of the best  
 ‘ and most effectual Means that may serve for so  
 ‘ good Ends : For the more speedy effecting  
 ‘ whereof, to the Comfort and Enlargement of their  
 ‘ distressed Brethren, whose Hope deferred might  
 ‘ make their Hearts to faint, the whole Assembly,  
 ‘ with great Unanimity of Judgment and Expres-  
 ‘ sions of much Affection, have approved, for their  
 ‘ Part, such a Draught and Form of a mutual  
 ‘ *League* and *Covenant* betwixt the Kingdoms as  
 ‘ was the Result of the joint Debates and Con-  
 ‘ sultations of the Commissioners from both Houses  
 ‘ of Parliament, assisted by the two Reverend Di-  
 ‘ vines and the Commissioners deputed from the  
 ‘ Convention of the Estates of this Kingdom, and  
 ‘ from the General Assembly ; expecting and  
 ‘ wishing the like Approbation thereof by the  
 ‘ Right Honourable the Lords and Commons in  
 ‘ Parliament, and by the Reverend Assembly there,  
 ‘ that thereafter it may be solemnly sworn and sub-  
 ‘ scribed by both Kingdoms ; as the surest and  
 ‘ strictest Obligation to make both stand and fall  
 ‘ together, in the Cause of Religion and Liberty.  
 ‘ And as the States of this Kingdom have often  
 ‘ professed, in their former *Declarations*, the In-  
 ‘ tegrity



An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

September.

‘tegrity of their Intentions against the common  
 ‘Enemies of Religion and Liberty in both King-  
 ‘doms, and their great Affections to their Bre-  
 ‘thren of *England*, by reason of so many and so  
 ‘near Relations; so doubtless, in this Time of  
 ‘Need, they will not fail to give real Proof of  
 ‘what before they professed: *A Friend loveth at*  
 ‘*all Times, and a Brother is born for Adversity.*  
 ‘Neither shall the Assembly, nor their Commis-  
 ‘sioners, be wanting in exhorting all others to  
 ‘their Duty, or in concurring, so far as belongeth  
 ‘to their Place and Vocation, with the States  
 ‘now convened, in any lawful and possible Course  
 ‘which may most conduce to the Good of Reli-  
 ‘gion and Reformation, the Honour and Happi-  
 ‘ness of the King’s Majesty, the Deliverance of  
 ‘their Brethren of *England* from their present  
 ‘calamitous Condition, and to the perpetuating  
 ‘a firm and happy Peace betwixt the Kingdoms.’

Both Houses ordered this *Answer* to be sent to  
 the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*.

An Order against  
 Plundering the  
 King’s Palaces.

*Sept. 13.* Information being given to the Lords,  
 That some Rooms in *Somerset-House* were broke  
 open and some Goods taken away; an *Order* was  
 made to protect that and the rest of the King’s  
 Palaces, as *Whitehall, St. James’s, Greenwich-*  
*House, Richmond-House, Hampton-Court, Oat-*  
*lands, Theobalds, Wimbleton-House*, with all other  
 Houses whatsoever, of the King’s, Queen’s, or the  
 Prince’s. These were not to be searched or med-  
 dled with, but in the Presence of one Lord and two  
 Members of the House of Commons; nor any  
 Thing removed or carried out of them, without  
 special *Order* from both Houses of Parliament.—  
 How widely different is this from an *Ordinance*  
 of the Commons, after the King’s Death, for the  
 Sale and Disposal of the rich Furniture of these Pa-  
 laces, and the Pictures and Statues in them? \*  
 These last would have been, Now, ineffimable.

*Sept.*

\* A Catalogue of these, with the Prices they sold for, (commu-  
 nicated by the late *John Ainslie, Esq;* Garter King at Arms) will  
 appear in their proper Order of Time.



Sept. 15. Sir William Waller having represented to Parliament that he wanted a strong Reinforcement to guard the City, the Commons made an Order for impressing 5000 Men, out of several Counties, for that Purpose. In which the very Watermen on the *Thames* were included; alledging, 'That, in Time of Common Danger and Necessity, the Interest of private Persons ought to give Way to the Public.' To which the Lords agreed.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.

September.

Another for impressing Men to augment the City-Guard.

The same Day a Letter from the Earl of *Essex* and another from Col. *Massey*, relating the Condition of the Army, and of the City of *Gloucester*, directed to the Speaker of the House of Commons, were read: Neither of these Letters are entered in their *Journals*, or in *Rushworth*; and only that from the Earl is in those of the *Lords*, as follows:

SIR,

**I** Will not trouble you with the Particulars of our March, you shall, God willing, hear that more at large hereafter. You may be certified, only, hereby, that the first Time the Enemy appeared before us, was at Aynhoe on the Hill, with a very great Body of Horse, which Col. Middleton faced more than the whole Day, with but two Regiments, and skirmished very often with them. The Enemy faced us afterwards at Stow on the Wold, without engaging themselves more than by small Skirmishes.

The Earl of Essex's Account of his raising the Siege of Gloucester.

Upon Tuesday, in the Evening, the King's Forces, seeing us approach, raised their Siege from before Gloucester, whither it pleased God we came very seasonably; for the Governor had not above two or three Barrels of Powder left; yet had he managed his Business with so much Judgment and Courage, that the Enemy, not knowing of such Want, had but small Hopes of attaining their Desires. We now stay here only for the Relieving of Gloucester with

Viſtual

An. 19. Car. I. *Victual and other Provisions, of which there is an extraordinary Scarcity.*  
1643.

September.

*That which I must press you earnestly with at this Time is, first, That there be a sudden Provision of eight or ten thousand Pounds to be sent to that Garrison, without which there will be an Impossibility of Maintaining it this Winter; the Discontent of the inferior Officers and common Soldiers being very great, for want of their Pay and Arrear; they, at this Time, justly expecting rather Reward for their good Service, than Want of what is due.*

*The second, That the thousand Foot, which the Parliament is already engaged, by Promise, to send, may speedily march hither; without which they will not be able to fetch any Provisions from the Country; but the Enemy will be Master to the very Gates.*

*The third, That Sir William Waller may be speedily sent down into these Parts, which is the only Means to preserve those Friends you have here; for my own Army is in such extream Necessity, for want of Pay, being now in an Enemy's Country, and at this Time within four or five Miles of the King's Army, where no Provisions can be had but for ready Money; and so little Hopes I have of a Supply from you, that, unless we can presently fight, we must be immediately necessitated to draw into some other Place which may be nearer to Supplies, and have a more free Intercourse with London.*

Your assured Friend,

Tewksbury, Sept. 10,  
1643.

ESSEX.

After reading this Letter, and that from Col. *Massey*, the Commons passed the following *Votes*:

I. 'That Col. *Massey* shall have 1000*l.* bestowed upon him, as a Reward and an Acknowledgement of his Service, whereof 500*l.* to be paid in present; and that it be recommended especially



cially to the Committee for Advance of Monies, An. 19. Car. I. to take care that the rest of the 1000*l.* be paid with all convenient Speed; and that the Lord-General be desired to prefer him to some Place of Honour and Profit.

1643.  
September.

2. ' That the Arrears of the Garrison of *Gloucester* shall be forthwith paid, upon Account made; and that the Money in Mr. *Stephens's* Hands shall be made 4000*l.* and that the Officers and Soldiers of that Garrison shall have a Month's Pay bestowed upon them, as a Reward of their Service; and the Committee for Advance of Monies are to provide these Sums with all Speed.

3. ' That it be referred to the Committee of Safety to take Order for the sending of the 1000 Men, the Troops of Horse, the Pistols and other Provisions, as desired by Col. *Masseys* Letter.

4. ' That a public Thanksgiving be held, on the next Lord's Day, in all the Churches of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Parishes within the Bills of Mortality; and that the Lord Mayor of *London* and the Justices of the Peace for *Westminster*, do give Directions accordingly.

A Thanksgiving Day appointed on that Occasion;

5. ' That a Letter be sent by both Houses to the Lord-General, acknowledging the great Service he has done, in the Conducting of his Army in the difficult March to the Relief of *Gloucester*; and to give him Thanks for the same; another to Col. *Masseys*; and a third to the Mayor and Townsmen of *Gloucester* to the same Purpose; also a Reward of 20*l.* was voted to the Messenger of this important News.'

And a Vote of Thanks, &c. to the Officers, Mayor, and Townsmen.

To all which, the next Day, the Lords gave their Concurrence.

Thus ended the Siege of *Gloucester*, the most unfortunate Step the King could have taken; for, after it, his Affairs went backwards, in every Motion, till they ended in his own Ruin.

Sept. 18. This Day the famous Instrument, called *The Solemn League and Covenant*, was debated



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

September.

bated in the House of Lords. It was brought up out of *Scotland* by the Commissioners sent last to the General Assembly of Divines, at *Westminster*, and presented to the *English* Parliament for their Approbation, and was carried thro' both Houses with small Opposition. The Lords, particularly, ordered a Committee of their House to join with one of the Commons, and consult with the *Scots* Commissioners about the Manner of taking of it in both Kingdoms. The Form of this Test runs thus : \*

The Scots Solemn League and Covenant agreed to by the English Parliament,

WE Noblemen, Barons, Knights, Gentlemen, Citizens, Burgeses, Ministers of the Gospel, and Commons of all Sorts, in the Kingdoms of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, by the Providence of God living under one King, and being of one Reformed Religion, having before our Eyes the Glory of God, and the Advancement of the Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, the Honour and Happiness of the King's Majesty and his Posterity, and the true Public Liberty, Safety, and Peace of the Kingdoms, wherein every one's private Condition is included; and calling to mind the treacherous and bloody Plots, Conspiracies, Attempts, and Practices of the Enemies of God, against the true Religion, and Professors thereof, in all Places, especially in these three Kingdoms, ever since the Reformation of Religion, and how much their

\* From the original Edition, published by *Edward Husband*, Sept. 22. 1643. In the Title Page it is called, *A solemn League and Covenant, for Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happiness of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the three Kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland.*

After which follow these Texts of Scripture, which the Commons ordered to be printed in the Title.

Jer. l. 5. *Come let us join ourselves to the Lord in a perpetual Covenant that shall not be forgotten.*

Prov. xxv. 5. *Take away the Wicked from before the King, and his Throne shall be established in Righteousness.*

2 Chron. xv. 15. *And all Judah rejoiced at the Oath, for they had sworn with all their Heart, and sought him with their whole Desire, and he was found of them; and the Lord gave them Rest round about.*

“ their Rage, Power, and Presumption, are of late, An. 19. Car. I.  
 “ and at this Time, increased and exercised; 1643.  
 “ whereof the deplorable Estate of the Church and  
 “ Kingdom of *Ireland*, the distressed Estate of the  
 “ Church and Kingdom of *England*, and the dan-  
 “ gerous Estate of the Church and Kingdom of  
 “ *Scotland*, are at present public Testimonies;  
 “ we have now at last, (after other Means of Sup-  
 “ plication, Remonstrance, Protestations, and Suf-  
 “ ferings) for the Preservation of ourselves and our  
 “ Religion from utter Ruin and Destruction, ac-  
 “ cording to the commendable Practice of these  
 “ Kingdoms in former Times, and the Example  
 “ of God’s People in other Nations, after mature  
 “ Deliberation, resolved and determined to enter  
 “ into a *mutual* and *solemn League and Covenant*;  
 “ wherein we all subscribe, and each one of us for  
 “ himself, with our Hands lifted up to the Most  
 “ High God, do swear,

September.

“ 1. That we shall sincerely, really, and con-  
 “ stantly, through the Grace of God, endeavour,  
 “ in our several Places and Callings, the Preserva-  
 “ tion of the Reformed Religion in the Church of  
 “ *Scotland*, in Doctrine, Worship, Discipline, and  
 “ Government, according to the Word of God,  
 “ and the Example of the best Reformed Churches;  
 “ and we shall endeavour to bring the Churches of  
 “ God, in the three Kingdoms, to the nearest Con-  
 “ junction and Uniformity in Religion, Confession  
 “ of Faith, Form of Church-Government, Direc-  
 “ tory for Worship and Catechizing; that we, and  
 “ our Posterity after us, may, as Brethren, live in  
 “ Faith and Love, and the Lord may delight to  
 “ dwell in the Midst of us.

“ 2. That we shall in like Manner, without re-  
 “ spect of Persons, endeavour the Extirpation of  
 “ Popery, Prelacy, (that is, Church-Government  
 “ by Archbishops, Bishops, their Chancellors and  
 “ Commissaries, Deans, Deans and Chapters,  
 “ Archdeacons, and all other Ecclesiastical Offi-  
 “ cers depending on that Hierarchy) Superstition,  
 “ Heresy, Schism, Profaneness, and whatsoever  
 “ shall



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September.

shall be found to be contrary to sound Doctrine  
and the Power of Godliness; lest we partake  
in other Mens Sins, and thereby be in Danger to  
receive of their Plagues; and that the Lord may  
be one, and his Name one in the three Kingdoms.

3. We shall, with the same Sincerity, Reality, and Constancy, in our several Vocations, endeavour, with our Estates and Lives, mutually to preserve the Rights and Privileges of the Parliaments, and the Liberties of the Kingdoms; and to preserve and defend the Kings Majesty's Person and Authority, in the Preservation and Defence of the true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms, that the World may bear witness with our Consciences of our Loyalty, and that we have no Thoughts or Intentions to diminish his Majesty's just Power and Greatness.

4. We shall also, with all Faithfulness, endeavour the Discovery of all such as have been, or shall be, Incendiaries, Malignants, or evil Instruments, by hindering the Reformation of Religion, dividing the King from his People, or one of the Kingdoms from another, or making any Faction or Parties amongst the People, contrary to this *League and Covenant*, that they may be brought to public Trial, and receive condign Punishment, as the Degree of their Offences shall require or deserve, or the Supream Judicatories of both Kingdoms respectively, or others having Power from them for that Effect, shall judge convenient.

5. And whereas the Happiness of a blessed Peace between these Kingdoms, denied in former Times to our Progenitors, is, by the good Providence of God, granted unto us, and hath been lately concluded and settled by both Parliaments, we shall each one of us, according to our Places and Interests, endeavour that they may remain conjoined in a firm Peace and Union to all Posterity; and that Justice may be done upon the wilful Opposers thereof, in manner expressed in the precedent Article.

6. We



‘ 6. We shall also, according to our Places and  
 ‘ Callings, in this common Cause of Religion,  
 ‘ Liberty, and Peace of the Kingdoms, assist and  
 ‘ defend all those that enter into this *League* and  
 ‘ *Covenant*, in the maintaining and pursuing there-  
 ‘ of; and shall not suffer ourselves, directly or in-  
 ‘ directly, by whatsoever Combination, Persua-  
 ‘ sion, or Terror, to be divided and withdrawn  
 ‘ from this blessed Union and Conjunction, whe-  
 ‘ ther to make Defection to the contrary Part, or  
 ‘ to give ourselves to a detestable Indifferency or  
 ‘ Neutrality in this Cause which so much concern-  
 ‘ eth the Glory of God, the Good of the King-  
 ‘ doms, and Honour of the King; but shall, all  
 ‘ the Days of our Lives, zealously and constantly  
 ‘ continue therein, against all Opposition, and  
 ‘ promote the same, according to our Power, against  
 ‘ all Lets and Impediments whatsoever; and what  
 ‘ we are not able ourselves to suppress or overcome,  
 ‘ we shall reveal and make known, that it may  
 ‘ be timely prevented or removed: All which we  
 ‘ shall do as in the Sight of God.

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 September.

‘ And because these Kingdoms are guilty of ma-  
 ‘ ny Sins and Provocations against God and his  
 ‘ Son Jesus Christ, as is too manifest by our pre-  
 ‘ sent Distresses and Dangers, the Fruits thereof,  
 ‘ we profess and declare, before God and the World,  
 ‘ our unfeigned Desire to be humbled for our own  
 ‘ Sins, and for the Sins of these Kingdoms; espe-  
 ‘ cially, that we have not, as we ought, valued the  
 ‘ inestimable Benefit of the Gospel; that we have  
 ‘ not laboured for the Purity and Power thereof;  
 ‘ and that we have not endeavoured to receive  
 ‘ Christ in our Hearts, nor to walk worthy of him  
 ‘ in our Lives, which are the Causes of other Sins  
 ‘ and Transgressions, so much abounding amongst  
 ‘ us; and our true and unfeigned Purpose, Desire,  
 ‘ and Endeavour for ourselves, and all others un-  
 ‘ der our Power and Charge, both in Public and  
 ‘ Private, in all Duties we owe to God and Man,  
 ‘ to amend our Lives, and each one to go before  
 ‘ another in the Example of a real Reformation,  
 ‘ that

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

September,

‘ that the Lord may turn away his Wrath and heavy Indignation, and establish these Churches and Kingdoms in Truth and Peace. And this *Covenant* we make in the Presence of Almighty God, the Searcher of all Hearts, with a true Intention to perform the same, as we shall answer at that great Day when the Secrets of all Hearts shall be disclosed; most humbly beseeching the Lord to strengthen us by his Holy Spirit for this End, and to bless our Desires and Proceedings with such Success, as may bring Deliverance and Safety to his People, and Encouragement to the Christian Churches groaning under, or in Danger of, the Yoke of Antichristian Tyranny, to join in the same, or like *Affociation and Covenant*, to the Glory of God, the Enlargement of the Kingdom of Jesus Christ, and the Peace and Tranquility of all Christian Kingdoms and Common-wealths.’

The Commons  
desire the Assembly of Divines  
Opinion thereon,  
in point of Conscience,

Before this *Covenant* was wholly agreed to by both Houses, the Commons having referred it, as a Case of Conscience, to the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster* for their Opinion of the Matter; these Godly and Learned Ministers of the Gospel of Peace appeared before the House, and expressed themselves as follows:

‘ That they had, after a particular Seeking of God for his special Direction in this Business, fully debated and considered of it, in all its several Particulars: That they did approve of the said *Covenant*, and judged it lawful, in Point of Conscience, to be taken: That they did humbly advise, that the following Explications should be subjoined to the *Covenant*, viz.

1. ‘ By the Clause in the *first Article* of the *Covenant*, According to the Word of God, they understood, So far as we do, or shall, in our Consciences, conceive the same to be according to the Will of God.

2. ‘ By *Prelacy*, in the *second Article*, they understood, Church-Government by Archbishops,  
Bi-



*Bishops, their Chancellors, Commissaries, Deans, Deans and Chapters, Archdeacons, and other Ecclesiastical Officers, depending upon the Hierarchy.* An. 19. Car. I. 1643.

September.

‘The Prolocutor made a pious Speech after the Delivery of these Opinions; in which he desired that, in the taking of this *Covenant*, the People might be thoroughly informed of the Grounds, Reasons, and Consequences of it, being a Matter of so vast Importance: Concluding with the Prayers of the Assembly, *That God would be pleased to return in Mercy to his People, and pitch his Tents over, and about, them.*’

Matters being thus settled in *Foro Conscientiæ*, this new *Oath* went smoothly down: It was first taken by all the Lords and Commons, then in Town; all the Officers in their Army were strictly enjoined to do the same; and, afterwards, it was ordered to be taken throughout the Kingdom.

Sept. 23. This Day a Conference was held between the two Houses, at which the Commons presented to the Lords a Letter of Advice they had received from the Earl of *Essex's* Secretary, dated from *Reading* the Day before. This Letter was to inform the Parliament of a Battle between the two Armies, but is not enter'd in the *Journals*. It was fought on the 20th of *September*, near *Newbury*, in *Berkshire*, and is related at large by *Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, &c. Here both Sides again claim'd the Victory, as in the first Battle at *Edgehill*. The Parliament, particularly, made themselves sure of it, and ordered a Committee of both Houses to send to their Lord-General and the Army forthwith, to let them know, How great Value and Esteem the Houses had for his Excellency's Conduct, and the great Service done by them all, with the Blessing of God; to acquaint him also, That they were using all Endeavours to supply the Army, and sending additional Forces, in order to take this Opportunity for the prosecuting and perfecting of the Work. They also sent a Committee into the City, to inform them of this great Victory, and



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

September.

For which the  
Parliament order  
a Day of Thank-  
sgiving.

the Advantages that might be hoped for from it :  
To urge the Citizens to send a Reinforcement of  
Men, with a Supply of Money and Provisions ;  
and to use all Diligence to hinder any such from  
being sent to the King's Army : Likewise to or-  
der a Day of Thanksgiving, within *London* and  
*Westminster*, and the Liberties thereof, for the  
great Success of their Lord-General.

The Manner of  
taking the Cove-  
nant by both  
Houses.

Sept. 25. This Day having been appointed by  
Parliament, for their taking the *Solemn League and  
Covenant* : Both Houses, with the Assembly of Di-  
vines, and *Scots* Commissioners, met at *St. Mar-  
garet's, Westminster*, for that Purpose. It appears,  
by the *Commons Journals*, that an Order was made,  
by them, for printing a Narrative of the whole *Pro-  
ceedings* and *Manner* of taking this *Covenant*, to-  
gether with the *Prayers, Exhortations, and Psalms*  
used upon that Occasion. But as this Piece, pub-  
lished by Authority, never yet fell into our Hands,  
we shall content ourselves with giving Mr. *Whit-  
locke's* and Lord *Clarendon's* Account of the Cere-  
monial.——The former tells us\* ; That

' Mr. *White*, one of the Assembly, prayed an  
Hour to prepare them for taking the *Covenant* ;  
then Mr. *Nye*, in the Pulpit, made some Obser-  
vations touching the *Covenant*, shewing the War-  
rant of it from Scripture, the Examples of it since  
the Creation, and the Benefit to the Church. Mr.  
*Henderfon*, one of the *Scots* Commissioners, con-  
cluded in a *Declaration* of what the *Scots* had done,  
and the Good they had received, by such *Cove-  
nants* ; and then he shewed the Prevalency of ill  
Counsels about the King, and the Resolutions of  
the States of *Scotland* to assist the Parliament of  
*England*. Next Mr. *Nye*, in the Pulpit, read the  
*Covenant*, and all present held up their Hands, in  
Testimony of their Assent to it. The Divines of  
the Assembly, and the *Scots* Commissioners, subscri-  
bed it : And then Dr. *Gouge*, in the Pulpit, pray'd  
for a Blessing upon it. Afterwards the Members

of

\* *Memorials*, p. 70.

of Parliament, in their respective Houses, subscribed their Names in a Parchment Roll, where the Covenant was written.'—Thus far Mr. *Whitlocke*.  
 An. 19. Car. 1.  
 1643.  
 September;

Lord *Clarendon*'s Account of this Matter runs thus †: 'The Lords and Commons, and their Assembly of Divines, met together at the Church, with great Solemnity, to take the *Covenant*, on the 25th Day of *September*; a double Holyday, by the Earl of *Essex*'s Return to *London*, and this Religious Exercise.

'There two or three of their Divines went up into the Pulpit successively, not to preach, but to pray; others, according to their several Gifts, to make Orations upon the Work of the Day. They were by them told, 'That this *Oath* was such, and, in the Matter and Consequence of it, of such Concernment, as it was truly worthy of them, yea of those Kingdoms, yea of all the Kingdoms of the World: That it could be no other but the Result and Answer of such Prayers and Tears, of such Sincerity and Sufferings, that three Kingdoms should be thus born, or rather new born, in a Day: That they were entering upon a Work of the greatest Moment and Concernment to themselves, and to their Posterities after them, that ever was undertaken by any of them, or any of their Fore-fathers before them: That it was a Duty of the first Commandment, and therefore of the highest and noblest Order and Rank of Duties; therefore must come forth, attended with choicest Graces, Fear, Humility, and in the greatest Simplicity and Plainness of Spirit, and Respect of those with whom they covenanted: That it was to advance the Kingdom of Christ here upon Earth, and make *Jerusalem* once more the Praise of the whole Earth, notwithstanding all the Contradictions of Men.'

'As soon as this Solemnity was over, Mr. *Henderson*, one of the Ecclesiastical Commissioners from *Scotland*, magnified what they had done,

C c 2

and

† History, Vol. III, p. 372, 376.



An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.

September.

and assured them, ' of great Success after it, by the Experience of that Nation, who, from their Union in the first *Covenant*, found nothing hard they proposed to themselves; and told them, That were that *Covenant* now painted upon the Wall within the *Pope's* Palace, it would doubtless put him in- to *Belshazzar's* quaking Condition;' with many such high Expressions, as can hardly be conceived without the View of the Records and Registry that is kept of them.'

Several Lords then in Town, the Earl of *Northumberland* for one, did not appear at this Ceremony; many Members of the Commons were also absent, and sent their Excuses, next Day, for ill Health, or otherwise; but took it afterwards\*.

Ordinance for se-  
questering the Re-  
venue of the  
whole Royal Fa-  
mily.

*Sept. 26.* An *Ordinance* was agreed to by both Houses for an absolute Sequestration of the King's Revenue, with those of the Queen's and Prince of *Wales*, and seizing them for the Use of the Parliament; to be printed and published all over the Kingdom.

*Sept. 28.* The Earl of *Essex*, being come up to Town, was complemented by the Speakers of both Houses, on his late Victory; and this Day he presented to the Lords several Colours taken, at the late Battle at *Newbury*, from the King's Army; one of which had the Picture of the House of Lords, with two Heads upon each End of it, and this Motto, UT EXTRA SIC INTUS. Another was a Cavalier in pursuit of a Round-head; the Word of the Round-head, QUARTER; the Cavalier's, QUI SEQUITUR VINCIT.

A Cessation of  
Arms with the  
Irish Rebels a-  
greed to by the  
King.

About this Time the Parliament being alarmed with the News of a *Cessation* of Arms with the Rebels in *Ireland*, agreed to by the Council of State in that Kingdom, several *Votes* were passed, and a *Declaration* framed against it. The whole of this Proceeding, with the *Articles of Cessation* which

\* Their Names (being in Number 228) are all set down in *Rushworth's Collections*, p. 480, and in *Husbands*, p. 426.



which were agreed on, may be seen in *Rushworth*; An. 19. Car. I. but we shall content ourselves with the Form of the *Declaration* only, since it seems to sum up all that can be said about this Matter.

1643.  
September.

*A DECLARATION of the LORDS and COMMONS, assembled in Parliament, against the intended CESSATION, or TREATY, with the Irish Rebels.*

AS it is evident to all the World, that this late horrid Rebellion of the Papists in *Ireland*, did, without any Colour or Pretext of Provocation, professedly and boldly aim at the Destruction of the Protestant Religion, the Rejecting of the Laws of *England*, and the Extirpation of the *British* Inhabitants out of that Kingdom: So it is no less manifest, that this Parliament of *England* (to whom his Majesty hath left the managing of the War against those Rebels) hath taken the Troubles of *Ireland* to Heart, with that Resentment and Compassion as may evidence their Zeal to Religion, their Love to their distressed Country-men, and Brethren there, in these Times, when the like Jesuitical Practices have cast *England* into woful Distractions and an unnatural War; notwithstanding which the reducing of *Ireland* hath still been a chief Part of the Care of this Parliament: And God hath been pleased to bless our Endeavours with such Success, as that those furious, blood-thirsty Papists have been stopped in the Career of their Cruelty; some Part of the Protestant Blood, which at first was spilt like Water upon the Ground, hath been revenged; their Massacres, Burning, and Famishings, have, by a divine Retaliation, been repaid into their Bosom; and the Protestant Party hath been erected to that Condition of Strength and Hope, that their Enemies are constrained (distrusting their Forces) to have Recourse to their Craft and Policies; and therefore by their subtle Agents at Court, and their active Instruments elsewhere, have been endeavouring

The Parliament's  
Declaration against it.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September.

vouring now, of a long Time, to make our Armies in *Ireland* disaffected to the Parliament; what by Occasion of their Wants not so readily supplied as their Need required, what by amusing them with these unhappy Differences fallen in here between King and People; labouring, by these Means, to divide those Forces into Factions, to the end the main Work they have in Hand might be neglected; which is the Prosecuting of the War against the Rebels, so far brought low in some Parts of *Ireland*, that if they can be deprived of the Benefit of this Harvest, they are not likely to see the next Summer.

Now the Rebels finding, that notwithstanding the Distractions here occasioning the Slowness and Scarceness of Supplies, yet they themselves are in a far worse Condition, being in Want of most Things necessary, not only for the maintaining of a War, but even of Life; (the Judgment of God being remarkable upon them in this, that as their bloody and treacherous Religion made them inhumanly cruel in shedding the Protestants Blood; so now the Famine amongst many of them hath made them unnaturally, and Cannibal-like, eat and feed one upon another) therefore, that they may have Time to expect from their Friends abroad new Supplies both of Victuals and Ammunition, and may, without Molestation, reap the Fruit of this Harvest, they have laboured a Treaty for a *Cessation*; which Project of theirs doth no less aim at the Overthrow of the Remainder of the Protestants in that Kingdom, than their treacherous Taking of Arms at first did intend the Destruction of them all; for their Cessation and Hostility, their War and Peace, are alike to be esteemed of, and with those that neither in Peace nor War keep any Faith, it is best to be in perpetual Defiance: Therefore the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, according to their continued Care of that Kingdom of *Ireland*, do, in a special Manner, take into their Consideration the Condition



dition thereof, upon this Occasion of an intended *Cessation*; and so much the rather, because it is feared that the Protestant Forces, through Want of Provisions for their Armies, may at last, if not relieved, be persuaded to admit of this Course, in hope thereby to procure some Means for their Subsisting; as also because there is too much Ground to suspect that, if this *Cessation* should be agreed unto, they might have Opportunity to join with the Popish Party here for their greater Strengthening; and though it were to have no Influence upon this Kingdom, yet the evil Consequences of it are so many and pernicious to *Ireland*, that this Parliament would betray the Trust reposed in them, if they did not declare against this *Cessation*, and use all Means in Time to make it prove abortive: And therefore they desire it may be observed and taken Notice of,

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
September.

*First*, From whence the Counsel and Design of this *Cessation* ariseth, even from the Rebels and Papists themselves for their own Preservation; for soon after they had missed of their Intent, to make themselves absolute Masters of that Kingdom of *Ireland* by their treacherous Surprizes; and seeing that this Kingdom did, with most Christian and generous Resolutions, undertake the Charges of the War for the Relief and Recovery of *Ireland*, Propositions were brought over from the Rebels by the Lords *Dillon* and *Taafe*, at which Time they were intercepted and restrained by Order of the House of Commons. After that they had the Boldness, even while their Hands were still imbrued in the Protestants Blood, to petition his Majesty that their Demands might be heard; and, for this Purpose, they obtained a Commission to be sent over into *Ireland* to divers Persons of Quality (whereof some were Papists) to hear, receive, and transmit to his Majesty their Demands, which was done accordingly; and one Mr. *Burke*, a notorious pragmatick *Irish* Papist, was the chief Solicitor in this Business. After this, the just revenging God giving daily Success to Hand-

fuls



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September,

fuls of the Protestants Forces against their great Numbers; so that, by a wonderful Blessing from Heaven, they were in most Parts put to the worst; then did they begin to set on Foot an Overture for a *Cessation* of Arms; concerning which, what Going and Coming hath been between the Court and the Rebels is very well known; and what Meetings and Treaties have been held about it in *Ireland*, by Warrant of his Majesty's ample Commission sent to that Effect; and what Reception and Countenance most pragmatick Papists negotiating the Business, have found at Court; and that those of the State in *Dublin*, who had so much Religion and Honesty as to dissuade the *Cessation*, were first discountenanced, and at last put out of their Places and restrained to Prison, as Sir *William Parsons* one of the Lords Justices there, Sir *John Temple* Master of the Rolls, Sir *Adam Loftus* Vice-Treasurer of *Ireland* and Treasurer at War, and Sir *Robert Meredith* one also of the Council-Table.

Secondly, The Lords and Commons desire it may be observed, That, during all these Passages and Negotiations, the Houses of Parliament were never acquainted by the States of *Ireland* with this Treaty of a *Cessation*, much less was their Advice or Counsel demanded; notwithstanding that the Care and Managing of the War was devolved on them, both by Act of Parliament, and by his Majesty's Commission under the Great Seal, To advise, order, and dispose of all Things concerning the Government and Defence of that Kingdom. But the Wants of the Army were often represented and complained of; whereby, with much Craft, a Ground was preparing for the Pretext wherewith now they would cover the Counsels of this *Cessation*, as if nothing had drawn it on, but the extream Wants of their Armies; whereas it is evident, that the Reports of such a Treaty have been, in a great Part, the Cause of their Wants; for thereby the Adventurers were disheartned, Contributions were stopped, and by the

the Admittance to Court of the Negotiators of this *Cessation*, their wicked Counsels have had that Influence, as to procure the intercepting of much Provisions which were sent for *Ireland*; so that Ships going for *Ireland* with Victuals, and others coming from thence with Commodities to exchange for Victuals, have been taken, not only by *Dunkirkers*, having his Majesty's Warrant, but also by *English* Ships, commanded by Sir *John Pennington*, under his Majesty. And moreover, the Parliament Messengers, sent into several Counties with the *Ordinance of January* last for Loans and Contributions, have been taken and imprisoned; their Money taken from them, and not one Penny, either Loan or Contribution, hath been suffered to be sent in for *Ireland*, from those Counties which were under the Power of the King's Army; while in the mean Time the Houses of Parliament, by their Ordinances, Declarations, and Sollicitations to the City of *London*, and the Counties free from the Terror of the King's Forces, were still procuring no contemptible Aid and Relief for the Distresses of *Ireland*.

*Thirdly*, As the Lords and Commons have Reason to declare against this Plot and Design of a *Cessation* of Arms, as being treated and carried on without their Advice; so also because of the great Prejudice which will thereby redound to the Protestant Religion, and the Encouragement and Advancement which it will give to the Practice of Popery; when these Rebellious Papists shall, by this Agreement, continue and set up with more Freedom their Idolatrous Worship, their Popish Superstitions, and Romish Abominations, in all the Places of their Command; to the Dishonouring of God, the Grieving of all true Protestant Hearts, the Dispensing with the Laws of the Crown of *England*, and to the Provoking of the Wrath of a jealous God; as if both Kingdoms had not smarted enough already for this Sin of too much conniving at, and tolerating

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
September,



An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

September.

of, Anti-Christian Idolatry, under Pretext of civil Contracts and politic Agreements.

*Fourthly*, In the fourth Place, they desire it may be observed, that this *Cessation* will prove dishonourable to the public Faith of this Kingdom; it will elude and make null the Acts and Ordinances of Parliament, made for the forfeiting of the Rebels Land; at the passing of which Acts, it was represented, that such a Course would drive the Rebels to Despair; and it proves so, but otherways than was meant; for, despairing of their Force and Courage, they go about to overcome us with their Craft.

*Lastly*, What shall become of the many poor exiled Protestants, turned out of their Estates by this Rebellion, who must now continue begging their Bread, while the Rebels shall enjoy their Lands and Houses? And who shall secure the rest of the Protestants, that either by their own Courage, Industry, and great Charges, have kept their Possessions, or by the Success of our Armies have been restored? Can there be any Assurance gotten from a perfidious Enemy, of a *Cessation* from Treachery and Breach of Agreement, when they shall see a fit Time and Opportunity? These and many other Considerations being well weighed, it will appear evidently that this Design of a *Cessation* is a deep Plot laid by the Rebels, and really invented for their own Safety, and falsely pretended to be for the Benefit of our Armies.

And whereas the Lords and Commons have no certain Information that the *Treaty* is concluded, but are informed by several Letters that all the Protestants, as well Inhabitants as Soldiers in that Kingdom, are resolved to withstand that Proceeding; and to adventure on the greatest Extremities, rather than have any Sort of Peace with that Generation, who have so cruelly, in Time of Peace, murdered many Thousands of our Country-men, and laboured to extirpate the Protestant Religion from amongst them: So they do



do believe, that these Rumours of a *Cessation* An. 19. Car. I.  
 were first contrived by the Enemies of our Religion and Peace; and, by their Practices, the *Treaty* 1643.  
 was carried on with much Subtilty and Sollicitation; thereby to stop the sending of Supplies from  
 thence to our Armies, and for the cooling of the Affections of those who have already shewed their  
 Zeal to the Weal of *Ireland*. And therefore the only Means to defeat this their Policy, and prevent the Evils intended by it, is to settle a Course  
 whereby the Armies of *Ireland* may be at least fenced against Hunger and Cold: For which Purpose it is desired, That all those who are well-affected to the Protestant Religion, either in that  
 or this Kingdom, and all those who, by their Adventures already made, have embarked their particular Interests with the Public of that Kingdom, and do desire a good Return of their Engagements, would join their Endeavours for  
 obviating of that Necessity, which may be made a strong Argument to inforce a destructive *Cessation* of Arms; and that they would not, through  
 too much Suspicion and Jealousy of it, forbear the providing of Supplies, and so occasion that  
 Inconvenience which they ought by all Means to prevent; for by so doing they will lose all their former Pains and Charges; and the withholding  
 of Provisions now will gain Credit to that Calumny laid against this Kingdom, of neglecting the Armies of *Ireland*; and, by the continuing  
 of Supplies, these Forces will be encouraged to continue the War, and so crown both their  
 Work and ours. And, lastly, the Rebels seeing Assistance against them still flowing from hence,  
 must needs be out of Hope of prosecuting, or concluding, this their Design. The Cry of much  
 Protestant Blood, the great Indigency of many ruined Families, the Danger of our Religion almost exiled out of that Kingdom, calls for this  
 last Act of Piety, Charity, Justice, and Policy from us; which being resolved on, Letters are to be  
 dispatched to the several Parts of that Kingdom,  
 to

September.

## 412 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 19. CAR. I.

1643.

September.

to encourage the Commanders and Soldiers upon the aforefaid Reasons and Affurances, that they may not hearken to fuch an unjust and deceitful Counsel; and as, by their profecuting of the War, through God's Bleffing, they have fuccesfully refifted the Rebels Cruelty; fo they may, upon this Occafion, beware they be not over-reached by their Craft.

All which the Lords and Commons do earneftly defire may be ferioufly taken to Heart by all the Kingdom; and that from thofe other Encouragements, mentioned at large in the *Ordinance* of the fourteenth of *July* laft\*, and fuch as now are offered, a Courfe may be taken, where by fuch a constant weekly Contribution may be fettled, as will fupply to the Armies in *Ireland* the meer Neceffities of Nature; which may be more punctually and feafonably tranfmitted unto the feveral Parts of that Kingdom, according to their refpective Wants, that fo the Benefit and Honour of fo pious a Work happily begun, and fuccesfully hitherto carried on, may not be loft when fo little remains to be done; and that the Saving of a Kingdom, the Re-eftablifhing of fo many Proteftant Churches, the Repoffeffing of fo many thoufand Chriftians into their Eftates, may not be deserted and let fall to the Ground; for a little more Pains and Coft.

The reft of this Month was employed, by the Parliament, in foliciting Loans of Money from the City of *London*, for the Payment of their Army. And the *Scots* having fent Word that they were ready to come into *England*, *Propofitions* were ordered to be offered to the City, for the fpeedy raifing of 50,000 *l.* to enable them to begin their March.

*October*

\* By this *Ordinance* (which is at large in *Hufbands's Collections*, p. 233.) the Adventurers of *Ireland* were intitled to a double Proportion of Lands of what was given by the *Act* paffed for that Purpofe, in the Beginning of this Parliament.



October. There is nothing material enter'd in the *Journals* of either House till the eighth of this Month, when a remarkable Affair came on before the Lords. The *French* King had sent over an Ambassador Extraordinary, in order to compose the Differences between the Parliament and, so near a Relation to him as, the King of *England*. The Houses being informed, That this Ambassador came in an amicable Way, or, as the *Journals* express it, *with good Affections*, ordered a Deputation of Lords and Commons to go down to *Gravesend*; to welcome him on his Arrival, and wait upon him to his Lodgings at *Somerset-House*, which was fitted up for that Purpose.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
October.

Soon after this Ambassador's Arrival, Mr. *Wal-* An Ambassador  
*ter Montague*, who followed him out of *France*, in comes from  
his Retinue, was arrested at *Rocheſter*; and, by the *France*, as a Me-  
Commons, committed Prisoner to the *Tower* \*. diator between  
A Motion was also made, That the Letters which the King and  
he had brought over with him, sealed with the Parliament.  
Arms of *France*, and directed to both their Majesties of *England*, should be opened: But that passed in the Negative. On the Imprisonment of this Gentleman, the Ambassador address'd the following haughty Memorial to the House of Lords. It was originally in *French*, and was translated on Purpose to be read in that House, and enter'd in their *Journals*; but it is so lamely done there, as scarcely to be made any Sense of; and we are obliged to the *Journals* of the Commons for the Original, of which we have attempted the following Translation†.

‘ MY Lord the Prince of *Harcourt*, Peer of His Remon-  
‘ *France*, and Master of the Horse to the strance to the  
‘ Most Christian King, Ambassador Extraordinary Lords, on ac-  
‘ count of the ar-  
‘ resting Mr. Mon-  
‘ tague in his Re-  
‘ tinue.

\* This Mr. *Montague* and Sir *Kenelm Digby* had been employed, by the Queen, to solicit Contributions, from the *Engliſh Catholics*, towards supporting the War against the *Scots* in 1639. — This Affair we took some Notice of in our Ninth Volume, p. 173, and 202.

† The Original runs thus in the *Commons Journals*:  
*Monſieur le Prince d'Harcourt, Pair et Grand Eſcuyer de France, Ambaſſadeur Extraordinaire vers le Roy de la Grande Bre- tagne,*



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

October.

to the King of *Great Britain*, being informed that  
 'Mr. *Walter Montague* left *Paris* since his Excellency, and came over into *England*, from the  
 'Queen, disguised amongst the Retinue of Monsieur *De Greffy*, hath been arrested at *Rochester*;  
 'and tho' he was charged with the Care of her  
 'Majesty's Letters, for their Majesties of *Great Britain*, was committed, nevertheless, Prisoner  
 'to the *Tower of London*: His Excellency declares  
 'to the Houses of Parliament, that he knew nothing of his Person, nor of his Disguise, neither did  
 'Monsieur *De Greffy*; but, for the Respect and  
 'Consideration of her Majesty's Letters, which  
 'make it appear that the said Mr. *Montague* had  
 'the Honour to belong to her, and she avoweth  
 'him; the said Ambassador demandeth, in the  
 'Name of her Majesty, and intreats them, in his  
 'own, that Mr. *Montague* may be put into his  
 'Hands, with all the Letters he was Bearer of;  
 'to avoid the Consequences that the just Complaint  
 'of such a Detention may produce.'

After this is enter'd, what is, in the *Lords Journals*, call'd the Sense of that House, on the reading this Paper, viz.

'That this *Walter Montague*, being a Renegado, and a Man banished the Kingdom, for the Mischief he did here; for him to be demanded of the two Houses of Parliament, in so high a Manner as this, by an Ambassador that pretends he comes

*tagne, ayant appris que M. de Montague party de Paris depuis luy, pour venir en Angleterre de la Part de la Reyne, se seroit jetté desguisé dans la Suite de Monsieur de Greffy sans en estre conneu: Qu'a Rochester il auroit esté arresté; et bien que trouvé chargé de Lettres de la Reine pour leurs Majestez de la Grande Bretagne, il auroit, neantmoins, esté conduit Prisonnier en la Tour de Londres: Monseigneur declare à Messieurs du Parlement, qu'il n'a eu aucune Connoissance de sa Personne, ny de son Desguisement, non plus que le dit Sieur de Greffy; mais, pour le Respect et Consideration des Lettres de la Reyne, qui font voir que le dit Sieur de Montague a l'Honneur d'estre à elle, et d'en estre advoqué, il demande de la part de sa Majesté, et les prie de la sienne, qu'ils luy remettent le dit Sieur de Montague entre les Mains, ensemble les Lettres dont il estoit Porteur, à fin d'éviter les Consequences, qui pourroient arriver de la juste Plaine d'une telle Detention.*

comes to endeavour to procure Peace; and giving himself so high a Title, and treating the two Houses of Parliament so low; is a Thing of so extraordinary a Nature, that, though the Houses desire to maintain a good Correspondency with *France*, yet this Kingdom needs not fear any ill Consequence that may follow upon this Business; but hope that God will bless them and protect them, as he hath hitherto done.'

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
October.

It was also ordered to have a Conference with the other House, on the Subject of this Paper, and the Lord-General *Essex* to deliver the Sense of this House to the Commons concerning it. The Lord-General hereupon acquainted the Lords, That it was reported the *French* Ambassador, lately come, had brought many Attendants along with him, several of whom were conceived to be Officers and Commanders; and that if they should go to the King with him, it was likely they would not return. And it being probable that before the Ambassador goes, he would apply to his Lordship for a Safe-Conduct, he desired to know what he should do in this Case. Whereupon the House ordered, That, when the Ambassador sends to his Lordship for a Safe-Conduct, for himself and Followers to go to the King, his Lordship shall desire to see a List of all those he intends to take with him.

*Oct. 9.* At a Conference between the two Houses, it was agreed that the *Answer* to the *French* Ambassador's *Message* should be drawn up by a Committee; which being done, it was reported, read, and agreed to, and was in these Words:

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament  
' have considered of the *Message* in Writing, The Parliament justify their Conduct therein.  
' delivered to the Earl of *Pembroke*, and by him  
' presented unto them, from the Prince *D'Harcourt*, Ambassador Extraordinary from the *French*  
' King; by which he complains that Mr. *Walter*  
*Mon-*



# 418 The Parliamentary History

Ap. 19. Car. I.

1643.

October,

and other Goods of some Masters of Colleges, so that there will be no Means of Subsistence left to any of the Members of the said Colleges, though never so innocent.

May it please your Honours, in tender Compassion to the sad Condition of the poor University, to grant unto us a Freedom from this Sequestration; and that the Fact of some few particular Men, which was, also, by them meant only as an Acknowledgment of their Duty to his Majesty, to whom some of them are obliged as to their Royal Founder, and others as his sworn Chaplains, may not redound to the Depriving of the Members of the several Colleges of all Possibility to continue in this University.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

RA. EXON\*, Vice-Chancellor.

The Lords ordered that this *Petition* should be communicated to the House of Commons, at a Conference, that some Course might be taken for their Relief; but we hear no more of it in either House.

A Misunderstanding between the Parliament's two Generals, Essex and Waller, reconciled.

The Earl of *Essex* and Sir *William Waller*, the two Generals for the Parliament, had long differed in their respective Commands; and it was now run so high, that, this Day, the Earl made it his Request to both Houses, That he might have Leave to resign his Commission, and go beyond the Sea, in regard that the Commission granted to Sir *William Waller* was inconsistent with his own; and in respect to the many Discouragements he had received since his being General. The Lords, conceiving this to be a Business which concerned the present Safety of the whole Kingdom, resolved to have a Conference with the Commons about it;

a b

and

\* Dr. *Ralph Braconrigge*, nominat (See the Bishoprick of *Exeter* by the King, upon the Translation of *Bishop Hall* to *Norwich*. See Vol. X. p. 146.)



and to declare, that the Sense of this House is, That the Commission to Sir *William Waller* be delivered up, being inconsistent with that to the Lord-General, from both Houses; whereby it was voted, That all Commissions should be granted by the Lord-General, and be under his Command, being necessary for the present Affairs and the Safety of the Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
October.

The House of Commons was before-hand apprised of this Matter, and, at the same Time, sent a Message to the Lords, to let them know, That Sir *William Waller* had offered to give up his last Commission; and that they were of Opinion the best Way to discover the Conveniency or Inconveniency of it, was, to appoint a Committee to go to the Lord-General, with Power to consider of, and advise with his Excellency, what Course was fittest for settling this Business the most for the Safety of the Kingdom. A Committee of both Houses was immediately appointed to wait upon the Lord-General, on this Affair, each House, tho' late, resolving to sit till their Return; after which the Lords received the following *Votes* from the Commons:

‘ The Lords and Commons do declare, That, by virtue of their last Commission, Sir *William Waller* is under the Command of the Lord-General, and is bound to obey him, notwithstanding any thing in his Commission; and Sir *William Waller*, being present at this Debate, did declare, That he ever had been, and is, willing and ready to obey his Excellency the Lord-General’s Commands. And,

‘ Whereas, by the Words of the last Commission to Sir *William Waller*, it is mentioned, That he was to receive his Instructions from both Houses of Parliament, it is this Day ordered, by the Lords and Commons, That Sir *William Waller* shall, from Time to Time, receive and observe such Instructions as the Lord-General shall give him.

## 422 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. Kingdom, his Majesty's Authority in Parliament, and the Being thereof, and the Preservation of the Administration of the Justice of this Kingdom; and perceiving, by these Mischiefs, how absolutely necessary it is to have the Great Seal attending the Parliament, for the Reasons aforesaid, after a mature Debate, this Question was put, Whether a Great Seal of *England* shall be forthwith made to attend the Parliament for Dispatch of the Affairs of the Parliament and the Kingdom? it passed affirmatively. And accordingly,

1643.  
October.

The Lords give  
their Consent  
thereto.

The next Day the Lords sent a Message to the Commons, to acquaint them with their Concurrence in the *Vote* for making a new Great Seal of *England*.

We took Notice in the Proceedings of *July* last, that the Lords having refused their Consent to the *Vote* of the Commons for making a new Great Seal, the latter gave Orders for making one; the Form of which was, a Representation of the House of Commons, the Members sitting, on one Side; and the Arms of *England* and *Ireland*, on the other. But the Lords having now given their Consent, another Great Seal was ordered to be made in the very same Form and Manner as the King's.

*October* 16. A Letter from the Earl of *Manchester*, another of the Parliament's Generals, was read in the House of Lords; which contained an Account of a Victory he had obtained against the King's Forces in *Lincolnshire*; the Circumstances of which were as follows:

My Lords,

Letter from the  
Earl of Manchester,  
at Horn-  
castle.

*I* Hold it my Duty to give your Lordships an Account of the Advantage that God hath been pleased to give unto those Forces, whereof you have been pleased to honour me with the Command: Upon Wednesday last, being the 12th of October, I drew up the whole Body of Horse and Foot before the Castle of Bolingbroke; having had, the Night  
ber



before, through some Neglect of the Yorkshire Horse who kept the Out-Guards, some of our Horse put to run great Hazard; yet they behaved themselves very well, and got off with the Loss of only one Colour. After I was drawn into a Body, Word was brought unto me that the Enemy was advancing towards me with eighty Troops of Horse: Upon this Intelligence, I thought it my Duty not to quit the Place where I was, unless it was by marching to meet them, which I did; and when my Horse were drawn into as good Order as we could put them, and the Enemy was drawn very near to them, the Foot and Artillery marched up as fast as they could after the Horse, but came not so near as to give any Help; only they did dishearten the Enemy much, by the Confession of the Prisoners which we took, and made them charge the Horse sooner and more confusedly then otherwise they would have done.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.

October.

I must give the Horse under my Command their due Praise, that they charged very gallantly. Col. Cromwell charged in the Van with my Regiment and his own, and behaved himself with Resolution and Honour; Sir Thomas Fairfax (who is a Person that exceeds any Expressions as a Commendation of his Resolution and Valour) was to second the first Body of Horse that charged, and he performed what he was commanded with Readiness and Success. I may truly say that, after the second Charge, our Men had little else to do but to pursue a flying Enemy; which they did for many Miles. What Loss truly the Enemy had, punctually, I cannot yet speak; only this I can say, divers Men of Quality lay dead upon the Place, and divers that rode away fell dead from off their Horses in the Town, some Miles off from the Place where we fought; I have sent 800 Prisoners to Boston. There were killed upon the Place about 300 as near as we can guess; and every Day the Horse-Guards are bringing in Prisoners, whom they find scattered about the Country.

I am now intending to march forwards towards Gainborough, and shall do my best to make a Division



# 424 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I. *Version for the Relief of Hull, if I can in respect of the Time of the Year.*

1643.

October.

*I shall now beseech your Lordships, that the Glory and the Honour of this Defeat may be ascribed unto God; for truly it is only due unto him.*

*My Lords, I should have been abler to have done Service, if the Number of Foot and Horse out of the several Counties had been made good unto me; but I shall not neglect my Duty, and shall beg this Favour from your Lordships, that you would esteem me worthy of your good Opinion, as*

Your Lordships

Horncastle, October 12,  
1643.

Most humble Servant,

MANCHESTER.

*P. S. I cannot hear there were killed on our Side above twenty, and hurt about sixty.*

The Manner of  
presenting the  
Lord Mayor-E-  
lect of London  
to the House of  
Lords.

After the reading of this Letter, a new Lord-Mayor of *London* was presented to the House of Lords for their Approbation. As this was the second Time any such Ceremony had been performed there, it will not be improper to give the whole of it from their *Journal*; observing, at the same Time, That it shews what a perfect Harmony and good Understanding there was between the Parliament and City of *London*.

‘ Sir *John Woolaston*, Knight, Lord Mayor Elect of the City of *London*, was presented to this House by the Recorder of *London* and most of the Alderman and Sheriffs of the said City; and the Recorder made a Speech to this House shewing, That, according to their Charter and Custom of the said City, the Lord Mayor Elect was presented to be approved by the Lord-Keeper, in Right of his Majesty; but in the Absence of the Lord Keeper they humbly desire that their Lordships would please to give their Approbation of him, and order that he may be sworn at the accustomed Day by  
some

some of the Barons of the *Exchequer*; they also made  
 Expression of the Faithfulness and Readiness of  
 the City to protect the Parliament with their Lives  
 and Fortunes.

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 October.

Hereupon the House commanded their Speaker  
 to declare,

‘ The Lords do conceive, That, in the Absence  
 of his Majesty, his Great Council of Peers is the  
 most proper Power for the City of *London* and  
 your Lordship to address yourselves unto, for an  
 Approbation of that Choice the City hath made  
 of you for their Lord-Mayor; whose Duty and  
 Loyalty to the King and Kingdom hath well ap-  
 peared already concerning the said City; and my  
 Lords are very well pleased that the City of *Lon-  
 don* hath made Choice of your Lordship to govern  
 the said City, especially in these Times of Trouble  
 and Danger; recommending, in his Majesty’s Ab-  
 sence, unto you, that your Care may be great to  
 prevent all Tumults and Disorders that may grow  
 in the said City, and to suppress all Factions that  
 may appear there to their Disquiet, or the Danger  
 of this Kingdom.

‘ And it is also ordered by the Lords in Parlia-  
 ment, upon the Presenting the Lord Mayor Elect  
 of *London*, this Day, to the House, That the  
 Barons of the *Exchequer* that are, or shall be, in  
 or near *London*, shall be personally present on the  
 30th of this Instant *October*, in the *Exchequer-  
 Court*, although the Term should be then ad-  
 journed; and then administer unto the said Lord  
 Mayor Elect the usual Oath that hath formerly  
 been administered to his Predecessors, the Lord  
 Mayors of the said City of *London*.

‘ And because of the Expressions of the Re-  
 corder\*, of the great Affection of the City to  
 this House, their Lordships thought fit to appoint  
 a Committee to draw up a special Return of  
 Thanks for the same; and the House appointed the

\* *John Glynn*, Esq; so appointed by Parliament on the Remo-  
 val of Sir *Thomas Gardiner* for his Adherence to the King.



An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

October.

the Earl of *Sarum*, Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*, and the Lord *Wharton*, to draw up the same, who reported the Draught thereof to this House, which was approved of; and the Lord Mayor Elect, Mr. Recorder, and the Aldermen and Sheriffs were called in, and the Speaker signified unto them,

‘ That my Lords have thought fit to call you  
 ‘ in again to let you know, that they cannot but,  
 ‘ with many Thanks, take Notice of the Expressions of Mr. Recorder, in the Name of the  
 ‘ whole City, of the Readiness thereof to live no  
 ‘ longer, than with a Desire to live to declare their  
 ‘ Affections to this House and the Parliament;  
 ‘ which their Lordships make no Doubt of, they  
 ‘ having observed so many real Expressions, in  
 ‘ these dangerous Times, of their Faithfulness and  
 ‘ Assistance for the Safety of the Parliament and  
 ‘ the Kingdom, that they suit fully with their Expression now to this House; and have been such  
 ‘ and so eminent, as no Time or Story can parallel: And as the Lords do acknowledge this with  
 ‘ much Contentment, so they do again assure you  
 ‘ that their Sitting here and constant Care shall be,  
 ‘ as to endeavour and procure the Safety of Religion, the Parliament, and Kingdom in general;  
 ‘ so, in particular and in especial Manner, the Safety, Prosperity, Honour, and Advancement of  
 ‘ your so well-deserving and renowned City.’

The Scots Army, being now ready to enter this Kingdom, only stayed for the stipulated Sums, which had been agreed upon at *Edinburgh*, some Time before, by Commissioners on both Sides appointed for that Purpose. To this End the Commons sent up an *Ordinance* this Day, to the Lords, which they had framed to hasten their March, which was readily agreed to by the latter. The Title thereof runs thus: *An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, for the Repayment of all such Sums of Money as are, or shall be, lent by any Person or Persons, for the speedy*



*Speedy bringing of our Brethren of Scotland into this Realm, for our Assistance in this present War.* An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
The Whole of it is too long and tedious to be recited: But the Preamble, declaring the Reasons of Parliament for so extraordinary a Step, is too remarkable to be omitted. October.

‘ **T**HE Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, taking into their serious Consideration the treacherous and bloody Plots, Conspiracies, Attempts, and Practices of the Enemies of God against the true Religion and Professors thereof in all Places, especially in the Kingdoms of *England, Scotland, and Ireland*, ever since the Reformation of Religion; and how much their Rage, Power, and Presumption are of late, and at this Time, encreased and exercised, whereof the deplorable Estate of the Church and Kingdom of *Ireland*, the distempered Estate of this Church and Kingdom of *England*, and the dangerous Estate of the Church and Kingdom of *Scotland*, are present and public Testimonies; and finding that their *Supplications, Remonstrances, Protestations, and Treaties*, have nothing at all prevailed; but that the adverse Party doth still endeavour the Destruction of our Religion, Laws, and Liberties, by Force and open Violence; and finding that the said Popish and Jesuited Councils and Practices, which have brought the two Kingdoms of *England and Ireland* into the lamentable Condition under which they now groan, to have, in the Intentions of the Authors and Contrivers of them, extended likewise into the Kingdom of *Scotland*: In this common Distraction and Danger of all the three Kingdoms, as an effectual Means of their Preservation, they have thought it necessary that all the well-affected to the true Protestant Religion and just Liberties of the Subjects in the three Kingdoms, should enter into a nearer Union and Association for the mutual Defence of each other; and, in pursuance thereof, a *solemn League*

An Ordinance  
for raising of  
Money for bringing the Scots  
Army into England;

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

October.

‘ *League and Covenant*, for Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happiness of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the three Kingdoms, hath been agreed upon by the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*; which hath been already taken and subscribed by the Members of both Houses of the Parliament of *England*, the Members of the Assembly of Divines, and the Commissioners of the Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*; is now taking in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*; and is to be taken in all other Parts of this Kingdom, in the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and in the Realm of *Ireland*:

‘ And whereas each Person that hath taken, or shall take, the said *Covenant*, is bound, according to his Place and Calling, in this common Cause of Religion, Liberty, and Peace of the Kingdoms, to assist and defend all those that enter into the same, in the executing and pursuing thereof:

‘ And that it cannot be expected that the Contrivers and Authors of our present Troubles will, thereby, be any whit moved to desist from their wicked Enterprizes, but rather that their Malice will be the more encreased; therefore, for the better resisting thereof, and the speedier settling of a blessed Peace, there are likewise certain Articles agreed upon by the two Houses of Parliament and the Kingdom of *Scotland*, whereby, amongst other Things, our Brethren of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, for our Assistance in this present War, are speedily to send an Army of 21,000 Horse and Foot, and a Train of Artillery suitable, into this Kingdom.

‘ And whereas the Charge of levying, arming, and bringing those Forces together furnished, as likewise the fitting the Train of Artillery, will necessarily require great Sums of Money, which our Brethren of *Scotland*, by reason of the many Charges that have lain upon them of late by their *Irish* Army and late Wars, are not able, at the present, to raise within that Kingdom; and so much



‘ much the rather, by reason that the Brotherly-  
 ‘ Assistance Money is not yet paid unto them : We  
 ‘ are, by these Articles, presently to pay unto  
 ‘ them the Sum of 100,000 *l.* by way of Ad-  
 ‘ vance, towards the monthly Payments to be  
 ‘ made to their Army, after such Time as they  
 ‘ shall make their first Entrance into this Kingdom;  
 ‘ and by these Articles our Brethren of *Scotland*,  
 ‘ to manifest their Willingness, to their utmost A-  
 ‘ bility, to be helpful to the Kingdom in this com-  
 ‘ mon Cause, have agreed to give the Public Faith  
 ‘ of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be jointly made  
 ‘ use of with the Public Faith of the Kingdom of  
 ‘ *England*, for the present taking up of 200,000 *l.*  
 ‘ Sterling, in the Kingdom of *England* or elsewhere,  
 ‘ for speedy Payment of the 100,000 *l.* Sterling  
 ‘ as aforesaid, and towards satisfying, in good Pro-  
 ‘ portion, the Arrears of the *Scots* Army in *Ireland* :  
 ‘ Be it ordained, &c.

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

October.

Some Time after this, the *Scots* finding that  
 the Money from *England* did not come so soon as  
 was expected, they sent a *Remonstrance* over, al-  
 ledging, ‘ That they saw plainly, by the *Cessa-*  
 ‘ *tion* of Arms in *Ireland*, that the Protestant Re-  
 ‘ ligion was to be rooted out there, and the whole  
 ‘ Force of the Rebels turned against the *Scots* Ar-  
 ‘ my in that Kingdom ; which made the *Scots* take  
 ‘ the *Covenant* unanimously ; and they were re-  
 ‘ solved, their Eyes being now opened, to join  
 ‘ with their Brethren of *England* in Defence and  
 ‘ Preservation of Religion against the common  
 ‘ Enemy.

‘ That they had named all their Officers and  
 ‘ listed all their Soldiers ; their Artillery and Am-  
 ‘ munition was at *Leith*, and they were making  
 ‘ Provisions of Victual, as far as they were able.  
 ‘ But they confessed, nay they said they were not  
 ‘ ashamed to confess their Want of Money ;  
 ‘ therefore they desired to have a speedy Supply,  
 ‘ whereby they might be able to keep their Army  
 ‘ together when it was in a Body. And when-  
 ‘ ever



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

October.

Who publish a  
Proclamation, in  
the King's  
Name, for re-  
cruiting their  
Army.

ever they should have proper Notice, from Par-  
liament, of the Agreements, they would be ready  
to march to their Rendezvous in forty-eight Hours  
Time. Lastly, they desired that the Towns, sit-  
pulated for, might be taken into Consideration.

It is necessary to be remembered in this Place,  
That about the Middle of *August*, the Estates of  
*Scotland* had published a \**Proclamation* in the King's  
Name, requiring all Persons, from sixteen to sixty,  
to appear in Arms, in support and defence of the  
*Solemn League and Covenant*. This the King was  
so highly incensed at, that, on the 16th of *Sep-  
tember*, he wrote a Letter to the Council, setting  
forth, 'That he had, with great Amazement, seen  
' a Paper, most impudently published without his  
' Privy or Authority, tending to cast the beloved  
' People of his Native Kingdom into the like  
' bloody Combustions and rebellious Violation of  
' their Religion and Allegiance, as those already  
' in *England*: Forbidding all Obedience to the  
' said *Proclamation*, and all other Papers publish-  
' ed in his Name, which should not immediately  
' be warranted by Himself: And commanding this  
' his *Letter* to be published, and also recorded in  
' the Books of the Privy Council there.'—What  
Regard was paid to this will appear under the Pro-  
ceedings of the next Month.

Proceedings a-  
gainst Baron  
Trevor, in the  
Case of Ship-  
Money.

*Oct.* 18. Sir *Thomas Trevor*, Knt. one of the  
Barons of the *Exchequer*, who had been concerned  
in the Business of *Ship-Money*, and impeached by  
the House of Commons for the same, delivered in  
his Answer, this Day, to the Charge: Likewise a  
Petition to the Lords, acknowledging, That his  
Opinion and Judgment, in that Case, was given  
according to his Conscience, without any Corrup-  
tion or sinister End whatsoever; which he then con-  
ceived to be, also, according to Law: But since  
the Parliament had declared it to be contrary to the  
Laws and Statutes of this Realm, he acknow-  
ledged

\* This *Proclamation* at large, and the King's *Letter* are in *Rush-  
worth*, Vol. V. p. 482.

ledged his Error of Judgment therein, and is most heartily sorry for the same; humbly submitting it, and whatsoever else he is charged withall by the said Impeachment, to their Lordships Judgment and favourable Consideration. It was ordered that this should be communicated to the House of Commons, and to acquaint them, that the Lords would give Judgment against Baron Trevor the next Morning.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
October.

Accordingly, October 19, the Lords being in their Robes, and the Commons, with their Speaker, come up, and demanding Judgment as usual, the Speaker of the House of Lords pronounced the following Sentence:

I. *That the said Sir Thomas Trevor should be* His Sentence *fined in the Sum of 6000l. to be forthwith paid and disposed of for the Service of the Kingdom†.*

II. *That he shall be imprisoned in the Tower of London during the Pleasure of this House.*

But, upon another Petition from the Baron, he was released from his Imprisonment the next Day, and continued to act in his Place.

The Judges being thus humbled, the Commons revived their Prosecution of the Archbishop of Canterbury, with so much Vigour as, afterwards, to bring him to the Block.——Preparatory to this,

Oct. 23. The Lords read the Articles of Im-<sup>Abp. Laud's</sup>peachment, for High Treason, against him, which Trial, had been sent up by the Commons two Days before; and ordered that the Archbishop should have a Copy of the Articles sent him, and a proper Time assigned him to put in his Answer.

Nothing more occurs, worth our Notice, in October.

The Month of November begins with a Recital of the several Articles, to be agreed on between the Parliament of England and the Convention of the

† This corrects a Mistake of Lord Clarendon, who makes Sir Thomas Trevor's Fine the same as Sir Robert Berkeley's.



An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

November.

the Estates of Scotland; which, upon reading *seriatim*, in the House of Lords, were severally agreed to: Particularly, to pay the Scots 100,000*l.* as soon as it could be raised, either upon their own Credit, or, on the Credit of both Kingdoms. But, we shall postpone these *Articles*, till they come to be fully concluded; and, in the *interim*, present the Reader with a Copy of some *Additional Instructions*, sent at the same Time, along with the said *Articles*, to the Parliament's Commissioners at *Edinburgh*\*, which are not taken Notice of in the *Collections* of these Times.

Additional Instructions to the Parliament's Commissioners in Scotland.

I. 'YOU shall make known to our Brethren of Scotland, That the *Propositions* expressed in the Paper of the 25th of *August* last, sent from Scotland, concerning the Assistance desired by both Houses from that Kingdom, as also the *Proposition* concerning the settling a Garrison in *Berwick*, have been taken into Consideration by the two Houses; and have been, by them, agreed and consented unto, without any material or considerable Alterations.

II. You are, therefore, authorized and required, according to these *Votes* of the two Houses, herewith sent you, to agree and conclude, in the Name of both Houses, the said *Propositions*, and to perfect the respective *Treaties* in that Behalf, with all Expedition; and thereupon to hasten, all that possibly may be, the Assistance expected from that Kingdom; and to suffer no further Time to be lost in that Behalf, considering what Money for the present can be raised is now sent away to them; and no Diligence shall be wanting to procure and convey to them what remains, according to the *Treaty*, so far as our present Straits and Extremities will possibly permit.

III.

\* In these *Additional Instructions*, the following Persons were appointed Commissioners, besides those named in the *First Instructions*, (p. 340 in this Volume) viz, Robert Goodwyn, Richard Barwis, Bryan Stapylton, and Robert Fenswick, Esqrs. John Kendrick, Alderman, and Mr. Francis Allen.



III. ‘ And whereas, by the said *Treaties*, several Things are to be perform’d and done by the joint Advice of both Kingdoms, or their Commissioners thereunto authorized, which cannot be so well transacted but by those that shall be upon the Place; you have, therefore, hereby full Power and Authority given you to come into this Kingdom with the *Scots* Army, and to advise, debate, and conclude with our Brethren of *Scotland*, or such as shall be authorized by them thereunto; and, by joint Advice with them, to put in Execution all such Matters and Things concerning the Well-ordering, Directing, Disposal, and Accommodation of the Forces brought in and employed by them for our Assistance, as shall be found requisite and needful, from Time to Time, for the Prosecution of this Cause, and the Ends expressed in the *Covenant*, now solemnly sworn and enter’d into in both Nations, and in the *Propositions* now sent unto you; and you are to acquaint the two Houses with your Proceedings and Conclusions in the same, from Time to Time, and to receive and observe such further Directions from them, as they shall think fit.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
November.

IV. ‘ You shall also take Care, and are hereby fully authorized, to sequester, in the Counties of *Nottingham*, *York*, *Bishoprick of Durham*, *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Westmoreland*, and in the Town and County of *Newcastle* upon *Tyne*, in the City and County of the City of *York*, in the Town and County of the Town of *Nottingham*, in the Town and County of the Town of *Kingston* upon *Hull*, and in the Town and Port of *Berwick*, the Estates of such Persons as, by any *Ordinance* or *Ordinances* of Parliament, are, or hath been, declared to be sequestrable, or shall hereafter be so declared; and to proceed therein as in your Directions you shall find to be most advantageous to the Public Service, to the Intent that the Profits arising there-  
VOL. XII. E c upon

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.

November.

upon, may be employed for and toward the Payment of the said Forces, and of such Forces of this Kingdom as are, or shall be, raised and employed by the two Houses of Parliament in the said Counties, Cities, and Towns; and otherwise for the defraying of such Charges as shall grow due for and by reason of their Assistance of us in this War: And you shall have Power to make Allowance to such Persons as shall be necessarily employed in the Execution of the Premises, as shall be meet; and shall, from Time to Time, give in an Account, in Writing, of your Proceedings in this Business, to both Houses: And all Lord-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieutenants, and other Officers and Ministers whatsoever, are hereby enjoined and required to be aiding and assisting to you herein, as in all Things else that shall concern the Good of this Service and the Public Interests of both Kingdoms, expressed in the *Covenant*.

V. And forasmuch as the two Houses do hold it of absolute Necessity, that Commissioners from the Kingdom of *Scotland* should be forthwith sent to reside in *London*, or elsewhere near the Parliament, with sufficient Power and Authority to treat and conclude of all such Things as shall be necessary for the Good of the three Kingdoms, in pursuance of the *Covenant* and of the late *Treaty*; with a further Power to send some of themselves, or any others by joint Consent of this Kingdom, to any the Parts beyond the Seas, for the procuring of Monies, or the Engagement of other States in the common Cause; you shall, therefore, with all Earnestness, press this Article, as that without which the whole Business is like to become very dilatory, if not wholly fruitless.

VI. You are likewise to advise with our Brethren of *Scotland*, of the Ways and Means whereby the Public Faith of that Kingdom may be engaged and made beneficial for the raising and discharging of the 200,000 *l.* to be advanced according to the *Treaty*.

VII. You



VII. ' You are likewise to make known to our  
' Brethren of *Scotland* the *Votes* of both Houses  
' concerning the *Cessation* of *Ireland*, lately con-  
' cluded by Pretence of his Majesty's Authority;  
' and that it is the *Resolution* of both Houses to  
' oppose to the utmost, as long as God shall en-  
' able them thereunto, the said *Cessation*; and to  
' encourage, as far as lies in their Power, all those  
' Forces, as well *Scots* as other *British* there, for  
' the utter subduing of the Rebels, and Preven-  
' tion of their setting up Popery in that Kingdom;  
' and to this end they will speedily take Care to  
' make Provision of Victuals, Cloaths, and other  
' Necessaries, for the Subsistence of those Forces  
' which they will send over, with all Speed, into  
' that Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

November.

VIII. ' You are also to consider with our Bre-  
' thren of *Scotland* of the fittest and best Ways  
' and Means for the ordering of the *Scots* and other  
' *British* Forces in *Ireland*, at the easiest Expence  
' and Charge to both Kingdoms, and in such  
' Manner as may best prosecute that War, and  
' the Ends exprest in the *Covenant*; and to draw  
' up the same in *Propositions* to be presented speed-  
' ily to the Consideration of both Houses. And,  
' in the mean Season, you are authorized to settle  
' upon some Course with our Brethren of *Scotland*,  
' by the joint Advice of the Commissioners of  
' both Kingdoms, to manage that War and to  
' prevent the present Evils; and speedily to make  
' known to both Houses what you shall do here-  
' in.

IX. ' You are also, for the Encouragement of the  
' *Scots* Army in *Ireland*, to let our Brethren know,  
' that we will hasten away, with all Speed, the  
' 60,000*l.* promised, the 10,000 Suits of Cloaths,  
' and such other Necessaries as we shall be able to  
' provide: And you are to treat and consider with  
' our Brethren of *Scotland* of the Ways that lye  
' in the Power of the two Houses, to give them  
' Satisfaction for the Remainder of the Arrears



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

November,

owing to the said Army, it being impossible, for the present, to pay them in Money.

X. ' You are to cause the Account of the Scots Army in *Ireland*, for Pay of the Officers and Soldiers, to be made up according to the Establishment of the *English* Army there, from the Time of each Regiment and Company's first Landing and Muster by Mr. *Kennedy*, untill the Day of Mr. *Clayton's* Muster in *September*, 1642, and from thence according to Mr. *Clayton's* Muster-Rolls, especially such as were taken this last Year; which Account is to be delivered to the Auditors for the Wars in *Ireland* to ingross, and to present the same to the Commons House of Parliament; and, for this end, the Clerk of the said House and the Auditor are to deliver you Certificates, under their Hands, of the Particulars of the said Establishment; and if any Doubts shall arise thereupon, you are hereby authorized, according to Right and Equity, to endeavour the Removal of the same, that the Account may have a final Determination.'

The Earl of Holland, who had joined the King at Oxford, comes back to the Parliament.

November 6. An Account was brought to the House of Lords, that the Earl of *Holland*, who had been with the King some Time, was taken by a Party of the Parliament's Forces: Hereupon he was ordered to be committed to the Custody of the Black Rod. But, upon Examination, it being found, that his Lordship had left the King and was returning to Parliament, he was set at Liberty. However, this Earl had a narrow Escape in the House of Commons; for a Motion for sending him to the *Tower* passed in the Negative, by only 59 against 58; as did another for his being made Prisoner elsewhere, by 59 against 56.—Mr. *Whitlocke* writes, That when his Lordship was examined he said, ' That when he heard of the *Cessation* in *Ireland*, his Conscience would not give him Leave to stay any longer with them at *Oxford*.'—But Lord *Clarendon* imputes the Earl's Re-

Return to the Parliament to the cold Reception he found at *Oxford*, 'Where he expected upon his first Appearance to have had his Key restored to him; to have been in the same Condition he was in the Bed-Chamber, and in the Council, and in the King's Grace and Countenance; for he thought nothing of former Miscarriages ought to be remembered; that all those were cancelled by the Merit of coming to the King Now, and bringing such considerable Persons with him, and disposing others to follow.' \*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
November.

Now, 10. The Commons had framed an *Ordinance* relating to their new Great Seal, which the Lords were not over hasty to agree to; at last, on repeated *Messages* from the Commons about it, the Lords passed it this Day, with some few Alterations; to which the Commons having agreed, the same was ordered to be printed and published as follows:

' **W** Hereas the *Great Seal* of England, which, by the Laws of this Realm, ought to attend the Parliament, being the Supreme Court of Justice and Judicature within this Realm, for the Dispatch of the great and weighty Affairs of the Common-wealth, which is especially interested and concerned therein, was, above a Year last past; that is to say, the 22d Day of *May*, 1642, by the then Lord-Keeper thereof, *Edward* Lord *Littleton*, then a Member and Speaker of the House of Peers in Parliament, contrary to the great Trust in him reposed, and Duty of his Place, secretly and perfidiously conveyed away from the Parliament into the King's Army, raised against the Parliament; the said Lord-Keeper departing therewith into the said Army, without the Leave or Privy of the said House; by Means whereof, great Mischiefs and Inconveniences have ensued to this Kingdom, and the Kingdom of *Ireland*:

An Ordinance  
for making a  
new Great Seal,

E e 3

And

\* The Earls of *Bedford*, *Clare*, &c. of whom more hereafter,



438 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

November.

‘ And whereas the said *Great Seal* ought constantly to remain in the Hands and Custody of one  
 ‘ or more Officer or Officers, sworn for that Service, and to be used and employed for the Weal  
 ‘ and Safety of his Majesty’s People ; which, notwithstanding, hath been divers Times, since the  
 ‘ Conveying away thereof as aforesaid, put into the  
 ‘ Hands of other Persons not sworn, and Popishly  
 ‘ and dangerously affected, who have had the disposing and managing thereof at their own Wills  
 ‘ and Pleasures ; and hath been traiterously and  
 ‘ perniciously abused, to the Ruin and Destruction  
 ‘ of the Parliament and Kingdom, by granting  
 ‘ and issuing out divers illegal Commissions of Array, and other unlawful Commissions for raising  
 ‘ of Forces against the Parliament ; by issuing out  
 ‘ most foul and scandalous Papers, under the  
 ‘ Name and Title of Proclamations, against both  
 ‘ Houses of Parliament, and divers Members  
 ‘ thereof, and others adhering to them, and proclaiming them Traitors and Rebels ; Commissions of *Oyer and Terminer*, to proceed against  
 ‘ divers of them as Traitors, and other Commissions to seize and confiscate their Estates, for  
 ‘ no other Cause, but for doing their Duties and Services to the Common-wealth ; as likewise  
 ‘ by granting that horrid Commission, for executing of that most bloody and detestable Design  
 ‘ of *Waller* and *Tompkins*, and others, for the Destruction of the Parliament, and City of *London*, and of the Army raised for their just Defence ; and (as if Massacres and Assassinations  
 ‘ had been but light and venial Crimes) another Commission hath been granted, under the same  
 ‘ Seal, for a Cessation of Arms with the barbarous  
 ‘ and bloody Rebels in *Ireland*, after the Effusion  
 ‘ of so much innocent Blood, and Slaughter of  
 ‘ above 100,000 Protestants, Men, Women, and  
 ‘ Children, by their merciless and bloody Hands ;  
 ‘ whereby a Cessation of Arms is accordingly  
 ‘ concluded, and those brutish Rebels thereby  
 ‘ emboldened to prepare themselves, not only for



‘ a total Extirpation of the Protestants remain-  
 ‘ ing there, but for a Conquest also of this King-  
 ‘ dom : And further, by granting of several Com-  
 ‘ missions, and Offices of Trust and Command,  
 ‘ to notorious Papists, who by the Laws and  
 ‘ Statutes of this Realm, are made incapable  
 ‘ thereof ; and by conferring of Honours and Dig-  
 ‘ nities, and granting of Lands and Estates to di-  
 ‘ vers exorbitant Delinquents, who stand legally  
 ‘ impeached of High Treason and other high  
 ‘ Crimes and Misdemeanors in Parliament :

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 November.

‘ All which, and many other unlawful and  
 ‘ enormous Acts have passed under the said *Great*  
 ‘ *Seal*, since the Removal thereof from the Par-  
 ‘ liament, as aforesaid : Which the Lords and  
 ‘ Commons taking into their Consideration, and  
 ‘ finding all Ways and Means obstructed for the  
 ‘ procuring of any Redress from his Majesty in  
 ‘ the Premises, notwithstanding their long Hopes,  
 ‘ and incessant Labours for the obtaining thereof,  
 ‘ are bound, in Duty and of Necessity, to provide  
 ‘ some speedy Remedy for these insupportable  
 ‘ Mischiefs :

‘ Be it therefore *declared* and *ordained* by the  
 ‘ said Lords and Commons assembled in Parlia-  
 ‘ ment, That as well all and every the said Acts  
 ‘ formerly mentioned, which have passed under  
 ‘ the said *Great Seal*, as also all Letters Patents  
 ‘ and Grants of any Lands, Goods, or Estates,  
 ‘ of any Person or Persons whatsoever, for ad-  
 ‘ hering to the Parliament ; all Compositions or  
 ‘ Grants of any Wardships, or Leases of any  
 ‘ Wards, Lands, Liveries, *Primier Seisins* & *Ou-*  
 ‘ *ster les Maines*, since the said 22d Day of *May*,  
 ‘ 1642, which have not, according to the due  
 ‘ Course of Law, passed through the Court of  
 ‘ Wards and Liveries, established by Law : All  
 ‘ Grants since the said 22d of *May*, 1642, of  
 ‘ any Honours, Dignities, Manors, Lands, Here-  
 ‘ ditaments, or other Thing whatsoever, to any  
 Per-

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

November.

Person or Persons, which have voluntarily contributed, or shall voluntarily contribute, any Aid or Assistance to the Maintenance of the unnatural War raised against the Parliament; and all Pardons granted to any such Person or Persons; and all other Acts or Things whatsoever, contrary to, or in Derogation of, the Proceedings of both, or either Houses of Parliament, which have passed under the said *Great Seal*, since the Removal thereof from the Parliament, shall be, and are hereby declared to be, utterly Invalid, Void, and of none Effect, to all Intents and Purposes.

And that all and every Act or Thing, which, after the Publication of this *Ordinance*, shall pass by, or under, the said *Great Seal*, or under any *Great Seal* of *England*, (other than what is hereby appointed and established) shall be utterly Void, Frustrate, and of none Effect; and every Person or Persons, which shall put the same in Use, or shall claim any Thing thereby, shall be held and adjudged a public Enemy of this State.

And be it further ordained by the said Lords and Commons, That a *Great Seal* of *England*, already by them made and provided, shall be forthwith put in Use; and shall be, and is hereby authorized and established to be, of like Force, Power, and Validity, to all Intents and Purposes as any *Great Seal* of *England* hath been, or ought to be.

And that it shall be put into the Hands and Custody of the Persons hereafter named, who are hereby ordained Commissioners for that Purpose; that is to say, *John* Earl of *Rutland*, and *Oliver* Earl of *Bolingbroke*, Members of the House of Peers; *Oliver St John*, Esq; his Majesty's Solicitor-General \*, *John Wilde*, Serjeant

\* The Parliament continued to give Mr. *St John* the Title of Solicitor-General, though his Majesty had long before revoked his Patent; and conferred that Office on Sir *Thomas Gardner*, who had been put out of his Place of Recorder of *London* by the Parliament on account of his taking Part with the King.



‘jeant at Law, *Samuel Brown* and *Edmund Pri-  
deaux*, Esqrs. Members of the House of Com-  
mons; which said Persons, or any three or  
more of them, whereof one Member or more  
of the Lords House, also one Member or more  
of the House of Commons shall be present, shall  
have, and are hereby authorized to have, the  
keeping, ordering, and disposing thereof; as also  
all such and the like Power and Authority, as  
any Lord Chancellor, or Lord-Keeper, or Com-  
missioner of the *Great Seal*, for the Time being  
hath had, used, or ought to have.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
November.

Mr. *Whitlocke* informs us ‘That the Earl of  
*Rutland*, appointed one of the Commissioners by  
the foregoing *Ordinance*, desired to be excused, as  
not understanding the Law, nor the Oath to be  
taken: Whereupon the Earl of *Kent*, (whom  
Lord *Clarendon* styles a Man of far meaner Parts)  
readily accepted the Place.’

A few Days after the new Great Seal was car-  
ried up by the Speaker of the House of Commons,  
the whole House attending him, and delivered to  
the Speaker of the Lords House; who, in the  
Presence of both Houses, delivered it to the Com-  
missioners; and they all took an Oath, to exe-  
cute the Office of Keepers of the Great Seal of  
*England*, in all Things according to the Orders  
and Directions of both Houses of Parliament;  
the Speaker of the Peers swearing the two Lords,  
and Mr. *Brown* Clerk to the Parliament, the four  
Commoners. It was then carried to Mr. *Brown*’s  
House, in the *Old Palace*, and put into a Chest,  
with three different Locks; not to be opened but  
when three of the Commissioners were present.

Nov. 11. A Memorial was presented to the  
House of Lords, from the Ambassador of *France*,  
and read: It was in *French*, and the Purport of  
it was to make Proposals, in general, for an *Ac-  
commodation* between the King and Parliament, in  
the



## 442 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

November.

The Parlia-  
ment's Answer  
to the French  
Ambassador's  
Proposal for an  
Accommodation.

the Name of the *French King*. The Lords having communicated this Memorial to the Commons, after a Day or two's Consideration, returned this Answer :

‘ The Lords having received from the Prince  
‘ *D'Harcourt*, Ambassador extraordinary in *Eng-*  
‘ *land*, by the Earl of *Northumberland*, a Paper  
‘ *in hæc Verba*, &c. and having communicated it  
‘ to the Commons, both Houses, upon Considera-  
‘ tion thereof, do think fit that this Answer shall  
‘ be returned thereunto : That the Lords and  
‘ Commons, assembled in the Parliament of *Eng-*  
‘ *land*, will always, with due Respects, acknow-  
‘ ledge such good Affection, as from the King his  
‘ Master and the Queen his Mistress shall be, at  
‘ any Time, expressed to the King and these King-  
‘ doms : Professing that they desire nothing more  
‘ than such a Peace, as may as well procure Ho-  
‘ nour and Happiness to the King, as the Pre-  
‘ servation of the true Reformed Religion, the  
‘ Privileges of Parliament, and the Liberty of the  
‘ Subjects, in his Majesty's three Kingdoms,  
‘ according to their late *Solemn League and Cove-*  
‘ *nant*. And when the Prince *D'Harcourt* shall,  
‘ from and in the Name of the King his Master,  
‘ propose any Thing to the Lords and Commons,  
‘ assembled in the Parliament of *England*, they  
‘ will thereupon do that which shall be fit, and  
‘ which shall justify their Proceedings to all the  
‘ World ; and that they had been forced to take  
‘ up Arms for their own just and necessary De-  
‘ fence.’

The Archbishop  
of Canterbury  
pleads, Not  
Guilty.

*Nov. 13.* The Archbishop of *Canterbury* was brought to the Bar of the House of Lords, and required, by them, to give in his Answer to the Impeachment of the House of Commons against him. Which Answer was very short ; for it only says, ‘ That all Exceptions to the said Articles of  
‘ Impeachment to this Defendant saved, he saith  
‘ he is not guilty of all or any the Matters charged  
‘ by the said Impeachment, in such Manner and  
‘ Form,

‘ Form as are, by the said Articles, charged against him.’ The Archbishop then made a Speech, and was remanded to the Tower.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
November.

*Nov. 20.* An Ordinance, very necessary at this Time, was agreed to by both Houses, concerning the Preservation of Records, &c. the Preamble to which was as follows :

‘ Whereas by the several Ordinances of Sequestration, &c. there have been, within the Cities of London and Westminster, sequestred and taken by Distress, amongst other Goods, divers Manuscripts, or written Books, Proceedings of Courts, Evidences of Lands, Rentals, Account-Books, and other Kind of Writings and written Papers and Parchments ; as also some whole Libraries, and choice Collections of printed Books of several Arts and Faculties ; the Dispersing of which, by Sale and otherwise, may be much more disadvantageous and prejudicial to the Public, both for the present and for Posterity, and also to divers particular Persons, well-affect- ed to the Parliament, than the Benefit of their Sale can anywise recompence :

An Ordinance  
for the Preserva-  
tion of Records,  
Manuscripts, &c.

‘ Therefore the Lords and Commons do ordain, &c. \*

An Affair happened, this Day also, in the House of Commons, which fully shews the Miseries the whole Kingdom was driven to, when the Capital of it had so large a Share. This will be best expressed by an Abstract out of the Journals of the Commons themselves, and needs no other Introduction.

‘ The House being informed, that divers of the Committee of the Militia of London were at the Door, and desired to propound something to the House, they were called in : And Mr. Speaker, by

A Remonstrance  
from the City of  
London, of their  
great Wants and  
Necessities.

Com-

\* About this Time the Parliament appointed William Lenthall, Esq; Speaker of the House of Commons, to be Master of the Rolls, and John Selden, Esq; Keeper of the Records in the Tower,

Whitlocke, p. 73.



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

November.

Command of the House, acquainted them that they had Liberty to speak : Whereupon Alderman *Gibbs* spoke as follows :

‘ That they are of the Militia of *London*, and  
‘ are sent by them to make known to this House,  
‘ that the City of *London* is, at this Time, under  
‘ two great Wants, and desire Leave to exprefs  
‘ them.

1. ‘ They are in great Want of Money, and  
‘ desire you should know the Causes of it.

‘ It is not unknown that we have advanced great  
‘ Sums, at several Times, being thereto solicited  
‘ by several Members of this House, both for this  
‘ Kingdom and the Kingdom of *Ireland* ; and  
‘ have received several Securities for Repayment of  
‘ them ; as the Royal Subsidy, the Twentieth  
‘ Part, the Weekly Assessments, and other En-  
‘ gagements ; but, of all these, nor of any one of  
‘ these, have we received any Benefit.

‘ We humbly recommend unto you the Re-  
‘ medy, That the Members of this Honourable  
‘ House may be encouraged to make use of their  
‘ Interests, in their several Counties, for the col-  
‘ lecting and bringing up those Monies, that we  
‘ may be the better able to do you Service : The  
‘ Want of it doth admit of great Inconvenience ;  
‘ for where the King’s Party break in, they get  
‘ the Money ; and the State, in the mean time  
‘ pays Use for it ; and we are disenabled for the  
‘ Want of it.

‘ Another Occasion of our great Wants is, those  
‘ many Disbursements, at several Times, for our  
‘ several Services, that we have made ; and the  
‘ many Provisions we have issued for Arms, Am-  
‘ munition, and Victuals, upon extreme Exigents,  
‘ for my Lord-General’s Army : We have like-  
‘ wise issued out great Engagements to our Army  
‘ that went twice into *Kent* and *Gloucester*, and  
‘ done those great Services : We have issued out  
‘ great Sums of Money, to raise Forces under Sir  
‘ *William Waller*, when he was broken all to  
‘ Pieces ; and some to those Forces now abroad.

‘ When



‘ When our Accounts are settled, we shall then  
 ‘ crave Leave to tender them unto you ; where-  
 ‘ upon, we hope, we shall receive Satisfaction ;  
 ‘ for, since we bear the Charge of the Kingdom,  
 ‘ we should be repaid out of the Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 November.

‘ Our Forces, now abroad, want Money ; two  
 ‘ Regiments of Horse, consisting of 14 Troops,  
 ‘ and three Regiments of Foot, under the Com-  
 ‘ mand of my Lord-General, have been abroad  
 ‘ above a Month ; besides three Regiments with  
 ‘ Sir *William Waller* : Ten thousand Pounds for  
 ‘ those with my Lord-General ; and four or five  
 ‘ thousand to those with Sir *William Waller*.  
 ‘ They are Citizens, civilly bred, and cannot make  
 ‘ use of those Means for their Supply, as other  
 ‘ common Soldiers do, that are used to the War ;  
 ‘ and now are brought to those Necessities that  
 ‘ they must come home. We have used our ut-  
 ‘ most Endeavour to supply them ; but, at present,  
 ‘ we cannot help them. We have addressed our-  
 ‘ selves to my Lord-General, hoping to have had  
 ‘ some of the Monies that was going to my Lord-  
 ‘ General, for the Payment of our Forces. My  
 ‘ Lord-General declared he was not able to spare  
 ‘ it, unless it be the three thousand Pounds allotted  
 ‘ him for the Recruiting his Army ; and what ill  
 ‘ Consequence this may produce, I am sorry to  
 ‘ mention.

2. ‘ You are not ignorant that, for these many  
 ‘ Months past, my Lord-General hath wanted  
 ‘ Recruiting ; and so weak, that he hath not been  
 ‘ able to do the Service of the Kingdom, or re-  
 ‘ strain the Enemy from enlarging his Quarters.  
 ‘ Consider our City Forces were raised for the  
 ‘ Guard of the City, and are Tradesmen, and  
 ‘ when they are abroad, their Plow lieth still at  
 ‘ home ; and, besides, they lose their Employ-  
 ‘ ment ; and you cannot be ignorant that, if the  
 ‘ Course be continued, it will be a great Wasting  
 ‘ of Men.

‘ For preventing whereof this Remedy is of-  
 ‘ fered, That my Lord General’s Army be speedily

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

November.

‘ dily recruited ; and that the City of *London* may  
 ‘ be considered of as a Place that hath much ad-  
 ‘ vanced, and is drawn dry : Our rich Men are  
 ‘ gone, because the City is the Place of Taxes  
 ‘ and Burdens : Trade is decayed, and our Shops  
 ‘ shut up in a great Measure : Our Poor do much  
 ‘ increase : We desire you, for future Taxes, that  
 ‘ they may bear but their Proportion, and not be  
 ‘ over-burdened. I should be loth to be misun-  
 ‘ derstood, that any that hear me should think we  
 ‘ begin to be discouraged in the Service of the  
 ‘ Parliament : Though our Difficulties be great,  
 ‘ nay, if far greater, we shall no ways alter our  
 ‘ Resolutions ; but, according to our *Covenant*, do  
 ‘ our Endeavours. We are not able, neither are  
 ‘ we willing, to bear those Reproaches cast upon us,  
 ‘ who do alledge that we are a turbulent and fac-  
 ‘ tious People, and seditious ; all for War, and will  
 ‘ admit of no Peace on any Terms. These are  
 ‘ bitter Aspersions out of black Mouths and bitter  
 ‘ Pens. We are not willing to anticipate, but  
 ‘ wait upon the Great Council, so we are not  
 ‘ willing to bear such Aspersions ; for it is Peace  
 ‘ we pray for and fight for ; but such a Peace as is  
 ‘ for the Glory of God, and Safety of Religion :  
 ‘ And this we desire to live to see, and to die ra-  
 ‘ ther than to outlive it ; and do wait your Time  
 ‘ to take such Opportunity, in these Things, as  
 ‘ may stand with your great Occasions ; and, till  
 ‘ then, we remain your humble Servants. This  
 ‘ one Word more we desire to leave with you, To  
 ‘ supply us with Monies as may lead us out of these  
 ‘ Difficulties.’

‘ The Aldermen and Citizens were again called  
 in, and Mr. Speaker, by the Command of the  
 House, acquainted them, ‘ That the House had  
 considered of what they had propounded unto  
 them ; and found it to be full of Weight ; and to  
 deserve a sadder and further Consideration, than to  
 give a sudden and particular Answer unto : They  
 had and would distribute it into such Way of Pro-  
 ceedings, as might give them the speediest and clear-



clearest Satisfaction. The House hath likewise taken Notice, how, upon all Occasions, they have expressed their Affections to the Public; and how, at this Time, they have assured them of their constant Resolution to continue in the Defence of Religion, Liberty, and Privileges of Parliament. He is commanded to return them, and by them the whole Committee of the Militia and City, hearty Thanks for their true Love and Zeal to the Public; and to assure them, that, neither in the Desires that they have now propounded, nor in any thing else that may advance the Public Security, shall they want the Encouragement and Assistance of this House.'

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
November.

Nov. 25. Amongst some other Papers of less Note, sent from *Scotland*, were read, in the House of Lords, Copies of two Letters from the King to the Council of State in that Kingdom: The Purport of the former, which was occasioned by a *Proclamation* they had issued, in the King's Name, requiring all Persons from Sixteen to Sixty to appear in Arms in Defence of the *Solemn League and Covenant*, we have already given. The other, which may be called his Majesty's last Effort to stop the Advancing of the *Scots* Army farther into *England*, with the Council's *Answer* to it, are too interesting to bear any Abridgment; and we therefore give them as they stand in the *Lords Journals*. And first, the King's *Letter*, dated from *Oxford*, the 26th of *September*, 1643.

# CHARLES R.

*Right Trusty and Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors, &c. we greet you well,*

' NO Industry could hitherto so far have pre-  
' vailed with us to gain any Belief, that our  
' *Scots* Subjects would countenance, much less as-  
' sist, this bloody Rebellion in *England*; yet we  
' know not how to understand the Levying of  
' Forces, both Horse and Foot, within our Native  
' Kingdom, and the Entering of our Town of  
' Ber-

The King's Letter to the Scots Council of State, against marching their Army into *England*.



An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

November.

*Berwick* in an hostile Manner. You are particularly trusted by us and our Parliament (and solemnly sworn) to be faithful in the Discharge of your Trust of seeing the Articles of the late *Treaty* observed, which here are most grossly violated; therefore we require you, as you will be answerable to God, to us, and to our Parliament, to take a speedy and present Order for recalling and suppressing these Forces.

Our most malicious Enemies must bear us Witness, how religiously we have observed these Articles on our Part; whereof if we had not been more tender than the Advisers of this Breach have been of the Public Faith, it is obvious to any how easily we could have secured that Town from all Rebels.

We have likewise thought fit to take Notice of the present Preparation in that our Kingdom, of raising an Army, by a new Authority, to come into our Kingdom of *England*, under a Pretence of securing themselves from the Invasions of a Popish and Prelatical Army, falsely alledged to be upon the Borders; such Forces as we have there being only for protecting of our distressed Subjects of *Berwick* and the *Holy Island* from the Invasion of the Rebels by their Ships, and for no other End: Such then as shelter themselves under that Pretext will find, from these, but a slender Warrant before God, who knows the Integrity of our Heart; and how inviolably we intend to preserve all that we have granted unto that Kingdom, so long as they shall suffer themselves to be capable of our Protection and those Favours.

Therefore we do require you not only to oppose and suppress all such unwarrantable Levies; but, by your public *Declarations*, to disabuse those Rebels in *England*, who endeavour to engage you in their Rebellions, and accept Assistance from you.

In all which we look for your ready Obedience; and, expecting a present Account thereof, we bid you heartily farewell.

Next

Next was read a Copy of the Privy Council of An. 19. Car. I.  
Scotland's Answer to the King at Oxford, dated at 1643.  
Edinburgh, the 19th of October. November.

*Most Sacred Sovereign,*

WE received your Majesty's two Letters of Their Answer, the 16th and 26th of September last; and as we shall ever be ready, by our Example, and Authority which your Majesty and Parliament hath committed to us, to render and procure submission and ready Obedience to all your Majesty's just Commands; so we cannot, out of the Sense of our Duty and Trust put upon us, but express our unfeigned Grief and Sorrow, that any should presume to give such sinister Informations and hard Impressions to your Majesty, of the General Assembly of the Kirk of God and three Estates of this Kingdom; to brand their Proceedings with so heavy Imputations, as the Violation of their Religion, Allegiance to your Majesty, and Laws of this Kingdom; and procuring such Commandments as cannot, without Violation of all these, be obtempered. The entering into a mutual *League and Covenant* was resolved upon by the General Assembly and Convention of Estates, after a mature Deliberation, as a chief Means for Preservation of Religion, your Majesty's Honour and Happiness, and the Peace and Safety of your Kingdoms; and being embraced, as it now is in *England*, was thought fit to be enjoined to be taken by all your Majesty's Subjects; and is accordingly, before the Receipt of your Majesty's Letters, ordained, by the Commissioners of the General Assembly and Committee of Estates, to be, with all religious Solemnities, sworn and subscribed by all your Majesty's Subjects of this Kingdom; as your Majesty may perceive by the several Acts prefixed to the *Covenant*, which we have herewith sent to your Majesty.



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

November.

‘ And since the General Assembly and Convention of Estates have thought fit and ordained this *Covenant* to be entered into, and that all who do take the same do solemnly swear, That they have no other End before their Eyes, but the Glory of God, the Preservation of Religion, your Majesty’s Honour, and the true public Liberties and Peace of these Kingdoms; it is our earnest Prayer, and would be our exceeding great Joy, that your Majesty, as Defender of the Faith, and Monarch of the three Kingdoms, would, to the Rejoicing of the People of God, and Terror to all the Enemies of Religion, and of your Majesty’s Greatness and Happiness, join your Royal Consent and Authority, and be the chief Maintainer and Promoter of this *Covenant*.

‘ The *Proclamation* of the 18th of *August*, by the Convention of Estates, wants not the Warrant of your Majesty’s Royal Authority; for the whole *Proclamations* and *Citations* given out by any of your Majesty’s Judicatories of this Kingdom, are, and ever have been, by the Laws and inviolable Practice thereof, emitted in your Majesty’s Name; and if all the *Proclamations*, not immediately warranted by your Majesty’s Self, shall be disobeyed, there can be no Obedience given here to your Majesty’s Laws, which is the surest Rule of Obedience.

‘ And as the Estates of this your Majesty’s Kingdom, during the Time of the late Convention, from the Apprehension of imminent Dangers to Religion, your Majesty’s Person, and Peace of this Kingdom, thought then fit to put this Kingdom into a Posture of Defence, so doth the late *Cessation* in *Ireland*; whereby the Popish Rebels, (who are termed in the said *Cessation*, your Majesty’s Catholic Subjects) who have massacred many Thousand Protestant Subjects there, are authorized to provide themselves with all Sorts of Arms and Ammunition, not only in your Majesty’s Kingdoms, but also in all other  
‘ King-



‘ Kingdoms and States with whom your Majesty  
 ‘ is in League; and to prosecute all your Majesty’s  
 ‘ Protestant Subjects who shall not embrace the  
 ‘ *Cessation* offered, which is another just Ground  
 ‘ to all your Majesty’s Protestant Subjects, to join  
 ‘ the more speedily and heartily in this mutual  
 ‘ *League and Covenant*, for the Defence of the Pro-  
 ‘ testant Religion, your Majesty’s Honour, and for  
 ‘ their own Safety : And as, by the Duty of our  
 ‘ Place, we are obliged to this Freedom ; so we  
 ‘ are confident that your Majesty, in your Royal  
 ‘ Wisdom, will, according to the Loyalty and Sin-  
 ‘ cerity of our Intentions, favourably construe  
 ‘ that we cannot record nor publish these your  
 ‘ Majesty’s Letters ; as that which would but  
 ‘ grieve the Hearts of your good Subjects, and  
 ‘ prove most disadvantageous to your Majesty’s  
 ‘ Service ; which we shall ever study to advance,  
 ‘ with that Affection and Fidelity which be-  
 ‘ cometh us.’

An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 November.

Nothing else material occurring in this Month,  
 we proceed to *December*.

The Assembly of Divines, sitting at *Westminster*,  
 had made many Orders of Synod, which they pre-  
 sented to both Houses for their Approbation : These  
 are, in some Measure, foreign to our Purpose, and  
 too tedious to bear Recital. But as a Specimen  
 of the Purity of their Intentions, and their earnest  
 Endeavours towards reforming both the Reli-  
 gion and Morals of a wicked Age, take the fol-  
 lowing Extract from the *Lords Journals*.

*December 1.* The House was informed that some  
 Divines were ready at the Door, to offer something  
 to this House, from the Assembly ; hereupon the  
 Lords *ordered* they should be called in, and Dr.  
*Burgesse*, Mr. *Calamy*, Mr. *Obadiah Sedgewick*, and  
 Mr. *Chambers*, presented to the House a *Petition*,  
 which was read as followeth :

An. 19. Car. I. To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled  
1643. in Parliament,

December. The humble MESSAGE and PETITION of the  
*Assembly of Divines.*

Petition from the  
Assembly of Di-  
vines, to appoint  
Godly Magi-  
strates, &c.

**T**HE *Assembly of Divines, in all Humility and Discharge of their Duty to God and to this Honourable House, do inform your Lordships of the sad Complaints brought unto them from many Godly and Reverend Divines in and about London, concerning the daily Increase and Growth of all Manner of outrageous and intolerable Abominations; such as Drunkenness, Swearing, Uncleaness, and other crying Sins, in very many Places in this Kingdom, for Want of Godly and Zealous Magistrates to repress the same; which cannot but highly provoke the Lord to more Wrath against this Kingdom, in this Day of his Wrath already broken out upon his People, and render fruitless all your pious Endeavours for the Reformation and Weal of this Kingdom, unless it be effectually and speedily cured.*

*The Assembly, therefore, most humbly prayeth, That, according to your great Wisdom and Zeal for the Public, there may be a speedy appointing and settling of some Able, Godly, Prudent Magistrates, that may reside in all Places of the Kingdom where your Wisdom shall find it necessary; to give a speedy Stop to these high Provocations of Almighty God, and the most dangerous Supplanters of all our Hopes of Good from the Parliament or the Assembly.*

*Moreover, the Assembly having receiv'd a Paper, in the Behalf of some Godly and Hopeful Students of the University of Oxford, with Request to recommend it to the Honourable Houses of Parliament; the Assembly, in all humble wise, presenteth the same to this most Honourable House, conceiving it worthy of your noble Thoughts and Favour, yet not presuming to interpose their Sense; and albeit they apprehend it to be a Business of extraordinary Consequence, for which much might be said, they lay all at your Lordships Feet.*

Lastly,



Lastly, *The Assembly having divers weighty Bu-  
sines imposed on them by one or both the Honourable  
Houses of Parliament, which do occasion extraordi-  
nary Labour to the Scribes, and lay upon them more  
Work than they are able to dispatch; the Assembly  
prayeth, That the Honourable Houses of Parliament  
would be pleased to add Mr. John Wallis, a Judi-  
cious and Godly young Man, to be an Amanuensis and  
Assistant to the Scribes in the Assembly, in this pub-  
lic Service.*

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
December.

*All which the Assembly most humbly submitteth to  
the Wisdom and Prudence of your Lordships, inces-  
santly importuning the Throne of Grace to pour down  
richly and daily the choicest of his Graces upon your  
Honours, and to follow all your noble Endeavours  
with a Blessing to the King's Majesty, the Church,  
Kingdom, and yourselves,*

HENRY ROBOROUGH, } Scribes.  
ADONIRAM BYFIELD, }

Dec. 4. The Parliament had been greatly em-  
barrassed with the Prince D'Harcourt, ever since his  
coming over in quality of a Mediator on the Part of  
the French King: And the House of Commons in-  
sisting on some Credentials being presented to either  
House, before they treated with him, the Matter  
was suspended for some Time. The Lords, in-  
deed, seemed willing to relax this new assum'd Piece  
of Sovereignty, and only desired the Ambassador to  
sign any Memorial or Proposal to them with his  
Name. This occasioned a Conference between  
the two Houses, when a Committee was proposed,  
by the Lords, to sit and find out an Expedient,  
how the French Ambassador might make his Ad-  
dresses to Parliament by subscribing his Name:  
But it was objected to by the Commons, and for  
these Reasons:

A Conference  
concerning the  
Manner of treat-  
ing with the  
French Ambaf-  
sador.

1<sup>st</sup>. ' Because the House of Commons do con-  
ceive, the two Houses cannot, as yet, take No-  
tice of any Thing that hath proceeded from the  
Prince D'Harcourt, as a Person qualified from



An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

December.

the *French King* to treat with the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*; or that he can give Assurance that the *French King* will be obliged unto what he shall propound unto the two Houses: And untill such Time, the House of Commons do not think it agreeable to the Honour of the Houses, or safe for the Proceedings of Parliament, to appoint any Committee to consider of the Manner or Way of receiving what shall be propounded by the Prince *D'Harcourt*.

' The *French Agent*, Monsieur *De Boissson*, lately sent from the *French King* to the Privy Council of *Scotland*, did first deliver in his Letters of Credence, before he presented that which he had to propound from the *French King* his Master.

2dly, ' If the Prince *D'Harcourt* have any Thing to propound from the *French King* to the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*, the House of Commons do conceive, that the Houses have done nothing to barr or hinder the Prince *D'Harcourt* from the usual and fitting Ways of Address to them, and such as are honourable for him: Because

1. ' He may apply himself to the Speaker of either or both Houses of Parliament, by himself, or such Persons as he shall intrust to that Purpose, to desire Audience, in the Name of the King his Master, for what he hath to propound from the *French King* to both or either Houses of the Parliament of *England*.

2. ' Or else, what he hath to propound from the King his Master to the Houses, he may direct either to the Houses themselves, or their Speakers, attested under his Hand; as is expected from the Ambassadors of *England*, and is practised by them in their Negotiations with foreign States. It is that also which the King himself useth in his Messages to the two Houses: And it is that which the *French Agent*, Monsieur *De Boissson*, hath lately done to the Privy Council of *Scotland*; and that which

which the Ministers of foreign States have done, An. 19. Car. I.  
and do, to the Parliament, upon Occasion. 1643.

December,

Next was read a Copy of the *French King's* Letter, sent by *Monsieur De Boisnon*, Agent to the *French King*, to the Council of *Scotland*, translated into *English*.

Most Dear and Great Friends,

**T**Here hath been, from all Times, Alliances between the Kings our Predecessors, and those of Scotland, which have been observed so sacredly and faithfully, that the Faithfulness of the one and the other Nation hath been acknowledged and published as a Miracle to all the People of the World. We have been raised to the Command of the first and most famous Monarchy of Europe, and we would conserve the Friendship of the most valorous Nation that inhabits it; and, to give Testimony hereof, bear Part in their Affairs. You have deputed unto us, with the Consent of the King of Great Britain, Monsignor the Earl of Lothian; who, being returned satisfied, we sent you Monsieur De Boisnon, by the Advice of the Queen Regent, our most honoured Lady and Mother, to carry you the Assurance of the Continuance of our Affection.

He hath some Matters to propound to you; we pray you to receive Credence, in all which he shall say to you in our Behalf, and to apply yourselves to give us Satisfaction therein, as our most true and most ancient Allies. It is that which we promise ourself from your Prudence, and that you will not be failing to your own Interests; which shall ever be to us in singular Esteem, so long as you have, for your Aim, the Obedience and Service of the King your Master. Thus we pray God to keep you, most Dear and Great Friends, in his most holy and divine Protection.

Written at Paris the 24th of September, 1643.

Sic Subscribitur

LOUIS.

The



456 *The Parliamentary History*

Ann. 19. Car. I. *The PROPOSITIONS of Monsieur De Boifinson to the Council of Scotland.*

1643.

December.

And his Agent's  
Propositions to  
them,

‘ **T**HAT, according to the Instructions which the Lords and Council of *Scotland* have given to the Earl of *Lothian*, their Deputy, with the Consent of the King of *Great Britain*, the said Lords, as far as their Power extends, should confirm the antient Alliances of *France* and *Scotland*.

‘ That, for this Effect, the *Scots* do not, directly nor indirectly, enter with Arms into *England*, be it under Pretence to serve the King of *Great Britain*, or of Religion, without express Commission from the King their Master; and, for as much as this Article presses the Most Christian King, to give a speedy and punctual Answer,

‘ That the Lords and Council of *Scotland* would have no Regard to the Difference of Religion in those who do inroll or shall be inrolled there to serve, according to the Example of the Most Christian King to such as serve in *France*; and because the Churches of *Scotland* have determined, in their Assembly, the contrary, that the Council of *Scotland* would grant out an Order to recall the same.

‘ Monsieur *De Boifinson* hath Command from the King, his Master, to make yet some further Propositions; but as these are the principal, and those which regard the holding fast, or breaking off, the Alliance of the two Kingdoms of *France* and *Scotland*, he is ordered to receive an Answer, in the first Place, to these,

PETER DE BOISINON.

*The ANSWER of the Council of Scotland to the PROPOSITIONS, which Monsieur De Boifinson hath made to them, from the Most Christian King.*

Their Answer,

‘ **T**O the first; When the Council of *Scotland* shall receive from the Earl of *Lothian* an Account of his Proceedings in his Employment in *France*, they will, according to their Power, give



‘ give such a respectful Answer, as may shew their  
 ‘ Willingness to renew and entertain the antient  
 ‘ Alliance betwixt the Kingdoms of *Scotland* and  
 ‘ *France*.  
 An. 19. Car. I.  
 1643.  
 December.

‘ To the *second Article* they can give no Answer,  
 ‘ seeing the Conserving of the Peace between the  
 ‘ two Kingdoms is committed, by his Majesty and  
 ‘ Estates of Parliament, to a Committee appointed  
 ‘ for that Effect; and the late Convention of E-  
 ‘ states, having also received the *Propositions* from  
 ‘ the Commissioners of both Houses of the Parlia-  
 ‘ ment of *England*, for the further securing of the  
 ‘ Religion and Peace of their Kingdom, have in-  
 ‘ trusted the Consideration thereof to a Commit-  
 ‘ tee of their own Members; who the Council are  
 ‘ confident will proceed in these Affairs as beco-  
 ‘ meth them, in Duty and Conscience towards  
 ‘ God, in Loyalty to the King, and in respect of  
 ‘ the Good of the Kingdom.

‘ To the *third Article*; since the National As-  
 ‘ sembly of the Church of *Scotland* is independent,  
 ‘ what hath been concluded by them cannot be re-  
 ‘ called by the Council.

‘ As the Council hath answered the principal  
 ‘ *Propositions* according to their Power, and in such  
 ‘ Sort as can give no just Occasion of Offence to  
 ‘ the *French King*; being willing, inviolably, to  
 ‘ keep the Amity which hath been so religiously  
 ‘ observed these many Years; they hope that  
 ‘ those who have the Charge of the *French King*  
 ‘ and his Affairs in his Nonage, will be better ad-  
 ‘ vised than to make the Particulars any Occasion  
 ‘ of Breach with his antient Allies, whom his Royal  
 ‘ Predecessors, in their greatest Difficulties, hath  
 ‘ found to be the readiest and surest Friends.

‘ So that when any other *Propositions* shall be  
 ‘ made to them by Monsieur *De Boisfon*, they will  
 ‘ return such an Answer thereunto as appertaineth.’

But to return to the further Progress of the War.

Dec. 5. The Lord-General *Essex* informed the  
 Lords, That he had received Advice from Sir  
 Wil-

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

December.

The Earl of  
Warwick ap-  
pointed Lord  
High-Admiral  
of England, by  
the Parliament.

*William Waller*, acquainting him the King was advancing to *Basing*, which Place *Sir William* had besieged. That the Parliament's Army under *Sir William* was very weak, and desired them to consider of a speedy Way, both to recruit and maintain it. Referred to a Conference.

The Lords and Commons having made an *Ordinance* for constituting *Robert Earl of Warwick* Lord High-Admiral of *England*: This Day, *Dec. 9*, his Lordship moved in the House, That the Lords would take it into their present Consideration, how to make Provision of Flesh, Ammunition, and other Necessaries, for setting forth the next Year's Navy: That this was the Month proper for such Provision, or else it would be impossible to get the Navy fitted out in Time: That, upon Advice, it was thought fit to have, at least, 46 Ships to guard the Seas; and 60,000*l.* was required to be presently advanced for Provisions, &c. as appeared by an Estimate made for that Purpose.

It is certain by this, that the Parliament was under a Dread that *France*, or some other foreign Power, would exert themselves in the King's Favour, which made them agree to equip such a Fleet to prevent it. It may not be amiss to give here the Estimate, to inform the present Age of the Expence thought necessary for such an Equipment in the last.

*The CERTIFICATE and ESTIMATE of the Charge of the Fleet, sent to the Lord-Admiral from the Commissioners of the Navy.*

An Estimate of  
the Charge of  
the Fleet.

According to your Lordship's Order, we have seriously debated what Number of Men are requisite for a Fleet for the next Year's Service; and do humbly conceive there cannot be less than 5000 allotted for the Service of the Fleet, if the State resolve to keep the Seas in Safety.

These



# Of ENGLAND. 459

These 5000 Men will supply 46 Sail of Ships, An. 19. Car. I.  
viz. 1643.

- 2 of the second Rank,
- 9 of the third Rank,
- 20 of the fourth Rank,
- 10 of the fifth Rank, and
- 5 of the sixth Rank.

December.

Of these 46 Ships there are 26 of his Majesty's that may be fitted for the Service, the rest, viz. 20, must be taken up in the River from the Merchants.

We also conceive that those 46 Sail of Ships may be distributed thus :

- 10 to the *West*,
- 16 for *Ireland* and the *Severn*,
- 12 for the *Downs*, and
- 8 for the Coasts of *Scotland*, according to the Parliament's Agreement.

We do also conceive that 3000 Men, in 30 of his Majesty's and the Merchant Ships, will be a competent Winter Guard for the next Year.

If your Lordship shall resolve to fix upon this Number of Men and Ships, for the next Year's Service, we humbly desire your Lordship to represent to the House the State of the whole Navy for this and the next Year's Service, in the Heads following, viz.

l. s. d.

For the Charge of 5000 Men in 26 of his Majesty's and 20 Merchant Ships, for eight Months Service in the Year 1644	}	130,000	0	0
For the Charge of 3000 Men, in 30 Ships, for the next Winter's Guards, for five Months	}	60,000	0	0
For the ordinary Expence of the whole Navy, in Harbour, for the Year 1644	}	18,000	0	0
Carried over		208,000	0	0

For



460 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643.			<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
December.	<i>Brought over</i>		208,000	0	0
	For the Charge of the extraordinary and ordinary Expence of the next Year's Service, in the Office of the Ordnance, <i>per Estimation</i>		20,000	0	0
	For the Victuals of 4000 Men, for six Months, in 40 Ships, supposed to be set at Sea, as Reprizals, according to a late <i>Ordinance</i>		24,000	0	0
	For the Payment of the Ordinary for this Year's Winter Guard, now at Sea, the Freight of sundry Merchant Men already discharged, and for divers other Provisions due to sundry Men in this and the last Year's Service, the Sum of		40,000	0	0
		<i>Total</i>	292,000	0	0

‘ Which said Sum of 292,000*l.* we desire may  
 ‘ be settled out of the Revenues of the Customs  
 ‘ and Excise, to be paid to the Treasurer of the  
 ‘ Navy, before your Lordships proceed in the  
 ‘ Service.

‘ We are confident little or nothing can be a-  
 ‘ bated with Safety; yet if the Houses shall not  
 ‘ think fit to allow so great a Number of Men or  
 ‘ Ships, we desire your Lordships that whatsoever  
 ‘ they shall think fit to order, the Money may, in  
 ‘ the first Place, be assigned to be paid into the  
 ‘ Treasurer of the Navy before the Service be un-  
 ‘ dertaken; for we are not able to wade any fur-  
 ‘ ther in the Service, unless our Credit be pre-  
 ‘ served by current Payments.

‘ The Payment of the aforesaid Sum of 292,000*l.*  
 ‘ may be seasonably supplied as followeth:

For

For Victuals and Stores for } the Summer's Fleet — — —	50,000	0	0	An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.
For Victuals of Merchant } Ships supposed to be set forth } as Reprizals — — —	10,000	0	0	

‘ The rest as the Service may require, and the  
‘ State shall be enabled.

‘ We have propounded the Business of the Vic-  
‘ tuals to Mr. *Alcock*, who absolutely refuseth it by  
‘ way of Contract, but yet offers his Endeavours  
‘ in it by way of Account; provided he may be  
‘ enabled with Monies to proceed chearfully there-  
‘ in, and have some other able Men joined with  
‘ him in the Management of that Service. We  
‘ believe we shall not be able to get any Men to  
‘ undertake the Business by Contract, and there-  
‘ fore desire your Lordship to send unto Mr. *Alcock*,  
‘ and settle the Business upon him as your Lord-  
‘ ship shall think fit, that the Service may not suf-  
‘ fer for Want of settling that Office; all which  
‘ we leave to your Lordships Wisdoms, and re-  
‘ main, at your Lordships Command,

December 5, 1643.

RICHARD CARNLEY,  
JOHN MORRIS,  
JOHN HOLLAND.

The Earl of *Warwick* moved, That a Confe-  
rence might be had presently with the House of  
Commons, to communicate this Estimate to them,  
and desire that some Course may be speedily taken  
to procure Monies and other Provisions, that no  
Time be lost to expedite this Business. This was  
done accordingly.

*Dec. 11.* Some *Orders*, made by the House of  
Commons this Day, give us Occasion to mention  
the Death of Mr. *Pym*, one of the most active  
Members that ever sat in that House; And the  
Respect they shewed to his Memory, is with-  
out a Precedent in the whole Course of these  
Inquiries. For we find, in the *Journals*, ‘ That a  
Committee, there named, was appointed to con-  
sider



An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.

December.

The Death of  
Mr. Pym, to  
whose Memory  
the Commons  
order a Monu-  
ment to be e-  
rected;

sider of the Estate of Mr. Pym, deceased, and to offer what they think fit to be done in Consideration of it to the House; likewise to take Care to prepare a Monument for him, at the Charge of the Common-Wealth. It was also ordered, that the Body of Mr. Pym be interred in *Westminster-Abbey*, without any Charge for breaking open the Ground there; and that the Speaker, with the whole House, do accompany his Body to the Interment.

Mr. *Whitlocke* says, That Mr. Pym died the latter End of *May*. The Proceedings of Parliament since that Date, as well as the above-recited Orders, evidently prove this to be a Mistake: This *Memorialist* ascribes Mr. Pym's Death, chiefly, to his excessive Fatigue in the Service of Parliament.\*—Lord *Clarendon* says, He died of the *Morbus Pediculosus*; and, after the highest Commendation of his Abilities, and the heaviest Censure of his Actions, concludes with saying, 'That as, during his Sickness, he was a very sad Spectacle, so that none were admitted to him who had not concurred with him, it is not known what his last Thoughts and Considerations were.†—But Mr. *Rushworth* says, 'The Report of his dying of the Distemper beforementioned was not true; and that, for public Satisfaction therein, his dead Body was for some Time exposed to, and viewed by, many Hundreds of People: The true natural Cause of his Death seeming to be the great Pains he took, joined with a competent old Age, and, at best, but an infirm Constitution.' He also gives us a long Declaration of Mr. Pym's, setting forth the Grounds and Reasons of his Conduct in Parliament; which he had caused to be printed and published some Time before his Decease. ‡

By some subsequent Orders, it appears that Mr. Pym died greatly in Debt, though possessed of the Place of Lieutenant of the Ordnance; for, Jan. 13, we find the Commons referred it to the

\* *Memorials*, p. 66.—† *Clarendon*, Vol. III. 2<sup>vo</sup>. p. 462.—

‡ *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 376.



the aforesaid Committee to consider of some other Way for a Recompence to the Posterity of Mr *Pym*, and Payment of those Debts he had contracted for the Service of the Common-Wealth, than they had yet thought on; and to use all Diligence to find out some fit Return, answerable to the Memory and Merit of so great a Man. Accordingly, afterwards, the whole House undertook to pay the Debts of Mr. *Pym*, not exceeding 10,000*l*.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

December.

And vote  
10,000*l*. for  
Payment of his  
Debts.

This Digression, upon so unprecedented an Instance, the Reader will excuse: Proceed we now with the Thread of our History.

*Dec. 12.* In the Business of this Day, amongst the Lords, we find this Entry, 'It was moved that this House should declare it, as their Opinion, that no Member of either House of Parliament might be admitted to execute any Place of Profit; and a Committee of seven Lords were ordered to draw up an *Order*, and word it to that Sense.' These withdrawing, soon returned with such an *Order*; and then the Question was put, Whether that Paper, now read, should be entered as the *Opinion* and *Resolution* of this House? Which passed in the Affirmative.

*Ordered*, by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, 'That the *Opinion* and *Resolution* of this House is, from henceforth, not to admit the Members of either House of Parliament into any Place or Office, excepting such Places of great Trust as are to be executed by Persons of Eminency and known Integrity, and are necessary for the Government and Safety of the Kingdom.

But another Question being put, Whether this shall be drawn up into an *Ordinance*? it passed in the Negative. Thus this Political Test was quashed for this Time, but 'tis probable it gave Rise to the famous *Self-denying Ordinance* afterwards.

The Earl of *Holland's* Return to the Parliament has been mentioned before; and this Day, *Dec. 16.* a remarkable Letter of his, by way of Petition  
to

464 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. to the Lords, was read, containing the Motives  
 1643.  
 December, that induced this unsteady Nobleman to change  
 Sides; which he did so often, that, at last, he fell  
 a Sacrifice to his own Instability.

To my LORDS the PEERS,

THE HUMBLE PETITION OF HENRY Earl of  
 HOLLAND.

My Lords,

The Earl of  
 Holland's Peti-  
 tion to Parlia-  
 ment, upon his  
 revolting from  
 the King.

*I Have already, by your Favours, received a De-  
 gree of Liberty; and do hope that, upon this my  
 humble Request, it may be fully granted me, with  
 the Discharge of the late Sequestration, that yet  
 rests upon the little Remainder of my Fortune; it  
 not being the tenth Part of what I have lost since the  
 Parliament began.*

*My Lords, I have not made any Use of that  
 which I conceived would have given me a very as-  
 sured Protection here, viz. the Invitation and Per-  
 suasion of our General to return; in whom I con-  
 ceived a Power very full and natural to invite and  
 to persuade any, both how to add to this and lessen  
 the other Side; which is done, in some Measure, in  
 every Person of the least Consideration. This, I am  
 very confident his Excellency will avow in my Parti-  
 cular; the Inquiry of which I leave to your Lordships  
 Wisdom, and likewise all which concerns me, both  
 in Honour and Fortune, to your Goodness.*

HOLLAND.

The Speaker was ordered to write to the Lord-  
 General, to desire him to inform this House that  
 he knows concerning the Earl of Holland's Re-  
 turn, and what Invitation he received from him.  
 In the mean Time the Earl was allowed to go into  
 the Country, for a few Days, with the Lord-Ad-  
 miral. And, soon after, on the Receipt of a sa-  
 tisfactory Answer from the Lord-General, as to  
 what the Earl had advanced, he was ordered, by  
 the Lords, to have full Liberty, and his Seque-  
 stration taken off: But in the House of Commons  
 the



the Question being put, Whether he was guilty of deserting the Parliament? it was carried in the Negative, only by 75 against 60.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
December.

Dec. 20. A Conference was held between the two Houses, wherein the Lords communicated some Letters they had received from the Lord-General *Essex*. As these and such-like Letters are the most authentic History of the Times, we shall make no Apology for the Number of them. And first the Letter from the Earl of *Essex* to the Speaker of the House of Peers :

My Lord;

**I** Received a Letter from the Committee of Safety, Letters from the the 14th of this Instant, concerning the removal of my Army towards Sir William Waller's, the Committee of Safety, relating to the Parliament's Army. Quarters; to which I returned an Answer of the Inconveniences that might follow that Advice, both which Letters I herewith send you. This Day I received another to the same Purpose, which your Lordship will now receive, and perceive therein that it is reported that Prince Rupert is marching that Way; which the Committee, in their great and constant Care to the Public, have very affectionately acquainted me with; apprehending, that if any thing might befall those Forces with Sir William Waller, I might lie under an undeserved Censure by common Detractors.

I thought it my Duty to acquaint both the Houses with all these Letters; and, withall, with my Opinion of those Inconveniences that might follow my Removal at this Time; and that the Army cannot now march, having so many Men out in Parties about Newport-Pagnell, every Company in each Regiment being thereby divided. Out of the Relief which I am promised, within five or six Days to be sent hither, the Newport Men, when they come back, will expect their Pay, having been so long without, and done so good Service; and the rest of the Officers also being in so great Want, as your Lordships may perceive by the inclosed Copy of another



AA. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

December.

*Letter of mine to the Committee of Safety : So that, if the Forces be taken from hence, it is impossible to secure Bedfordshire, Hertfordshire, and Essex from the Enemy; there being a very long Line to keep, and my Lord of Manchester having but 500 Horse here, and most of the Remainder of his Horse being in Lincolnshire, and also the greatest Part of his Foot, as yet.*

*I likewise conceive Sir William Waller cannot be in any great Danger, having the Benefit of so safe a Place as Farnham, now fortified, that the Enemy, especially in this Season of the Year, will not be able to do him Harm; besides, the Addition of Strength I sent him is so considerable, being near 600 Horse, and so well commanded, that I hold them able to encounter with 1000 of the Enemy's.*

*My Lord, I am to crave your Pardon for this long Diversion from your great Affairs, by these inclosed Papers; but the Tenderneſs of my Honour, and my Fidelity to the Parliament, which I value above myself, emboldens me to it. I am,*

My Lord,

St. Alban's, Dec. 18.

1643.

Your Lordship's Servant,

E S S E X.

*The COMMITTEE of SAFETY's Letter to the Earl of ESSEX referred to in the foregoing.*

*May it please your Excellency,*

*WE understood by your Lordship's Letter the last Night to Sir Philip Stapylton, that your Excellency had designed Col. Behre to march with 300 Horse towards the Relief of Sir William Waller. We conceive his being with Sir William Waller at this Time with so many Horse, will be of so great Use to the Public, that we desire your Excellency to hasten him thither with what Speed you possibly may.*

*We hear that most of the King's Forces about Towcester are removed Southward, to join with the*

*the Lord Hopton; which, if your Excellency find* An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
*to be so, we humbly offer unto your most serious*  
*Consideration, whether it will not be necessary for*  
*your Lordship to remove your Quarters nearer to*  
*Farnham, or to send some Foot speedily thither to*  
*Sir William Waller; or, otherwise, he will not be*  
*able to prosecute this great Advantage which he hath*  
*now gotten; for the King's Forces increase in Hamp-*  
*shire and Suffex, and divers new Regiments are*  
*raising there, which would prove very prejudicial*  
*to the Public, unless presently prevented; which*  
*we hope your Lordship, in your Wisdom, will find*  
*a Way to remedy, seeing the Safety of this Place*  
*and the whole Kingdom is so much concern'd in it.*

December,

*We desire your Lordship's Answer by this Ex-*  
*press, that we may frame our Resolutions accord-*  
*ingly. We remain*

Your Lordship's

Most affectionate,

Dec. 14, 1643.

and most humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND, ARTH. HASLERIG,  
PEMBROKE and MONT- H. VANE,  
GOMERY, ANTH. NICHOLS.  
WILLIAM PIERPOINT,

The Earl's ANSWER.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

*Although the Horse are extreemly behind for*  
*want of Pay, and want both Horses and Arms,*  
*yet I hope to have 500 Horse ready to march upon*  
*Saturday Morning, with Col. Behre, towards Sir*  
*William Waller; and, for that Purpose, have*  
*stopped giving him Commission to be Commissary-Ge-*  
*neral of the Horse, because he may receive his Di-*  
*rections from Sir William Waller during such*  
*Time as I can spare him there.*

*To the second Part of your Lordships Letter; I*  
*have often inform'd your Lordships, both by Letters*  
*and also by Word of Mouth, That I have not one*

G g 2

whole



# 468 The Parliamentary History

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
December.

*whole Company amongst the Foot, they being divided Half here, and Half at Newport; and, till that Garrison be furnished, cannot take them away, unless your Lordships Pleasure be to quit Newport and those Parts, which would be absolute Ruin to all these Counties; so that, unless the Parliament command it, I do not chuse to give Way unto it; and besides, they will be presently in such Want of Money, that, without there be an Order taken for their Pay till the Ordinance begins, I shall hardly be able to keep them together any where, much less to recruit them.*

*When I was last in London, the Foot being drawn into Arms, it was spread amongst them, That the Reason of their Drawing into the Field, was to take out a Party to send to Sir William Waller; upon which there was a Mutiny amongst them, with a Resolution, That whose Lot soever it should be to march, the rest would oppose it.*

*I hoped now, that I have spared so great a Strength of Horse from these Parts, there will be a Care taken for the Supply of Horse and Arms; most of the Horsemen being on Foot, the strongest Troops sent away, and divers of the Counties not having sent in the Numbers of Horse they promised; especially Middlesex, from whence I have had but 55 of 200.*

*The Enemy are fortifying at Greenland, near Henley, which will be a great Prejudice both to the River and Windsor; but, by reason of my sending off those Horse, I shall not be able to do that to them which I intended. I thought fit to acquaint your Lordships with it, lest it should be laid to me hereafter as a Neglect.*

Your Lordships Servant,

St. Alban's, Dec. 14.  
1643.

ESSEX.

The COMMITTEE of SAFETY's second Letter to the Earl of ESSEX.

May it please your Excellency,

*WE have received several Advertisements, that Prince Rupert, with 6000 Horse and Foot, is on his March from Oxon towards Sir William Waller;*



Waller; so that we doubt, unless some considerable Force be presently sent to his Assistance, he may be suddenly distressed, and run the Hazard of the Loss of his Brigade, which will endanger Kent and that Association: We therefore humbly offer our Advice to your Excellency, to march forthwith to Windsor, or some other Place near Sir William Waller's Quarters, for the securing him and his Forces from that Power and Strength, which is now drawing thither under the Command of Prince Rupert.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
December.

We shall not fail to do our utmost Endeavours for advancing Money for the Payment of your Excellency's Army, and conveying it to the Place which your Excellency shall appoint, in your March, so soon as we shall hear from your Excellency.

And we farther offer it to your Excellency's Consideration, whether you think not fit to send a Dispatch to the Earl of Manchester, to draw up his Forces towards Newport-Pagnell, for the securing thereof and the Parts adjacent. These Things are recommended to your Lordship by

Your Excellency's

Most affectionate Friends,

Westminster, Dec. 18.  
1643.

and humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND,	BOLINGBROKE,
WARWICK,	DENZIL HOLLES,
SAY and SELE,	ANTHO. NICHOLS.

The other Letter from the Earl of ESSEX to the COMMITTEE of SAFETY, mentioned in his Lordship's Letter to the Speaker, was in these Words:

My Lords and Gentlemen,

According to your Directions, I have sent your Lordships this Commission, which you'll please to send to Sir Thomas Fairfax, hoping, by this Time, he is upon his March.

There is hardly Money left to pay a Messenger; for of the last 23,000 l. which was sent down for

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

December.

*Recruits, 700 l. went for the Garrison of Aylesbury, besides the better Part of 200 l. more sent thither since, to make up the Fortnight's Pay: All the Horse and Foot here, and at Newport, are paid compleat for fourteen Days, and a Week's Pay for the Foot at St. Alban's, from the Serjeant downwards.*

*Yesterday there was a great Mutiny of 3 or 400 gathered together, threatening to pillage the Town; but my Coming presently dispersed them, otherwise great Mischief would have been done, it being Market-Day.*

*I have likewise another Week's Pay for the Foot, from the Sergeants downwards, for To-morrow, which is all the Money that is left, tho' I have paid nothing else but what bleeding Necessity compelled me to, of which I am ready to give an Account; having not been able to relieve divers, whereof some are Captains of my own Regiment, that, thro' Sicknes and Hurts, are ready to perish; and how the other Officers will do for Want of Pay, I know not.*

*The Train of Artillery, who have done real and faithful Services to the State, are grown to that Necessity, as you may perceive by the Petition\* inclosed, that if there be not Pay provided for them by the latter End of this Week, both for those here and those that come from Newport, I shall never be able to keep them together without plundering the Country.*

*Col. Behre is gone with the Horse, though they have been long without Pay; and if the Horse in Sir William Waller's Brigade be paid, and they unpaid, I fear the Issue; though, otherwise, I never saw Men better contented with so little Pay as the Horse have generally been.*

*My humble Desire is, That if there be no Pay like to come to me by the latter End of this Week, I may know so; I not being able to stay amongst them to hear the crying Necessity of the hungry Soldiers. I have likewise sent your Lordships Sir William Brereton's Letter\*, that you may take it into your*

\* We do not meet with this Letter, or Petition above referred to in the Journals.



*your further Care, I not being able to spare any* An. 19. Car. I.  
*out of this Army.* 1643.

Your Lordships Servant,

December.

Dec. 17. 1643.

ESSEX.

The *Notes* passed by the Lords, after reading the foregoing *Letters*, to which the Commons, also, agreed, were, That they approved of the Counsel given to the Lord-General by the Committee of Safety; and that he be desired to pursue it: That *Letters* should be written to him and the rest, to that Effect; and a Committee of both Houses was appointed to draw them up accordingly.

The same Day, in the Afternoon, Copies of these *Letters*, so ordered, were read in the House of Lords, and, afterwards, approved by both Houses, as follows:

Our very good Lord,

*WE* are commanded, by both Houses, to acquaint your Lordship, That they have received your Letter of the 18th present, with the enclosed Copies of Letters between the Committee of Safety and your Excellency; and having well weighed the Grounds expressed in the Letters from the Committee of Safety to your Lordship, and taking into Consideration how necessary it is that the Passages should be secured, where the Forces of the Enemy may break into Surrey, Middlesex, and Kent, they have thought fit to approve of the Advice given to your Lordship by the Committee of Safety, for the speedy drawing your Lordship's Forces towards Windsor, or those Parts; especially seeing Sir William Waller is now marched towards Arundel with all his Forces, and left only a Garrison in Farnham-Castle; and that Sir Ralph Hopton (as the Houses are informed) hath drawn all the Forces he can make towards Basing. And to the end that the Counties, where your Lordship's Army is now quartered, may not be exposed to Danger, by  
the

And the Answers  
of both Houses.



## 472 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

AN. 19. CAR. I.

1643.

December.

*the breaking in of the Enemy's Forces upon your Lordship's marching from thence, the two Houses have written a Letter (a Copy whereof they send your Lordship here enclosed) to the Earl of Manchester, in pursuance of the Advice lately given your Lordship by the Committee of Safety, and the Directions from your Lordship in that Behalf, for to draw up speedily the Forces under his Lordship's Command, for the Security of those Counties. The Houses have likewise sent another Letter (the Copy whereof is here enclosed) unto the Committee of the Militia of Hertfordshire, for the speedy sending into Newport-Pagnell the Forces intended for that Garrison: And therefore we are ordered by both Houses, to desire your Lordship that, Newport-Pagnell being secured, your Lordship do pursue the Advice given your Excellency by the Committee of Safety, for the drawing your Forces towards Windsor, or those Parts; which will be, as they conceive, of the greatest Security to this City, and the Counties most threatened and subject to Danger. And so we bid your Lordship heartily farewell, being*

Your Lordship's affectionate

Westminster, Dec. 20. Friends and Servants,  
1643.

W H A R T O N,  
Speaker of the House of Peers  
*pro Tempore.*

WILLIAM LENTHALL,  
Speaker of the Commons  
House in Parliament.

The Letter to the Earl of MANCHESTER, mentioned as enclosed in the foregoing.

Our very good Lord,

*WE are commanded, by the Houses, to send this Dispatch unto your Lordship, in pursuance of what you have already received from the Committee of*

of Safety, and likewise, we doubt not, will receive from his Excellency; that accordingly your Lordship will, with your Forces, march towards Newport-Pagnell, or such other Place as his Excellency shall judge most convenient for the securing those Parts; which, upon his Removal to oppose the great Forces which are gathering together to break in upon the Coast of Suffex or Surrey, will else be left naked, and give an Inlet to any Attempt of the Enemy for the invading us on that Side; both these, being equally mischievous, must be equally provided for; and we do not doubt of your Lordship's Readiness to do any Thing which may conduce to the Public Good; nor are many Words needful to incite you to it, the very Proposal of it being sufficient.

An. 19. Car. 1.  
1643.  
December.

This being all we have in Charge from the Houses, nothing remains, but that we are,

Your Lordship's

Westminster, Dec. 20,  
1642.

most affectionate

Friends and Servants,

Sign'd by the Speakers of both Houses as the foregoing.

The Letter from the PARLIAMENT to the COMMITTEE of MILITIA for Hertfordshire, above referred to.

Gentlemen,

WE are commanded, by both Houses of Parliament, to require you, forthwith to dispatch such of your Forces to Newport-Pagnell, as may secure that Garrison; that my Lord-General may be enabled to march away Westward, the Enemy having drawn most of their Forces that Way; and therefore the Houses do presume your Care hath been such, that your Forces are already there, or upon their March, they having given you all the Assistance you desired to enable you thereunto, by passing the



# 474 The Parliamentary History

An. 19. Car. 1. the several Ordinances you presented to them; yet, lest there should be any retarding of Business, so much importing the Public Safety, they thought fit to quicken you by this Express: And so, not doubting of your Care herein, we rest,

1643.  
December.

Gentlemen,

Dec. 22. 1643.

Your Friends and Servants.

Sign'd by the Speakers as before.

Dec. 22. A Letter from Sir William Waller was read in the House of Lords; but, as there is no Date to it, we suppose, only, that it came from the Siege before Basinghouse.

My Lords,

A Letter from  
Sir William  
Waller,

According to your Commands, I advanced the last Lord's Day, from Farnham towards this Place. I could not reach that Night past Haslemere: The next Day I marched to Cowdrey; where we understanding there were four Troops of Horse and 100 Foot, I resolved to give them the good Night; and, to that End, I dispatched away two Regiments of Horse to lay the Passages round; but they were too nimble for me, and escaped hither, where I overtook them on Tuesday Night. The next Morning, after we had taken a View, and found out a Place where we might flank their Line with our Ordnance, we fell on upon the North Side of the Works; and we did so scour a weedy Hill in the Park, on the West Side of the Pond, with our Pieces, that we made it too hot for them; which gave such Courage to our Men, that, with the same Breath, they assaulted an Intrenchment newly cast up, and which was very strong: It was drawn from the Town Gate down to the aforesaid Pond near the Hill. At the same Time we fell on a narrow Passage by the Mill, where they had likewise a double Work, and very strong; but in a short Time, by the good Hand of God, we forced both; and entered the Town with our Horse and Foot,

not-



notwithstanding a brave Sally made by their Horse. An. 19. Car. I. 1643.  
 We beat them into the Castle, and entered the first Gate with them, the second they made good and barricaded, and they are there welcome to stay. I am resolved to block them up, for I know they are in a necessitous Condition.

December.

God hath been pleased to bless me hitherto with a gracious Success, his Great and Holy Name be praised for it; but truly, my Lords, I am very weak in Foot, and my Horse so hackny'd out, that they are ready to lie down under us. I expect Col. Behre and Col. Morley here this Day.

Dec. 25. Being Christmas-Day, is the first Time that we find the Houses sat to do Business on it. The Commons having sent Word to the Lords, That they intended such a Thing, their Lordships readily followed so pious an Example.

A Letter from the Earl of Manchester, dated from Cambridge, Dec. 22, was presented to the House of Lords this Day, and read in these Words: It was directed to the Lord Wharton.

My Lord,

I Have received your Lordship's Letter from the From the Earl of Manchester,  
 House of Peers; I shall beseech your Lordship to offer my Service to the House, and to let them know that, according to the Lord-General's Orders, I have commanded 600 Foot to march to Newport-Pagnell. I have likewise sent a Regiment of Foot to lie at Bedford, with five Troops of Horse and two Troops of Dragoons. The greatest Part of the rest of the Forces, that is under my Command, is yet in Lincolnshire; and, at this present, engaged against Gainsborough.

I have no particular Direction from my Lord-General, whither to march with the rest that I have with me; which, at this present, do guard St. Neot's, Huntingdon, and the Town of Cambridge.

I am ready to my utmost, to be serviceable to the Houses, but am in some Trouble, because I have no  
 par-

476 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. 1. *particular Orders; seeing that the Letters from the*  
 1643. *House doth refer me to his Excellency's Orders and*  
 December. *Directions. I am,*

My Lord,

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

E. MANCHESTER.

This Letter was referred to the Committee of Safety; and the Lord *Wharton* acquainted the House that he had received another Letter from the Lord-General, to desire him to inform the House, that the Reason he had not given Directions to the Earl of *Manchester* for disposing of his Forces, was, because he knew he was upon a Design at *Gainsborough*.

Dec. 30. The Commons ordered the Commissioners of their new Great Seal to bring in an *Ordinance* for the appointing and authorizing Sheriffs to execute their Offices, in the different Counties of *England*, for the Year ensuing: To consider of the Sheriffs Oath, and for taking off from them the Charges usually incident to such Places; and to enable them to go out of their Counties upon the Service of the Common-wealth.

Then the House proceeded to nominate all the High Sheriffs in *England*, whose Names are enter'd in their *Journal*; and also ordered, That the Commissioners of the Great Seal be desired forthwith to pass the several respective Patents for the Gentlemen, nominated and appointed by both Houses to be High Sheriffs of Counties, according to their several Nominations and Appointments. Thus was the King stripp'd of that antient Branch of the Royal Prerogative, in every County where the Parliament could command: And as he at the same Time nominated his own Sheriffs, this, alone, must breed the utmost Confusion in the Kingdom.

The same Day the Earl of *Northumberland*, from the Committee of Safety, reported their Opinion



pinion of Sir *William Waller's* Letter, requiring a Supply of Men to withstand the Forces under *Hopton* \*; that the Garrison of *Newport Pagnel* being now settled, the best Way would be to send to the Lord-General to draw his Forces into those Parts, that so he might be in a Place convenient to assist Sir *William Waller* upon all Occasions.

An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.  
December.

This was agreed to, and the following Letter was ordered to be drawn up for that Purpose:

May it please your Excellency,

**T**Here is Advertisement come from Sir *William Waller*, giving Notice of the Preparation the Enemy makes to relieve *Arundel Castle*, and the Necessity there is of his present Supply; the Mischief which will else follow upon the whole Kingdom is easily foreseen. It is therefore desired that your Excellency will, forthwith, remove that Way with your Army, to *Windsor*, or to such other Place as you shall judge convenient; leaving *Newport-Pagnell* as well secured as the present Occasion will permit. Both Houses conceive it so absolutely necessary, that any Delay will be dangerous. This being all we have in charge to recommend to your Excellency's Care and your Zeal for the Public Service, we take our Leave, and rest

Your Excellency's humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND,	BOLINGBROKE,
WARWICK,	DENZIL HOLLES,
SAY and SELE,	ANTHO. NICHOLS.

Another Letter, and a very extraordinary one, was also read this Day in the House of Lords, from the Earl of *Bedford*; who, with the Earls of *Clare* and *Holland*, had deserted the Parliament, and

\* Sir *Ralph Hopton*, Knight of the Bath, whom the King had created a Peer, by the Title of Baron *Hopton* of *Stratton*, the 4th of September, 1643: And by this coarse Expression of barely *Hopton* in the *Lords Journals*, it looks as if that House did not chuse to allow his Title, the Patent being pass'd since the Lord-keeper *Littleton* left the Parliament; or it might be so express'd in Sir *William Waller's* Letter, who probably had not yet forgot his own Defeat in the *West*.



An. 10. Car. 1.  
1643.

December,

Hereupon the Lords *ordered* that, for the present, the Earl of *Bedford* should stand committed to the safe Custody of the Gentleman-Usher attending that House; there to remain until their Pleasure be further signified.

After all these, several Papers were read, which came from the Parliament's Commissioners in *Scotland*, relating to the *Treaty* then just concluded with that Kingdom, concerning the *Solemn League and Covenant*, and the Assistance demanded in pursuance of the Ends expressed therein: The *Articles* of which had been sent up by the Commons with their Approbation of them, and were referred by the Lords, to a Committee then appointed for that Purpose; and are as follows:

Articles between  
the English and  
Scots Parliaments  
concerning the  
latter's marching  
their Army into  
England.

W<sup>H</sup>ereas the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*, out of a just and deep Sense of the great and imminent Danger of the true Protestant Religion, in regard of the great Forces of Papists, Prelates, Malignants, and their Adherents, raised and employed against the constant Professors thereof in *England* and *Ireland*, thought fit to send their Commissioners unto the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to treat with the Convention of Estates and General Assembly there, concerning such Things as might tend to the Preservation of Religion, and the mutual Good of both Nations: And, to that end, to desire a more near and strict Union betwixt the two Kingdoms; and the Assistance of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, by a considerable Strength to be raised and sent by them into the Kingdom of *England*:

And whereas, upon a Consultation held betwixt the Commissioners of the Parliament of *England*, and the Committees of the Convention of Estates and General Assembly, no Means was thought so expedient to accomplish and strengthen the Union, as for both Nations to enter into a *Solemn League and Covenant*, and a Form thereof to be drawn and presented to the two Houses  
of

‘ of the Parliament of *England*, the Convention An. 19. Car. I.  
 ‘ of Estates, and General Assembly, of *Scotland*; 1643.  
 ‘ which hath accordingly been done, and received. December.  
 ‘ their Approbation :

‘ And whereas the Particulars, concerning the  
 ‘ Assistance desired by the two Houses of the Par-  
 ‘ liament of *England*, from their Brethren of *Scot-*  
 ‘ land, were delivered in by the *English* Commis-  
 ‘ sioners, *August* 19, to the Convention of Estates;  
 ‘ who did thereupon give Power to their Commit-  
 ‘ tee to consider and debate farther with the *En-*  
 ‘ glish Commissioners, of what other *Propositions*  
 ‘ might be added or concluded; whereby the As-  
 ‘ sistance desired might be made more effectual and  
 ‘ beneficial :

‘ And, in pursuance thereof, these *Propositions*  
 ‘ following were considered of, and debated by the  
 ‘ Committee and Commissioners aforesaid, to be  
 ‘ certified, with all convenient Speed, to the two  
 ‘ Houses of the Parliament of *England*, and the  
 ‘ Convention of Estates of *Scotland*, by their re-  
 ‘ spective Committees and Commissioners, to be  
 ‘ respectively taken into their Consideration, and  
 ‘ proceeded with as they shall find Cause: Which  
 ‘ being accordingly done, and these ensuing *Pro-*  
 ‘ positions approved, agreed, and concluded of by  
 ‘ the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*,  
 ‘ and the Committee of the Estates of *Scotland*  
 ‘ respectively, and Power by them given to their  
 ‘ respective Committees and Commissioners, to a-  
 ‘ gree and conclude the same, as may appear by  
 ‘ the *Votes* of both Houses, dated the 1st of *No-*  
 ‘ vember, and the *Order* of the Committee, bear-  
 ‘ ing Date the 17th of *November*: We the said  
 ‘ Commissioners and Committees, according to  
 ‘ their *Votes* and *Orders*, do formally conclude and  
 ‘ agree upon these *Articles* following; and, in  
 ‘ Confirmation thereof, do mutually subscribe the  
 ‘ same.

I. ‘ It is agreed and concluded, That the *Co-*  
 ‘ venant represented to the Convention of Estates



An. 19. Car. I.  
1643.

December.

and General Assembly of *Scotland*, and sent to both Houses of the Parliament of *England*, in the same Form as it is now returned from the two Houses of the Parliament of *England* to their Brethren of *Scotland*, and allowed by the Committee of Estates and Commissioners of the General Assembly, be sworn and subscribed by both Kingdoms, as a most near Tie and Conjunction between them, for their mutual Defence against the Papists and Prelatical Faction, and their Adherents, in both Kingdoms, and for Pursuance of the Ends expressed in the said *Covenant*.

II. That an Army to this Purpose shall be levied forthwith, consisting of 18,000 Foot effective, 2000 Horse, and 1000 Dragoons effective, with a suitable Train of Artillery, to be ready at some general Rendezvous, near the Borders of *England*, to march into *England* for the Purposes aforesaid, with all convenient Speed: The said Horse and Foot to be well and completely armed, and provided with Victuals and Pay for forty Days; and the said Train of Artillery to be fitted in all Points ready to march.

III. That the Army be commanded by a General appointed by the Estates of *Scotland*, and subject to such Resolutions and Directions as are and shall be agreed and concluded on mutually between the two Kingdoms, or by Committees appointed by them in that Behalf, for Pursuance of the Ends before-mentioned

IV. That the Charge of Levying, Arming, and bringing the said Forces together furnished, as also the fitting the Train of Artillery in Readiness to march, be computed and set down, according to the same Rates, as if the Kingdom of *Scotland* were to raise the said Army for themselves and their own Affairs: All which, for the present, is to be done by the Kingdom of *Scotland* upon Account, and the Account to be delivered to the Commissioners of the Kingdom of *England*; and when the Peace of the



the two Kingdoms is settled, the same to be re-  
paid, or satisfied, to the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

V. That this Army be likewise paid, as if the Kingdom of *Scotland* were to employ the same for their own Occasions; and towards the defraying thereof (it not amounting to the full Month's Pay) shall be Monthly allowed and paid the Sum of 30,000 *l.* Sterling, by the Parliament of *England*, out of the Estates and Revenues of the Papists, Prelates, Malignants, and their Adherents, or otherwise. And in case the said 30,000 *l.* Monthly, or any Part thereof, be not paid at the Time when it shall become due and payable, the Kingdom of *England* shall give the Public Faith for the paying of the Remainder, unpaid, with all possible Speed, allowing the Rate of eight Pounds *per Cent.* till the Time of the Performance thereof. And in case that, notwithstanding the said Monthly Sum of 30,000 *l.* paid as aforesaid, the States and Kingdom of *Scotland* shall have just Cause to demand farther Satisfaction of their Brethren of *England*; they shall, for the Pains, Hazard, and Charges they have undergone in the same, by way of Brotherly Assistance, have due Recompence made unto them by the Kingdom of *England*, when the Peace of both Kingdoms is settled; and that out of such Lands and Estates of the Papists, Prelates, Malignants, and their Adherents, as the two Houses of Parliament shall think fit; and for the Assurance thereof the Public Faith of the Kingdom of *England* shall be given them.

VI. And to the end the said Army, in Manner aforesaid, may be enabled and prepared to march, the Kingdom of *England* is to pay, in ready Money, to their Brethren of *Scotland*, or such as shall have Power from the Estates of that Kingdom, the Sum of 100,000 *l.* Sterling, at *Leith* or *Edinburgh*, with all convenient Speed, by way of Advance before-hand; which is to be discounted back again unto the Kingdom of *Eng-*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

December.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

December.

land, by the Kingdom of *Scotland*, upon the first  
 Monthly Allowance, which shall grow due to the  
*Scots Army*, from the Time they shall make  
 their first Entrance into the Kingdom of *Eng-*  
*land*.

VII. That the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to ma-  
 nifest their Willingness to their utmost Ability  
 to be helpful to their Brethren of *England* in  
 this common Cause, will give the Public Faith  
 of the Kingdom of *Scotland* to be jointly made  
 use of with the Public Faith of the Kingdom  
 of *England*, for the present taking up 200,000*l.*  
 Sterling, in the Kingdom of *England* or else-  
 where, for speedy Payment of the said 100,000*l.*  
 Sterling as aforesaid, as also a considerable Sum  
 for satisfying, in good Proportion, the Arrears of  
 the *Scots Army* in *Ireland*.

VIII. That no *Cessation*, nor any *Pacification*  
 or Agreement of Peace whatsoever, shall be  
 made by either Kingdom, or the Armies of  
 either Kingdom, without the mutual Advice and  
 Consent of both Kingdoms, or their Committees  
 in that Behalf appointed, who are to have full  
 Power for the same; in case the Houses of the  
 Parliament of *England*, or the Parliament or  
 Convention of Estates of *Scotland*, shall not  
 sit.

IX. That the Public Faith of the Kingdom of  
*Scotland* shall be given to their Brethren of *Eng-*  
*land*, that neither their Entrance into, nor their  
 Continuance in, the Kingdom of *England*, shall be  
 made use of to any other Ends than are expressed  
 in the *Covenant*, and in the *Articles* of this *Trea-*  
*ty*; and that all Matters of Difference, that shall  
 happen to arise between the Subjects of the two  
 Nations, shall be resolved and determined by  
 the mutual Advice and Consent of both King-  
 doms, or by such Committees as for this Pur-  
 pose shall be by them appointed, with the same  
 Power, as in the precedent Article.

X. That



‘ X. ‘ That in the same Manner, and upon An. 19. Car. I.  
‘ the same Conditions, as the Kingdom of Scot- 1643.  
‘ land is now willing to aid and assist their Brethren  
‘ of England, the Kingdom of England doth ob-  
‘ lige themselves to aid and assist the Kingdom  
‘ of Scotland, in the same or like Cases of Straits  
‘ and Extremities.

December,

‘ Lastly, It is agreed and concluded, That du-  
‘ ring the Time that the Scots Army shall be em-  
‘ ployed as aforesaid, for the Defence of the  
‘ Kingdom of Scotland there shall be fitted out,  
‘ as Men of War, eight Ships, whereof six shall  
‘ be of Burden betwixt 120 and 200 Ton, the  
‘ other betwixt 3 and 400 Ton, whereof two  
‘ shall be in lieu of the two Ships appointed by  
‘ the Irish Treaty; all which shall be maintained  
‘ at the Charge of the Kingdom of England, to  
‘ be employed for the Defence of the Coast of  
‘ Scotland, under such Commanders as the Earl  
‘ of Warwick, for the Time of his being Admi-  
‘ ral, shall nominate, with the Approbation of  
‘ the Committees of both Kingdoms; which Com-  
‘ manders shall receive, from the said Earl, ge-  
‘ neral Instructions, that they do from Time to  
‘ Time observe the Directions of the Commit-  
‘ tees of both Kingdoms.’

Next follow the several *Declarations, &c.* of the  
Convention of Estates of Scotland, before and at  
their Army’s entering into England, which, for  
Brevity’s Sake, we pass over with a Reference\*;  
and shall only mention that, with the former Pa-  
pers, came Receipts for 50,000 *l.* paid at *Edin-  
burgh*, as Part of the 200,000 *l.* stipulated for; and  
that it was only demanded, That the Garrison at  
*Berwick*, being now delivered up to the Scots,  
should be paid from henceforth by them.

The King, to obviate as much as possible this  
Confederacy of the Parliaments of both King-  
H h 3 doms

\* *Russetworth*, Vol. V. p. 487, et ultra.



An. 19. Car. 1. 1643.  
December.

Which occasions the King to call a Convention of Members at Oxford.

doms against him, issued a *Proclamation*, inviting all such Members of both Houses as had already left their Seats at *Westminster*, or were inclined to do so, to meet him at *Oxford*, and consult of the best Measures for his own Safety. So great a Number obeyed this Summons, that they, soon after, form'd a Convention or Anti-Parliament: But their Proceedings, which lasted three Months, and which, for Connection Sake, we shall give without the Intervention of any other Matters, are too many and various to be comprised in this Volume.

*The END of the TWELFTH VOLUME.*





